Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/miscellaneoustob04smoliala

THE

MISCELLANEOUS WORKS

OF

TOBIAS SMOLLETT:

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED,

MEMOIRS OF HIS LIFE AND WRITINGS.

IN FIVE VOLUMES.

EMBELLISHED WITH

TWENTY-SIX ENGRAVINGS,

By Rowlandson & Others,

Volume IV.

containing

THE ADVENTURES

OF RODERICK RANDOM.

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED FOR C. ELLIOT,

By J. Orphoot, Blackfriars Wynd

1809.

PR
3691
.R34
A 7

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

RODERICK RANDOM,

BY TOBIAS SMOLLETT, M.D.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

Plates by Rowlandson.

VOLUME I.

Et genus et virtus, nisi cum re, vilior alga est. HOR.

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED FOR C. ELLIOT,

By J. Orphoot, Blackfriars Wynd.

1809.

THE

PREFACE.

OF all kinds of ſatire, there is none ſo entertaining, and univerſally improving, as that which is introduced, as it were, occaſionally, in the courſe of an inte eſting ſtory, which brings every incident home to life; and by repreſenting familiar ſcenes in an uncommon and amuſing point of view, inveſts them with all the graces of novelty, while nature is appealed to in every particular.

The reader gratifies his curioſity, in purſuing the adventures of a perſon in whoſe favour he is prepoſſeſſed: he eſpouſes his cauſe, he ſympathizes with him in diſtreſs, his indignation is heated againſt the authors of his calamity; the humane paſſions are inflamed; the contraſt between dejected virtue, and inſulting vice, appears with great aggravation; and every impreſſion having a double force on the imagination, the memory retains the circumſtance, and the heart improves by the example. The attention is not tired with a bare catalogue of characters, but agreeably diverted with all the variety of invention; and the viciſſitudes of life appear in their peculiar circumſtances, opening an ample field for wit and humour.

Romance, no doubt, owes its origin to ignorance, vanity, and ſuperſtition. In the dark ages of the world, when a man had rendered himſelf famous for wiſdom or valour, his family and adherents availed themſelves of his ſuperior qualities, magnified his virtues, and repreſented his character and perſon as ſacred and ſupernatural. The vulgar eaſily ſwallowed the bait, implored his protection, and yielded the tribute of homage and praiſe even to adoration; his exploits were handed down to

posterity with a thousand exaggerations; they were repeated as incitements to virtue; divine honours were paid and altars erected to his memory, for the encouragement of those who attempted to imitate his example; and hence arose the heathen mythology, which is no other than a collection of extravagant romances. As learning advanced, and genius received cultivation, these stories were embellished with the graces of poetry, that they might the better recommend themselves to the attention; they were sung in public, at festivals, for the instruction and delight of the audience; and rehearsed before battle, as incentives to deeds of glory. Thus tragedy and the epic muse were born, and, in the progress of taste, arrived at perfection. It is no wonder that the ancients could not relish a fable in prose, after they had seen so many remarkable events celebrated in verse by their best poets: we therefore find no romance among them during the æra of their excellence, unless the Cyropædia of Xenophon may be so called; and it was not till arts and sciences began to revive, after the irruption of the barbarians into Europe, that any thing of this kind appeared. But when the minds of men were debauched by the imposition of priestcraft to the most absurd pitch of credulity, the authors of romance arose, and losing sight of probability, filled their performances with the most monstrous hyperboles. If they could not equal the ancient poets in point of genius, they were resolved to excel them in fiction, and apply to the wonder rather than the judgment of their readers. Accordingly they brought necromancy to their aid, and instead of supporting the character of their heroes by dignity of sentiment and practice, distinguished them by their bodily strength, activity, and extravagance of behaviour. Although nothing could be more ludicrous and unnatural than the figures they drew, they did not want patrons and admirers, and the world actually began to be infected with the spirit of knight-errantry, when Cervantes, by an inimitable piece of ridicule, reformed the taste of mankind, representing chivalry in the right point of view, and converting romance to pur-

poses

poſes far more uſeful and entertaining, by making it aſſume the ſock, and point out the follies of ordinary life.

The ſame method has been practiſed by other Spaniſh and French authors, and by none more ſucceſsfully than by Monſieur Le Sage, who, in his Adventures of Gil Blas, has deſcribed the knavery and foibles of life, with infinite humour and ſagacity. The following ſheets I have modelled on his plan, taking the liberty, however, to differ from him in the execution, where I thought his particular ſituations were uncommon, extravagant, or peculiar to the country in which the ſcene is laid. The diſgraces of Gil Blas are, for the moſt part, ſuch as rather excite mirth than compaſſion; he himſelf laughs at them; and his tranſitions from diſtreſs to happineſs, or at leaſt eaſe, are ſo ſudden, that neither the reader has time to pity him, nor himſelf to be acquainted with affliction. This conduct, in my opinion, not only deviates from probability, but prevents that generous indignation which ought to animate the reader againſt the ſordid and vicious diſpoſition of the world.

I have attempted to repreſent modeſt merit ſtruggling with every difficulty to which a friendleſs orphan is expoſed, from his own want of experience, as well as from the ſelfiſhneſs, envy, malice, and baſe indifference of mankind. To ſecure a favourable prepoſſeſſion, I have allowed him the advantages of birth and education, which, in the ſeries of his misfortunes, will, I hope, engage the ingenuous more warmly in his behalf; and though I foreſee that ſome people will be offended at the mean ſcenes in which he is involved, I perſuade myſelf the judicious will not perceive the neceſſity of deſcribing thoſe ſituations to which he muſt of courſe be confined, in his low eſtate, but alſo find entertainment in viewing thoſe parts of life, where the humours and paſſions are undiſguiſed by affectation, ceremony, or education, and the whimſical peculiarities of diſpoſition appear as nature has implanted them. But I believe I need not trouble myſelf in vindicating a prac-

tice athoriſed by the beſt writers in this way, ſome of whom I have already named.

Every intelligent reader will, at firſt ſight, perceive I have not deviated from nature in the facts, which are all true in the main, although the circumſtances are altered and diſguiſed to avoid perſonal ſatire.

It now remains to give my reaſons for making the chief perſonage of this work a North-Briton; which are chiefly theſe: I could at a ſmall expence beſtow on him ſuch education as I thought the dignity of his birth and character required, which could not poſſibly be obtained in England, by ſuch ſlender means as the nature of my plan would afford. In the next place, I could repreſent ſimplicity of manners in a remote part of the kingdom, with more propriety than in any place near the capital; and laſtly, the diſpoſition of the Scots, addicted to travelling, juſtifies my conduct in deriving an adventurer from that country.

That the delicate reader may not be offended at the unmeaning oaths which proceed from the mouths of ſome perſons in theſe memoirs, I beg leave to premiſe, that I imagined nothing could more effectually expoſe the abſurdity of ſuch miſerable expletives, than a natural and verbal repreſentation of the diſcourſe in which they occur.

APOLOGUE.

A Young painter indulging a vein of pleaſantry ſketched a kind of converſation piece, repreſenting a bear, an owl, a monkey, and an aſs: and to render it more ſtriking, humourous, and moral, diſtinguiſhed every figure by ſome emblem of human life.

Bruin was exhibited in the garb and attitude of an old, toothleſs, drunken ſoldier; the owl, perched upon the handle of a coffee-pot, with ſpectacle on noſe, ſeemed to contemplate a news-paper; and the aſs, ornamented with a huge tie wig, (which however, could not conceal his long ears) ſat for his picture to the monkey, who appeared with the implements of painting. This whimſical groupe afforded ſome mirth, and met with general approbation, until ſome miſchievous wag hinted that the whole was a lampoon upon the friends of the performer; an inſinuation which was no ſooner circulated, than thoſe very people who applauded it before, began to be alarmed, and even to fancy themſelves ſignified by the ſeveral figures of the piece.

Among others, a worthy perſonage in years, who had ſerved in the army with reputation, being incenſed at the ſuppoſed outrage, repaired to the lodgings of the painter, and finding him at home, "Hark ye, Mr Monkey, ſaid he, I have a good "mind to convince you that though the bear has "loſt his teeth, he retains his paws, and that he "is

" is not ſo drunk but he can perceive your impertinence—'Sblood! Sir, that toothleſs jaw is a damn'd ſcandalous libel—but, don't you imagine me ſo chopfallen as not to be able to chew the cud of reſentment." Here he was interrupted by the arrival of a learned phyſician, who advancing to the culprit with fury in his aſpect, exclaimed, " Suppoſe the augmentation of the aſs's ears ſhould prove the diminution of the baboon's —nay, ſeek not to prevaricate, for, by the beard of Æſculapius! there is not one hair in this periwig that will not ſtand up in judgment to convict thee of perſonal abuſe. Do but obſerve, captain, how this pitiful little fellow has copied the very curls—the colour, indeed, is different, but then the form and foretop are quite ſimilar." While he thus remonſtrated in a ſtrain of vociferation, a venerable ſenator entered, and waddling up to the delinquent, " Jackanapes! cried he, I will now let thee ſee I can read ſomething elſe than a news-paper, and that without the help of ſpectacles—here is your own note of hand, ſirrah, for money, which if I had not advanced, you yourſelf would have reſembled an owl, in not daring to ſhew your face by day, you ungrateful ſlanderous knave!"

In vain the aſtoniſhed painter declared that he had no intention to give offence, or to characteriſe particular perſons: they affirmed the reſemblance was too palpable to be overlooked; they taxed him with inſolence, malice, and ingratitude; and their clamours being overheard by the public, the captain was a bear, the doctor an aſs, and the ſenator an owl to his dying day.

Chriſtian

Chriſtian reader, I beſeech thee, in the bowels of the Lord, remember this example while thou art employed in the peruſal of the following ſheets; and ſeek not to appropriate to thyſelf that which equally belongs to five hundred different people. If thou ſhouldſt meet with a character that reflects thee in ſome ungracious particular, keep thy own counſel; conſider that one feature makes not a face, and that tho' thou art, perhaps, diſtinguiſhed by a bottle noſe, twenty of thy neighbours may be in the ſame predicament.

THE

THE

CONTENTS

OF THE

FIRST VOLUME.

CHAP. I.

Of my birth and parentage, Page 1

CHAP. II.

I grow up—am hated by my relations—ſent to ſchool—neglected by my grandfather—maltreated by my maſter—ſeaſoned to adverſity I form cabals againſt the pedant—am debarred acceſs to my grandfather—hunted by his heir—demoliſh the teeth of his tutor, 5

CHAP. III.

My mother's brother arrives—relieves me—a deſcription of him—goes along with me to the houſe of my grandfather—is encountered by his dogs—defeats them after a bloody engagement—is admited to the old gentleman—a dialogue between them, 9

CHAP. IV.

My grandfather makes his will—our ſecond viſit—he dies—his will is read in preſence of all his living deſcendants—the diſappointment of my female couſins—my uncle's behaviour, 13

CHAP. V.

The ſchoolmaſter uſes me barbarouſly—I form a project of revenge, in which I am aſſiſted by my uncle—I leave the village—am ſettled at the univerſity by his generoſity, 17

CHAP. VI.

I make great progreſs in my ſtudies—am careſſed by every body—my female couſins take notice of me—I reject their invitation; they are incenſed and conſpire againſt me—I am left deſtitute by a

misfortune that befals my uncle—Gawky's treachery—my revenge, P. 29

CHAP. VII.

I am entertained by Mr Crab—a deſcription of him— I acquire the art of ſurgery—conſult Crab's diſpoſition—become neceſſary to him—an accident happens—he adviſes me to launch out into the world—aſſiſts me with money—I ſet out for London, 29

CHAP. VIII.

I arrive at Newcaſtle—meet with my old ſchool-fellow Strap—we determine to walk in company to London—ſet out on our journey—put up at a ſolitary ale-houſe—are diſturbed by a ſtrange adventure in the night, 35

CHAP. IX.

We proceed on our journey—are overtaken by an highwayman, who fires at Strap—is prevented from ſhooting me by a company of horſemen, who ride in purſuit of him—Strap is put to bed at an inn—Adventures at that inn, 42

CHAP. X.

The highwayman is taken—we are detained as evidences againſt him—proceed to the next village—he eſcapes—we arrive at another inn, where we go to bed—in the night we are awaked by a dreadful adventure—next night we lodge at the houſe of a ſchoolmaſter—our treatment there, 47

CHAP. XI.

We deſcry the waggon—get into it—arrive at an inn—our fellow-travellers deſcribed—a miſtake is committed by Strap, which produces ſtrange things, 53

CHAP. XII.

Captain Weazel challenges Strap, who declines the combat—an affair between the captain and me—the ſtorer is ſain to give Miſs Jenny five guineas for the releaſe—we are in danger of loſing a meal—the behaviour of Weazel, Jenny, and Joey, on that occaſion—an account of captain Weazel and his lady—the captain's courage tried—Isaac's mirth at the captain's expence, 62

CHAP. XIII.

Strap and I are terrified by an apparition—Strap's conjecture—the myſtery explained by Joey, we arrive at London—our dreſs and

and appearance described—we are insulted in the street—an adventure in an ale-house—we are imposed upon by a waggish footman—set to rights by a tobacconist—take lodgings—dine for a dinner—an accident at our ordinary, P. 69

CHAP. XIV.

We visit Strap's friend—a description of him—his advice—we go to Mr Cringer's house—are denied admittance—an accident befals Strap—his behaviour thereupon—an extraordinary adventure occurs, in the course of which I lose all my money, 76

CHAP. XV.

Strap moralizes—presents his purse to me—we inform our landlord of my misfortune; he unravels the mystery—I present myself to Cringer—he recommends and turns me over to Mr Staytape—I become acquainted with a fellow dependant, who explains the characters of Cringer and Staytape—and informs me of the method to be pursued at the Navy-office and Surgeon's Hall—Strap is employed, 82

CHAP. XVI.

My new acquaintance breaks an appointment—I proceed by myself to the Navy-office—address myself to a person there, who assists me with his advice—write to the board—they grant me a letter to the surgeons at the hall—I am informed of the beau's name and character—find him—he makes me his confident in an amour—desires me to pawn my linen for his occasions—I recover what I lent him—some curious observations of Strap on that occasion—his vanity, 93

CHAP. XVII.

I go to Surgeon's Hall, where I meet with Mr Jackson—am examined—a fierce dispute arises between two of the examiners—Jackson disguises himself to attract respect—is detected—in hazard of being sent to Bridewell—we treat us at a tavern—carries us to a night-house—a troublesome adventure there—we are committed to the round-house—carried before a justice—his behaviour, 97

CHAP. XVIII.

I carry my qualification to the Navy office—the nature of it—the behaviour of the f—t—y—Strap's concern for my absence—a battle between him and a blackamoor—the

quences of it—his harangue to me—his friend the ſchoolmaſter recommends me to a French apothecary, who entertains me as a journeyman, P. 106

CHAP. XIX.

The characters of Mr Lavement, his wife and daughter—ſome anecdotes of the family—the mother and daughter rivals—I am guilty of a miſtake that gives me preſent ſatisfaction, but is attended with troubleſome conſequences, 111

CHAP. XX.

I am aſſaulted and dangerouſly wounded—ſuſpect Odonnell, and am confirmed in my opinion—concert a ſcheme of revenge, and put it in execution—Odonnell robs his own ſervant and diſappears—I make my addreſſes to a lady, and am miraculouſly delivered from her ſnare, 119

CHAP. XXI.

Squire Gawky comes to lodge with my maſter—is involved in a troubleſome affair, out of which he is extricated by me—he marries my maſter's daughter—they conſpire againſt me—I am found guilty of theft—diſcharged—deſerted by my friends—I hire a room at St Giles's—where, by accident, I find the lady, to whom I made my addreſſes, in a miſerable condition—I relieve her. 125

CHAP. XXII.

The hiſtory of Miſs Williams. 134

CHAP. XXIII.

She is interrupted by a bailiff, who arreſts, and carries her to the Marſhalſea—I accompany her—bring witneſſes to prove ſhe is not the perſon named in the writ—the bailiff is fain to give her a preſent, and diſcharge her—we ſhift our lodging—ſhe reſumes her ſtory and ends it—my reflections thereupon—ſhe makes me acquainted with the progreſs of a common woman of the town—reſolves to quit that way of life, 146

CHAP. XXIV.

I am reduced to great miſery—aſſaulted on Tower-hill by a preſs-gang, who put me on board a tender—my uſage there—my arrival on board of the Thunder man of war, where I am put in irons, and afterwards releaſed by the good offices of Mr Thomſon, who recommends me as aſſiſtant to the ſurgeon—he

relates his own ſtory, and makes me acquainted with the characters of the captain, ſurgeon, and firſt mate, P. 159

CHAP. XXV.

The behaviour of Mr Morgan—his pride, diſpleaſure, and generoſity—the economy of our meſs deſcribed—Thomſon's further friendſhip—the nature of my duty explained—the ſituation of the ſick, 167

CHAP. XXVI.

A diſagreeable accident happens to me in the diſcharge of my office—Morgan's noſe is offended—a dialogue between him and the ſhip's ſteward—upon examination, I find more cauſes of complaint than one—my hair is cut off—Morgan's cookery—the manner of ſleeping on board—I am waked in the night by a dreadful noiſe, 174

CHAP. XXVII.

I acquire the friendſhip of the ſurgeon, who procures a warrant for me, and makes me a preſent of clothes—a battle between a midſhipman and me—the ſurgeon leaves the ſhip—the captain comes on board with another ſurgeon—a dialogue between the captain and Morgan—the ſick are ordered to be brought upon the quarter deck and examined—the conſequences of that order—a madman accuſes Morgan, and is ſet at liberty by command of the captain, whom he inſtantly attacks and pummels without mercy, 176

CHAP. XXVIII.

The captain enraged, threatens to put the madman to death with his own hand—is diverted from that reſolution by the arguments and perſuaſions of the firſt lieutenant and ſurgeon—we let ſail for St Helens, join the fleet under the command of Sir C—n—s O—le, and proceed for the Weſt Indies—are overtaken by a terrible tempeſt—my friend Jack Rattlin has his leg broke by a fall from the main-yard—the behaviour of Dr Mackſhane—Jack oppoſes the amputation of his limb, in which he is ſeconded by Morgan and me, who undertake the cure and perform it ſucceſsfully, 184

CHAP. XXIX.

Mackſhane's malice—I am taken up and impriſoned for a ſpy—Morgan meets with the ſame fate—Thomſon is tampered with to turn evidence againſt us—diſdains the propoſal, and is mal-

treated

treated for his integrity—Morgan is releaſed to aſſiſt the ſurgeon during an engagement with ſome French ſhips of war—I remain fettered to the poop expoſed to the enemy's ſhot, and grow delirious with fear—am comforted after the battle by Morgan, who ſpeaks freely of the captain; is overheard by the centinel, who informs againſt him, and again impriſoned—Thomſon grows deſperate, and notwithſtanding the remonſtrances of Morgan and me goes overboard in the night, P. 189

CHAP. XXX.

We lament the fate of our companion—the captain offers Morgan his liberty, which he refuſes to accept—we are brought before him and examined—Morgan is ſent back to cuſtody, whither alſo I am remanded after a curious trial, 149

CHAP. XXXI.

I diſcover a ſubornation againſt me, by means of a quarrel between two of the evidences; in conſequence of which I am ſet at liberty, and prevail upon Morgan to accept of his freedom on the ſame terms—Mackſhane's malice—we arrive at Jamaica, from whence in a ſhort time we beat up to Hiſpaniola, in conjunction with the Weſt-India ſquadron—we take in water, ſail again, and arrive at Carthagena—reflections on our conduct there, 202

CHAP. XXXII.

Our land forces being diſembarked, erect a faſcine battery—our ſhip is ordered, with four more, to batter the fort of Bocca Chica—Mackſhane's cowardice—the chaplain's frenzy—honeſt Rattlin loſes one hand—his heroiſm, and reflections on the battle—Crampley's behaviour to me during the heat of the fight, 206

CHAP. XXXIII

A breach being made in the walls, our ſoldiers give the aſſault and take the place without oppoſition—our ſailors at the ſame time become maſters of all the other ſtrengths near Bocca Chica, and take poſſeſſion of the harbour—the good conſequences of this ſucceſs—we move nearer the town—find two forts deſerted, and the channel blocked up with ſunk veſſels; which however we find means to clear—land our ſoldiers at La Quinta—repulſe a body of militia—attack the caſtle of St Lazar, and ar-

are forced to retreat with great loſs—the remains of our army are re-embarked—an effort of the admiral to take the town—the œconomy of our expedition deſcribed, P. 211

CHAP. XXXIV.

An epidemic fever rages among us—we abandon our conqueſts—I am ſeized with the diſtemper; write a petition to the captain, which is rejected—I am in danger of ſuffocation, through the malice of Crampley; and relieved by a ſerjeant—my fever increaſes—the chaplain wants to confeſs me—I obtain a favourable criſis—Morgan's affection for me proved—the behaviour of Mackſhane and Crampley towards me—Captain Oakhum is removed into another ſhip with his beloved doctor—our new captain deſcribed—an adventure of Morgan, 217

CHAP. XXXV.

Captain Whiffle ſends for me—his ſituation deſcribed—his ſurgeon arrives, preſcribes for him, and puts him to bed—a bed is put up for Mr Simper contiguous to the ſtate-room, which with other parts of the captain's behaviour, gives the ſhip's company a very unfavourable idea of their commander—I am detained in the Weſt-Indies by the admiral, and go on board of the Lizzard ſloop of war, in quality of ſurgeon's mate, where I make myſelf known to the ſurgeon, who treats me very kindly—I go on ſhore, ſell my ticket, purchaſe neceſſaries; and at my return on board, am ſurpriſed at the ſight of Crampley, who is appointed Lieutenant of the ſloop—we ſail on a cruize—take a prize, in which I arrive at Port-Morant, under the command of my meſs-mate, with whom I live in great harmony, 226

CHAP. XXXVI.

A ſtrange adventure—in conſequence of which I am extremely happy—Crampley does me ill offices with the captain: but his malice is defeated by the good-nature and friendſhip of the ſurgeon—We return to Port Royal—our captain gets the command of a larger ſhip, and is ſucceeded by an old man—Brayl is provided for—we receive orders to ſail for England, 231

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

RODERICK RANDOM.

CHAP. I.

Of my birth and parentage.

I WAS born in this northern part of the united kingdom, in the houſe of my grandfather, a gentleman of conſiderable fortune and influence, who had on many occaſions ſignalized himſelf on behalf of his country; and was remarkable for his abilities in the law, which he exerciſed with great ſucceſs, in the ſtation of a judge, particularly againſt beggars, for whom he had a ſingular averſion.

My father (his youngeſt ſon) falling in love with a poor relation, who lived with the old gentleman in quality of a houſekeeper, eſpouſed her privately, and I was the firſt fruit of that marriage. During her pregnancy, a dream diſcompoſed my mother ſo much, that her huſband, tired with her importunity, at laſt conſulted a highland ſeer, whoſe favourable interpretation he would have ſecured before-hand by a bribe, but found him incorruptible. She dreamed ſhe was delivered of a tennis-ball, which the devil (who, to her great ſurpriſe, acted the part of a midwife) ſtruck ſo forcibly with a racket, that it diſappeared in an inſtant; and ſhe was for ſome time inconſolable for the loſs of her offspring, when, all of a ſudden, ſhe beheld it return with equal violence, and enter the earth, beneath

her feet, whence immediately ſprung up a goodly tree covered with bloſſoms, the ſcent of which operated ſo ſtrongly on her nerves that ſhe awoke. The attentive ſage, after ſome deliberation, aſſured my parents that their firſt-born would be a great traveller; that he would undergo many dangers and difficulties, and at laſt return to his native land, where he would flouriſh in happineſs and reputation. How truly this was foretold will appear in the ſequel. It was not long before ſome officious perſon informed my grandfather of certain familiarities that paſſed between his ſon and houſekeeper, which alarmed him ſo much, that, a few days after, he told my father it was high time for him to think of ſettling; and that he had provided a match for him, to which he could in juſtice have no objections. My father, finding it would be impoſſible to conceal his ſituation much longer, frankly owned what he had done, and excuſed himſelf for not having aſked the conſent of his father, by ſaying, he knew it would have been to no purpoſe; and that, had his inclination been known, my grandfather might have taken ſuch meaſures as would have effectually put the gratification of it out of his power: he added, that no exceptions could be taken to his wife's virtue, birth, beauty, and good ſenſe; and as for fortune, it was beneath his care. The old gentleman, who kept all his paſſions, except one, in excellent order, heard him to an end with great temper, and then calmly aſked, how he propoſed to maintain himſelf and ſpouſe? He replied, he could be in no danger of wanting, while his father's tenderneſs remained, which he and his wife ſhould always cultivate with the utmoſt veneration; and he was perſuaded his allowance would be ſuitable to the dignity and circumſtances of his family, and to the proviſion already made for his brothers and ſiſters, who were happily ſettled under his protection. "Your brothers and ſiſters, ſir!" my grandfather, did not think it beneath them to conſult me in an affair of ſuch importance as matrimony; neither I ſuppoſe would you have omitted that piece of duty, had you not ſome ſecret fund in reſerve: to the comforts of which I leave you, with a aſſure that you will thi[illegible] ſuch another ſituation for yourſelf and wife; whether, [illegible]

will ſend you an account of the expence I have been at in your education, with a view of being reimburſed. Sir, you have made the grand tour—you are a polite gentleman—a very pretty gentleman—I wiſh you a great deal of joy, and am your very humble ſervant." So ſaying, he left my father in a ſituation eaſily imagined. However, he did not long heſitate; for, being perfectly well acquainted with his father's diſpoſition, he did not doubt that he was glad of this pretence to get rid of him; and his reſolves being invariable, as the laws of the Medes and Perſians, he knew it would be to no purpoſe to attempt him by prayers and intreaties; ſo, without any farther application, he betook himſelf, with his diſconſolate bedfellow, to a farm-houſe, where an old ſervant of his mother dwelt; there they remained ſome time in a ſituation but ill adapted to the elegance of their deſires and tenderneſs of their love; which, nevertheleſs, my father choſe to endure, rather than ſupplicate an unnatural and inflexible parent: but, my mother foreſeeing the inconveniencies to which ſhe muſt have been expoſed, had ſhe been delivered in this place, (and her pregnancy was very far advanced,) without communicating her deſign to her huſband, went in diſguiſe to the houſe of my grandfather, hoping that her tears and condition would move him to compaſſion, and reconcile him to an event which was now irrecoverably paſt. She found means to deceive the ſervants, and was introduced as an unfortunate lady, who wanted to complain of ſome matrimonial grievances, it being my grandfather's particular province to decide in all caſes of ſcandal. She was accordingly admitted into his preſence, where diſcovering herſelf, ſhe fell at his feet, and in the moſt affecting manner implored his forgiveneſs; at the ſame time, repreſenting the danger that threatened not only her life, but that of his own grandchild, which was about to ſee the light. He told her, he was ſorry that the indiſcretion of her and his ſon had compelled him to make a vow, which put it out of his power to give them any aſſiſtance.—That he had already imparted his thoughts on that ſubject to her huſband, and was ſurpriſed that they ſhould diſturb his peace with any farther importunity. This ſaid, he retired. The

violence of my mother's affliction had such an effect on her conſtitution, that ſhe was immediately ſeized with the pains of child-bed; and had not an old maid-ſervant, to whom ſhe was very dear, afforded her pity and aſſiſtance, at the hazard of incurring my grandfather's diſpleaſure, ſhe and the innocent fruit of her womb, muſt have fallen miſerable victims to his rigour and inhumanity. By the friendſhip of this poor woman, ſhe was carried up to a garret, and immediately delivered of a man-child, the ſtory of whoſe unfortunate birth he himſelf now relates. My father being informed of what had happened, flew to the embraces of his darling ſpouſe, and while he loaded his offspring with paternal embraces, could not forbear ſhedding a flood of tears, on beholding the dear partner of his heart (for whoſe eaſe he would have ſacrificed the treaſures of the eaſt) ſtretched upon a flock-bed, in a miſerable apartment, unable to protect her from the inclemencies of the weather. It is not to be ſuppoſed that the old gentleman was ignorant of what paſſed, though he affected to know nothing of the matter, and pretended to be very much ſurpriſed, when one of his grandchildren, by his eldeſt ſon deceaſed, who lived with him as his heir-apparent, acquainted him with the affair; he determined therefore to obſerve no medium, but immediately (on the third day after her delivery) ſent her a peremptory order to be gone, and turned off the ſervant who had preſerved her life. This behaviour ſo exaſperated my father, that he had recourſe to the moſt dreadful imprecations; and on his bare knees implored that heaven would renounce him if ever he ſhould forget or forgive the barbarity of his ſire. The injuries which this unhappy mother received from her removal in ſuch circumſtances, and the want of neceſſaries where ſhe lodged, together with her grief and anxiety of mind, ſoon threw her into a languiſhing diſorder, which put an end to her life. My father, who loved her tenderly, was ſo affected with her death, that he remained ſix weeks deprived of his ſenſes; during which time, the people where he lodged carried the infant to the old man, who relented ſo far, on hearing the melancholy ſtory of his daughter-in-law's death, and the deplorable condition of his ſon, as to ſend the child to nurſe,

and

and he ordered my father to be carried home to his houſe, where he ſoon recovered the uſe of his reaſon. Whether this hard-hearted judge felt any remorſe for his cruel treatment of his ſon and daughter; or (which is more probable) was afraid his character would ſuffer in the neighbourhood; he profeſſed great ſorrow for his conduct to my father, whoſe delirium was ſucceeded by a profound melancholy and reſerve. At length he diſappeared, and, notwithſtanding all imaginable inquiry, could not be heard of; a circumſtance which confirmed moſt people in the opinion of his having made away with himſelf in a fit of deſpair. How I underſtood the particulars of my birth, will appear in the courſe of theſe memoirs.

CHAP. II.

I grow up—am hated by my relations—ſent to ſchool—neglected by my grandfather—maltreated by my maſter—incenſed to adverſity—I form cabals againſt the pedant—am debarred acceſs to my grandfather—hunted by his heir—I demoliſh the teeth of his tutor.

THERE were not wanting ſome, who ſuſpected my uncles of being concerned in my father's fate, on the ſuppoſition that they would all ſhare in the patrimony deſtined for him: and this conjecture was ſtrengthened by reflecting, that in all calamities they never diſcovered the leaſt inclination to ſerve him, but, on the contrary, by all the artifices in their power, fed his father's reſentment, and ſupported his reſolution of leaving him to miſery and want. But people of judgment treated this inſinuation as an idle chimera; becauſe, had my relations been ſo wicked as to conſult their intereſt by committing ſuch an atrocious crime, the fate of my father would have extended to me too, whoſe life was another obſtacle to their expectation. Meanwhile, I grew apace, and as I ſtrongly reſembled my father, who was the darling of the tenants, I wanted nothing which their indigent circumſtances could afford: but their favour was a weak reſource againſt the jealous enmity of my cruſtins; who, the more my infancy promiſed, conceived the more implacable hatred againſt me; and

and before I was six years of age, had so effectually blockaded my grandfather, that I never saw him but by stealth, when I sometimes made up to his chair, as he sat to view his labourers in the field: on which occasions, he would stroak my head, bid me be a good boy, and promise to take care of me. I was soon after sent to school at a village hard by, of which he had been dictator time out of mind; but, as he never paid for my board, nor supplied me with cloaths, books, and other necessaries I required, my condition was very ragged and contemptible; and the schoolmaster, who, through fear of my grandfather, taught me *gratis*, gave himself no concern about the progress I made under his instruction. In spite of all these difficulties and disgraces, I became a good proficient in the Latin tongue; and as soon as I could write tolerably, pestered my grandfather with letters to such a degree, that he sent for my master, and chid him severely for bestowing such pains on my education, telling him, that if ever I should be brought to the gallows for forgery, which he had taught me to commit, my blood would lie on his head. The pedant, who dreaded nothing more than the displeasure of his patron, assured his honour, that the boy's ability was more owing to his own genius and application than to any instruction or encouragement he received; that although he could not divest him of the knowledge he had already imbibed, unless he would impower him to disable his fingers, he should endeavour, with God's help, to prevent his future improvement. And indeed, he punctually performed what he had undertaken; for, on pretence that I had writ impertinent letters to my grandfather, he caused a board to be made with five holes in it, through which he thrust the fingers and thumb of my right hand, and fastened it by whip cord to my wrist, in such a manner as effectually debarred me the use of my pen. But this restraint I was freed from in a few days by an accident which happened in a quarrel between me and another boy, who taking upon him to insult my poverty, I was so incensed at his ungenerous reproach, that with one stroke of my machine I cut him to the skull, to the great terror of myself and school-fellows, who left him bleeding on the ground, and ran to

inform

inform the maſter of what had happened. I was ſo ſeverely puniſhed for this treſpaſs, that, were I to live to the age of Methuſalem, the impreſſion it made on me would not be effaced; no more than the antipathy and horror I conceived for the mercileſs tyrant who inflicted it. The contempt which my appearance naturally produced, in all who ſaw me, the continual wants to which I was expoſed, and my own haughty diſpoſition, impatient of affronts, involved me in a thouſand troubleſome adventures, by which I was at length inured to adverſity, and emboldened to undertakings far above my years. I was often inhumanly ſcourged for crimes I did not commit, becauſe, having the character of a vagabond in the village, every piece of miſchief whoſe author lay unknown, was charged upon me. I have been found guilty of robbing orchards I never entered, of killing cats I never hurted, of ſtealing gingerbread I never touched, and of abuſing old women I never ſaw. Nay, a ſtammering carpenter had eloquence enough to perſuade my maſter, that I fired a piſtol loaded with ſmall ſhot into his window; though my landlady and the whole family bore witneſs, that I was a-bed faſt aſleep at the time when this outrage was committed. I was once flogged for having narrowly eſcaped drowning, by the ſinking of a ferry boat in which I was paſſenger. Another time for having recovered of a bruiſe occaſioned by a horſe and cart running over me. A third time, for being bit by a baker's dog. In ſhort, whether I was guilty or unfortunate, the correction and ſympathy of this arbitrary pedagogue were the ſame. Far from being ſubdued by this infernal uſage, my indignation triumphed over that ſlavith awe which had hitherto enforced my obedience; and the more my years and knowledge encreaſed, the more I perceived the injuſtice and barbarity of his behaviour. By the help of an uncommon genius, and the advice and direction of our uther, who had ſerved my father in his travels, I made a ſurpriſing progreſs in the claſſics, writing, and arithmetic; ſo that before I was twelve years old, I was allowed by every body to be the beſt ſcholar in the ſchool. This qualification, together with a boldneſs of temper, and ſtrength of limbs, which had ſubjected almoſt all

my contemporaries, gave me such influence over them, that I began to form cabals against my persecutor; and was in hope of being able to bid him defiance in a very short time. Being at the head of a faction consisting of thirty boys, most of them of my own age, I was determined to put their mettle to trial, that I might know how far they were to be depended upon, before I put my grand scheme in execution: with this view we attacked a body of stout apprentices, who had taken possession of a part of the ground allotted to us for the scene of our diversions, and who were then playing at nine-pins on the spot: but I had the mortification to see my adherents routed in an instant, and a leg of one of them broke in his flight by the bowl, which one of our adversaries had detached in pursuit of us. This discomfiture did not hinder us from engaging them afterwards in frequent skirmishes, which we maintained by throwing stones at a distance, wherein I received many wounds, the scars of which still remain. Our enemies were so harrassed and interrupted by these alarms, that they at last abandon'd their conquest, and left us to the peaceable enjoyment of our own territories. It would be endless to enumerate the exploits we performed in the course of this confederacy, which became the terror of the whole village; insomuch, that when different interests divided it, one of the parties commonly courted the assistance of Roderick Random (by which name I was known) to cast the balance, and keep the opposite faction in awe. Meanwhile, I took the advantage of every play-day, to present myself before my grandfather, to whom I seldom found access, by reason of his being closely besieged by a numerous family of his female grandchildren, who, though they perpetually quarrelled among themselves, never failed to join against me, as the common enemy of all. His heir, who was about the age of eighteen, minded nothing but fox-hunting, and indeed was qualified for nothing else, notwithstanding his grandfather's indulgence in entertaining a tutor for him at home, who at the same time performed the office of a parish-clerk. This young Acteon, who inherited his grandfather's antipathy to every thing in distress, never set eyes on me, without uncoupling

uncoupling his beagles, and hunting me into ſome cottage or other, whither I generally fled for ſhelter. In this Chriſtian amuſement he was encouraged by his preceptor, who, no doubt, took ſuch opportunities to ingratiate himſelf with the riſing ſun, obſerving that the old gentleman, according to the courſe of nature, had not long to live, for, he was already on the verge of fourſcore. The behaviour of this raſcally ſycophant incenſed me ſo much, that one day, when I was beleagued by him and his hounds in a farmer's houſe, where I had found protection, I took aim at him (being an excellent markſman) with a large pebble, which ſtruck out four of his fore-teeth, and effectually incapacitated him from doing the office of a clerk.

CHAP. III.

My mother's brother arrives—relieves me—a deſcription of him—he goes along with me to the houſe of my grandfather—is encountered by his dogs—defeats them, after a bloody engagement—is admitted to the old gentleman—a dialogue between them.

ABOUT this time my mother's only brother, who had been long abroad, lieutenant of a man of war, arrived in his own country; where, being informed of my condition, he came to ſee me, and out of his ſlender finances not only ſupplied me with what neceſſaries I wanted for the preſent, but reſolved not to leave the country until he had prevailed on my grandfather to ſettle ſomething handſome for the future. This was a taſk to which he was by no means equal, being entirely ignorant not only of the judge's diſpoſition, but alſo of the ways of men in general, to which his education on board had kept him an utter ſtranger. He was a ſtrong-built man, ſomewhat bandy legged, with a neck like that of a bull, and a face which (you might eaſily perceive) had withſtood the moſt obſtinate aſſaults of the weather. His dreſs conſiſted of a ſoldier's coat altered for him by the ſhip's tailor, a ſtripped flannel-jacket, a pair of red

breeches japanned with pitch, clean gray worſted ſtockings, large ſilver buckles that covered three fourths of his ſhoes, a ſilver-laced hat whoſe crown overlooked the brims about an inch and a half, a black bob-wig in buckle, a check ſhirt, a ſilk handkerchief, an hanger with a braſs handle girded to his thigh by a tarniſhed laced belt, and a good oak-plant under his arm. Thus equipp'd, he ſet out with me (who by his bounty made a very decent appearance) for my grandfather's houſe, where we were ſaluted by Jowler and Cæſar, whom my couſin, young maſter, had let looſe at our approach. Being well acquainted with the inveteracy of theſe curs, I was about to betake myſelf to my heels, when my uncle ſeized me with one hand, brandiſhed his cudgel with the other, and at one blow laid Cæſar ſprawling on the ground: but, finding himſelf attacked at the ſame time in the rear by Jowler, and fearing Cæſar might recover, he drew his hanger, wheel'd about, and by a lucky ſtroke ſevered Jowler's head from his body. By this time, the young fox-hunter and three ſervants, armed with pitch forks and flails, were come to the aſſiſtance of the dogs, whom they found breathleſs upon the field; and my couſin was ſo provoked at the death of his favourites, that he ordered his attendants to advance, and take vengeance on their executioner, whom he loaded with all the curſes and reproaches his anger could ſuggeſt. Upon which, my uncle ſtept forwards, with an undaunted air, at the ſight of whoſe bloody weapons his antagoniſts fell back with precipitation, when he accoſted their leader thus: —"Lookee, brother, your dogs having boarded me "without provocation, what I did was in my own "defence.——So you had beſt be civil, and let us ſhoot "a-head clear of you." Whether the young 'ſquire miſinterpreted my uncle's deſire of peace, or was enraged at the fate of his hounds beyond his uſual pitch of reſolution, I know not; but he ſnatched a flail from one of his followers, and came up with a ſhew of aſſaulting the lieutenant, who putting himſelf in a poſture of defence, proceeded thus:——"Lookee, "you lubberly ſon of a w——e, if you come athwart "me, 'ware your gingerbread-work——I'll be ſoul

"of

" of your quarter, d—n me." This declaration, followed by a flourish of his hanger, seemed to check the progress of the young gentleman's choler, who looking behind him, perceived his attendants had slunk into the house, shut the gate, and left him to decide the contention by himself. Here a parley ensued, which was introduced by my cousin's asking " Who the d—l are you?—What " do you mean?—Some scoundrel of a seaman (I suppose) " who has deserted and turned thief. But don't think " you shall escape, sirrah,—I'll have you hang'd, you " dog, I will. Your blood shall pay for that of my two " hounds, you raggamuffin. I would not have parted " with them to save your whole generation from the gal- " lows, you ruffian, you." " None of your jaw, you swab " —none of your jaw (replied my uncle) else I shall trim " your lac'd jacket for you. I shall rub you down with " an oaken towel, my boy—I shall." So saying, he sheathed his hanger, and grasped his cudgel. Meanwhile, the people of the house being alarmed, one of my female cousins opened a window, and asked what was the matter? " The matter! (answer'd the lieutenant) no great " matter, young woman.—I have business with the old " gentleman, and this spark, belike, won't allow me to " come along side of him, that's all." After a few minutes pause, we were admitted and conducted to my grandfather's chamber, through a lane of my relations, who honoured me with very significant looks as I passed along. When we came into the judge's presence, my uncle, after two or three sea-bows, expressed himself in this manner:—" Your servant, your servant.—What chear, " father? what chear?—I suppose you don't know me " —may-hap you don't—My name is Tom Bowling,— " and this here boy, you look as if you did not know him " neither,—it is like you mayn't.—He's new rigged, i'faith; " his cloth don't shake in the wind so much as it wont " to do. 'Tis my nephew, d'ye see, Roderick Random, " —your own flesh and blood, old gentleman. Don't " lag a-stern, you dog," (pulling me forward.) My grandfather (who was laid up with the gout) received this relation, after his long absence, with that coldness of civility which was peculiar to him; told him he was glad

to ſee him, and deſired him to ſit down. "Thank ye, "thank ye, Sir, I had as lief ſtand, (ſaid my uncle) for "my own part I deſire nothing of you; but if you have "any conſcience at all, do ſomething for this poor boy, "who has been uſed at a very unchriſtian rate. Un- "chriſtian do I call it?—I am ſure the Moors in Barba- "ry have more humanity than to leave their little ones "to want. I would fain know why my ſiſter's ſon is "more neglected than that there fair-weather Jack," (pointing to the young 'ſquire, who with the reſt of my couſins had followed us into the room.) "Is not he as "near a-kin to you as the other?—Is he not much hand- "ſomer and better built than that great chucklehead? "—Come, come, conſider, old gentleman, you are going "in a ſhort time to give an account of your evil actions. "Remember the wrongs you did his father; and make "all the ſatisfaction in your power, before it be too "late.—The leaſt thing you can do, is to ſettle his fa- "ther's portion on him." The young ladies, who thought themſelves too much concerned to contain themſelves any longer, ſet up their throats altogether againſt my protector.——"Scurvy companion,—ſaucy tarpaulin,—rude, "impertinent fellow, did he think to preſcribe to grand- "papa.—His ſiſter's brat had been too well taken care "of.—Grandpapa was too juſt not to make a difference "between an unnatural rebellious ſon, and his dutiful "loving children, who took his advice in all things;" and ſuch expreſſions were vented againſt him with great violence; until the judge at length commanded ſilence. He calmly rebuked my uncle for his unmannerly behaviour, which, he ſaid, he would excuſe on account of his education: he told him he had been very kind to the boy, whom he had kept at ſchool ſeven or eight years, although he was informed he made no progreſs in his learning, but was addicted to all manner of vice; which he rather believed, becauſe he himſelf was witneſs to a barbarous piece of miſchief he had committed on the jaws of his chaplain.—But, however, he would ſee what the lad was fit for, and bind him apprentice to ſome honeſt tradeſman or other, provided he would mend his manners, and behave for the future as became him. The honeſt tar

(whole

(whoſe pride and indignation boiled within him) anſwered my grandfather, that it was true he had ſent him to ſchool, but it had coſt him nothing, for he had never been at one ſhilling expence, to furniſh him with food, raiment, books, or other neceſſaries; ſo that it was not much to be wondered at, if the boy made ſmall progreſs; and yet whoever told him ſo, was a lying lubberly raſcal, and deſerved to be keel-haul'd; for thof he (the lieutenant) did not underſtand theſe matters himſelf, he was well informed as how Rory was the beſt ſcholar of his age in all the country; the truth of which he would maintain, by laying a wager of his whole half year's pay on the boy's head;——(with theſe words he pulled out his purſe, and challenged the company—) "Neither is he predicted to vice, as you affirm, but rather left like a wreck, (d'ye ſee) at the mercy of the wind and weather, by your neglect, old gentleman. As for what happened to your chaplain, I am only ſorry that he did not knock out the ſcoundrel's brains, inſtead of his teeth. By the Lord, if ever I come up with him, he had better be in Greenland,—that's all. —Thank you for your courteous offer of binding the lad apprentice to a tradeſman. I ſuppoſe you would make a tailor of him—would you?—I had rather ſee him hang'd, d'ye ſee.——Come along, Rory, I perceive how the land lies, my boy,—let's tack about, i'faith,—while I have a ſhilling, thou ſhan't want a teſter.—B'wye, old gentleman, you're bound for the other world, but I believe damnably ill provided for the voyage." Thus ended our viſit; and we returned to the village, my uncle muttering curſes all the way againſt the old ſhark and the young fry that ſurrounded him.

CHAP. IV.

My grandfather makes his will—our ſecond viſit—he dies—his will is read in preſence of all his living deſcendants—the diſappointment of my female couſins—my uncle's behaviour.

A FEW weeks after our firſt viſit, we were informed that the old judge, at the end of a fit of thoughtfulneſs,

fulneſs, which laſted three days, had ſent for a notary and made his will; that the diſtemper had mounted from his legs to his ſtomach, and being conſcious of his approaching end, he had deſired to ſee all his deſcendants without exception.—In obedience to this ſummons, my uncle ſet out with me a ſecond time, to receive the laſt benediction of my grandfather; often repeating by the road, "Ey, ey, "we have brought up the old hulk at laſt—You ſhall "ſee,—you ſhall ſee,—you ſhall ſee the effect of my ad-"monition." When we entered his chamber, which was crouded with his relations, we advanced to the bed-ſide, where we found him in his laſt agonies, ſupported by two of his grand-daughters, who ſat on each ſide of him, ſobbing moſt piteouſly, and wiping away the froth and ſlaver as it gathered on his lips, which they frequently kiſſed with a ſhew of great anguiſh and affection—My uncle approached him with theſe words, "What! he's "not a-weigh?—How fare ye—how fare ye, old gentle-"man? Lord have mercy upon your poor ſinful ſoul!" Upon which, the dying man turned his languid eyes towards us, and Mr Bowling went on,—"Here's poor "Rory come to ſee you before you die, and receive your "bleſſing. What, man! don't deſpair,—you have been "a great ſinner, 'tis true,—what then? There's a righte-"ous Judge above,—an't there? He minds me no more "than a porpuſs.—Yes, yes, he's a-going,—the land-"crabs will have him, I ſee that; his anchor's a-peak, "i'faith." This homely conſolation ſcandalized the company ſo much, and eſpecially the parſon, who probably thought his province invaded, that we were obliged to retire into another room, where, in a few minutes, we were convinced of my grandfather's deceaſe, by a diſmal yell uttered by the young ladies in his apartment; whither we immediately haſtened, and found his heir, who had retired a little before into a cloſet, under pretence of giving vent to his ſorrow, aſking, with a countenance beſlubbered with tears, if his grandpapa was certainly dead? "Dead! (ſays my uncle, looking at the body) ay, ay, I'll "warrant him as dead as a herring.—Odd's fiſh! now my "dream is out for all the world.—I thought I ſtood up-"on the fore-caſtle, and ſaw a parcel of carrion-crows

"foul

" foul of a dead ſhark that floated along-ſide, and the " devil perching upon our ſprit-ſail-yard, in the likeneſs " of a blue bear—who, d'ye ſee, jumped over-board upon " the carcaſe, and carried it to the bottom in his claws." —" Out upon thee, reprobate, (cries the parſon,) out up- " on thee, blaſphemous wretch!—Doſt thou think his " honour's ſoul is in the poſſeſſion of Satan?" The clamour immediately aroſe, and my poor uncle, being ſhouldered from one corner of the room to the other, was obliged to lug out in his own defence, and ſwear he would turn out for no man, till ſuch time as he knew who had a title to ſend him a-drift.——" None of your tricks up- " on travellers, ſaid he; mayhap Old Buff has left my " kinſman here, his heir:—If he has, it will be the bet- " ter for his miſerable ſoul.—Odd's bob! I'd deſire no " better news.—I'd ſoon make him a clear ſhip, I war- " rant you." To avoid any further diſturbance, one of my grandfather's executors, who was preſent, aſſured Mr Bowling, that his nephew ſhould have all manner of juſtice; that a day ſhould be appointed after the funeral, for examining the papers of the deceaſed, in preſence of all his relations; till which time every deſk and cabinet in the houſe ſhould remain cloſe ſealed; and that he was very welcome to be witneſs to this ceremony, which was immediately performed to his ſatisfaction. In the mean time, orders were given to provide mourning for all the relations, in which number I was included; but my uncle would not ſuffer me to accept of it, until I ſhould be aſſured whether or no I had reaſon to honour his memory ſo far. During this interval, the conjectures of people with regard to the old gentleman's will were various: as it was well known, he had, beſides his landed eſtate, which was worth 700l. per annum, ſix or ſeven thouſand pounds at intereſt; ſome imagined, that the whole real eſtate (which he had greatly improved) would go to the young man whom he always entertained as his heir; and that the money would be equally divided between my female couſins (five in number) and me.—Others were of opinion, that as the reſt of his children had been already provided for, he would only bequeath two or three hundred pounds to each of his grand-daughters, and leave

leave the bulk of the ſum to me, to attone for his unnatural uſage of my father.—At length the important hour arrived, and the will was produced in the midſt of the expectants, whoſe looks and geſtures formed a group that would have been very entertaining to an unconcerned ſpectator. But the reader can ſcarce conceive the aſtoniſhment and mortification that appeared, when an attorney pronounced aloud, the young ſquire ſole heir of all his grandfather's eſtate perſonal and real. My uncle, who had liſtened with great attention, ſucking the head of his cudgel all the while, accompanied theſe words of the attorney with a ſtare and *whew*, that alarmed the whole aſſembly. The eldeſt and perteſt of my female competitors, who had been always very officious about my grandfather's perſon, inquired with a faultering accent, and viſage as yellow as an orange, "if there were no le-"gacies?" and was anſwered, "None at all."—Upon which ſhe fainted away.—The reſt, whoſe expectations (perhaps) were not ſo ſanguine, ſupported their diſappointment with more reſolution, though not without giving evident marks of indignation and grief, at leaſt as genuine as that which appeared in them at the old gentleman's death. My conductor, after having kick'd with his heel for ſome time againſt the wainſcot, began: "So "there's no legacy, friend, ha!—here's an old ſuccubus; "—but ſomebody's ſoul howls for it, d—n me!" The parſon of the pariſh who was one of the executors, and had acted as ghoſtly director to the old man, no ſooner heard this exclamation, than he cried out, "Avaunt, "unchriſtian reviler! avaunt! wilt thou not allow the "ſoul of his honour to reſt in peace?" But this zealous paſtor did not find himſelf ſo warmly ſeconded, as formerly, by the young ladies, who now joined my uncle againſt him, and accuſed him of having acted the part of a buſy-body with their grand-papa, whoſe ears he had certainly abuſed by falſe ſtories to their prejudice, or elſe he would not have neglected them in ſuch an unnatural manner. The young ſquire was much diverted with this ſcene, and whiſpered to my uncle, that if he had not murdered his dogs, he would have ſhewn him glorious fun, by hunting a black badger (ſo he term'd the clergyman.)

The

The ſurly lieutenant, who was not in an humour to reliſh this amuſement, replied, "You and your dogs may be "d—n'd.—I ſuppoſe you'll find them with your old dad, "in the latitude of hell. Come, Rory—about ſhip, my "lad, we muſt ſteer another courſe, I think."—And away we went.

CHAP. V.

The ſchoolmaſter uſes me barbarouſly.—I form a project of revenge, in which I am aſſiſted by my uncle—I leave the village—am ſettled at an univerſity by his generoſity.

ON our way back to the village, my uncle ſpoke not a word during the ſpace of a whole hour, but whiſtled with great vehemence, the tune of, *Why ſhould we quarrel for riches, &c.* His viſage being contracted all the while into a moſt formidable frown. At length his pace increaſed to ſuch a degree, that I was left behind a conſiderable way. Then he waited for me; and when I was almoſt up with him, called out in a ſurly tone, "Bear a "hand, damme! muſt I bring to every minute for you, "you lazy dog?" Then laying hold of me by the arm, hauled me along, until his good nature (of which he had a great ſhare) and reflection getting the better of his paſſion, he ſaid, "Come, my boy, don't be caſt down,—"the old raſcal is in hell,—that's ſome ſatisfaction;—"you ſhall go to ſea with me, my lad!—*A light heart and* "*a thin pair of breeches goes through the world, brave boys:* "as the ſong goes—eh!" Though this propoſal did not at all ſuit my inclination, I was afraid of diſcovering my averſion to it, leſt I ſhould diſoblige the only friend I had in the world; and he was ſo much a ſeaman, that he never dreamt I could have any objection to his deſign; conſequently gave him ſelf no trouble in conſulting my approbation. But this reſolution was ſoon dropt, by the advice of our uſher, who aſſured Mr Bowling, it would be a thouſand pities to baulk my genius, which would certainly, one day, make my fortune on

ſhore, provided it received due cultivation. Upon which, this generous tar determined, (though he could ill afford it) to give me univerſity education; and accordingly ſettled my board and other expences at a town not many miles diſtant, famous for its colleges, whither we repaired in a ſhort time. But, before the day of our departure, the ſchoolmaſter, who no longer had the fear of my grandfather before his eyes, laid aſide all decency and reſtraint, and not only abuſed me in the groſſeſt language his rancour could ſuggeſt, as a wicked profligate, dull, beggarly miſcreant, whom he had taught out of charity; but alſo inveighed in the moſt bitter manner againſt the memory of the judge (who by the bye had procured that ſettlement for him) hinting, in pretty plain terms, that the old gentleman's ſoul was damn'd to all eternity, for his injuſtice in neglecting to pay for my learning. This brutal behaviour, added to the ſufferings I had formerly undergone, made me think it high time to be revenged of this inſolent pedagogue. Having conſulted my adherents, I found them all ſtaunch in their promiſes to ſtand by me; and our ſcheme was this: In the afternoon preceding the day of our departure for the univerſity, I reſolved to take the advantage of the uſher's going out to make water (which he regularly did at four o'clock) and ſhut the great door, that he might not come to the aſſiſtance of his ſuperior. This being done, the aſſault was to be begun, by my advancing to my maſter and ſpitting in his face. I was to be ſeconded by two of the ſtrongeſt boys in the ſchool, who were devoted to me; their buſineſs was to join me in dragging the tyrant to a bench, over which he was to be laid, and his bare poſteriors heartily flogged with his own birch, which we propoſed to wreſt from him in the ſtruggle; but if we ſhould find him too many for us all three, we were to demand the aſſiſtance of our companions, who ſhould be ready to reinforce us, or oppoſe any thing that might be undertaken for the maſter's relief. One of my principal aſſiſtants was called Jeremy Gawky, ſon and heir of a wealthy gentleman in the neighbourhood; and the name of the other Hugh Strap, the cadet of a family which had given ſhoemakers to the village time out of mind. I had

had once ſaved Gawky's life by plunging into a river and dragging him on ſhore, when he was on the point of being drowned. I had often reſcued him from the clutches of thoſe whom his inſufferable arrogance had provoked to a reſentment he was not able to ſuſtain; and many times ſaved his reputation and poſteriors, by performing his exerciſes at ſchool; ſo that it is not to be wondered at, if he had a particular regard for me and my intereſts. The attachment of Strap flowed from a voluntary diſintereſted inclination, which had manifeſted itſelf on many occaſions in my behalf, he having once rendered me the ſame ſervice that I had rendered Gawky, by ſaving my life at the riſk of his own; and often fathered offences that I had committed, for which he ſuffered ſeverely, rather than I ſhould feel the weight of the puniſhment I deſerved. Theſe two champions were the more willing to engage in this enterpriſe, becauſe they intended to leave the ſchool next day, as well as I; the firſt being ordered by his father to return into the country, and the other being bound apprentice to a barber, at a market-town not far off.

In the mean time, my uncle being informed of my maſter's behaviour to me, was enraged at his inſolence, and vowed revenge ſo heartily, that I could not refrain from telling him the ſcheme I had concerted, which he heard with great ſatisfaction, at every ſentence ſquirting out a mouthful of ſpittle, tinctured with tobacco, of which he conſtantly chew'd a large quid. At laſt, pulling up his breeches, he cried, "No, no, Z—ds! that won't do "neither,—howſomever, 'tis a bold undertaking, my "lad,—that I muſt ſay, i'faith!—but lookee, lookee, "how do you propoſe to get clear off?—won't the ene-"my give chace, my boy?—ay, ay, that he will, I war-"rant,—and alarm the whole coaſt—ah! God help thee, "more ſail than ballaſt, Rory.—Let me alone for that—"leave the whole to me.—I'll ſhew him the fore-top-"ſail, I will.—If ſo be your ſhip-mates are jolly boys, "and won't flinch, you ſhall ſee, you ſhall ſee; egad, "I'll play him a ſalt-water trick—I'll bring him to the "gang-way, and anoint him with a cat and nine tails; "he ſhall have a round dozen doubled, my lad, he ſhall

"—and be left laſhed to his meditations." We were very proud of our aſſociate, who immediately went to work, and prepared the inſtrument of his revenge, with great ſkill and expedition; after which, he ordered our baggage to be packed up and ſent off, a day before our attempt, and got horſes ready to be mounted, as ſoon as the affair ſhould be over. At length the hour arrived, when our auxiliary, ſeizing the opportunity of the uſher's abſence, bolted in, ſecured the door, and immediately laid hold of the pedant by his collar, who bauled out, "Mur-"der! Thieves!"—with the voice of a Stentor. Though I trembled all over like an aſpen leaf, I knew there was no time to be loſt, and accordingly got up and ſummoned our aſſociates to our aſſiſtance. Strap without any heſitation obeyed the ſignal, and ſeeing me leap upon the maſter's back, ran immediately to one of his legs, which pulling with all his force, this dreadful adverſary was humbled to the ground: upon which Gawky, who had hitherto remained in his place, under the influence of an univerſal trepidation, haſtened to the ſcene of action, and inſulted the fallen tyrant with a loud huzza, in which the whole ſchool joined. This noiſe alarmed the uſher, who finding himſelf ſhut out, endeavoured, partly by threats, and partly by intreaties, to procure admiſſion. My uncle bade him have a little patience, and he would let him in preſently; but if he pretended to ſtir from that place, it ſhould fare the worſe with the ſon of a b—ch his ſuperior, on whom he intended only to beſtow a little wholeſome chaſtiſement, for his barbarous uſage of Rory, "to "which, ſaid he, you are no ſtranger." By this time we had dragged the criminal to a poſt, to which Bowling tied him with a rope he had provided on purpoſe, after having ſecured his hands and ſtripped his back. In this ludicrous poſture he ſtood (to the no ſmall entertainment of the boys, who crowded about him, and ſhouted with great exultation at the novelty of the ſight) venting bitter imprecations againſt the Lieutenant, and reproaching his ſcholars with treachery and rebellion; when the uſher was admitted, whom my uncle accoſted in this manner: "Heaven, Mr Syntax, I believe you are an honeſt man, "d'ye ſee—and I have a reſpect for you—but for all that,

" we muſt for our own ſecurity (d'ye ſee) belay you for " a ſhort time." With theſe words, he pulled out ſome fathoms of cord, which the honeſt man no ſooner ſaw, than he proteſted with great earneſtneſs, he would allow no violence to be offered to him, at the ſame time accuſing me of perfidy and ingratitude. But Bowling repreſenting that it was in vain to reſiſt, and that he did not mean to uſe him with violence and indecency, but only to hinder him from raiſing the hue and cry againſt us before we ſhould be out of their power, he allowed himſelf to be bound to his own deſk, where he ſat a ſpectator of the puniſhment inflicted on his principal. My uncle having upbraided this arbitrary wretch with his inhumanity to me, told him, that he propoſed to give him a little diſcipline for the good of his ſoul, which he immediately put in practice, with great vigour and dexterity. This ſmart application to the pedant's wither'd poſteriors, gave him ſuch exquiſite pain, that he roared like a mad bull, danced, curſed, and blaſphemed, like a frantic bedlamite. When the lieutenant thought himſelf ſufficiently revenged, he took his leave of him in theſe words, " Now, " friend, you'll remember me the longeſt day you have to " live—I have given you a leſſon, that will let you know " what flogging is, and teach you to have more ſympa- " thy for the future:—Shout, boys, ſhout." This ceremony was no ſooner over, than my uncle propoſed they ſhould quit the ſchool, and convoy their comrade Rory to a public-houſe, about a mile from the village, where he would treat them all. His offer being joyfully embraced, he addreſſed himſelf to Mr Syntax, and begged him to accompany us; but this invitation he refuſed with great diſdain, telling my uncle, for he was not the man he took him to be. " Well, well, old ſurly, (repoſed my " uncle, ſhaking his head) thou art an honeſt fellow not- " withſtanding; and if ever I have the command of a " ſhip, thou ſhalt be our ſchoolmaſter, I'faith." So ſaying, he diſmiſſed the boys, and locking the door, left the two gentlemen to confer about their affairs; while we moved forward to the village, attended by a numerous retinue, who all the time never ceaſed to huzza.

We put in with many ſhouts, and lay that night at an inn, where

road, about ten miles ſhort of the town where I was to rema. at which we arrived next day, and I found I had no cauſe to complain of the accommodations provided for me; in being boarded at the houſe of an apothecary, who had married a diſtant relation of my mother. In a few days after, my uncle ſet out for his ſhip, having ſettled the neceſſary funds for my maintenance and education.

CHAP. VI.

I make great progreſs in my ſtudies—am careſſed by every body—my female couſins take notice of me—I reject their invitation—they are incenſed and conſpire againſt me—am left deſtitute by a misfortune that befalls my uncle—Gawky's *treachery—my revenge.*

AS I was now capable of reflection, I began to conſider my precarious ſituation; that I was utterly abandoned by thoſe whoſe duty it was to protect me; and that my ſole dependence was on the generoſity of one man, who was not only expoſed by his profeſſion to continual dangers, which might one day deprive me of him for ever; but alſo (no doubt) ſubject to thoſe viciſſitudes of diſpoſition, which a change of fortune uſually creates; or, which a better acquaintance with the world might produce: for I always aſcribed his benevolence to the dictates of a heart as yet undebauched by a commerce with mankind. Alarmed at theſe conſiderations, I reſolved to apply myſelf with great care to my ſtudies, and enjoy the opportunity in my power: this I did with ſuch ſucceſs, that in the ſpace of three years, I underſtood Greek very well, was pretty far advanced in the mathematics, and no ſtranger to moral and natural philoſophy: logic I made no account of; but, above all things, I valued myſelf on my taſte in the *Belles Lettres*, and a talent for poetry, which had already produced ſome pieces, that met with a very favourable reception. Theſe qualifications added to a good face and ſhape, acquired the eſteem and acquaintance of the moſt conſiderable people in town, and

and I had the satisfaction to find myself in some degree of favour with the ladies; an intoxicating piece of good fortune to one of my amorous complexion! which I obtained, or at least preserved, by gratifying their propensity to scandal, in lampooning their rivals. Two of my female cousins lived in this place, with their mother, since the death of their father, who left his whole fortune equally divided between them; so that if they were not the most beautiful, they were at least the richest toasts in town; and received daily the addresses of all the beaux and cavaliers of the country.—Although I had hitherto been looked upon by them with the most supercilious contempt, my character now attracted their notice so much, that I was given to understand I might be honoured with their acquaintance if I pleased. The reader will easily perceive, that this condescension either flowed from the hope of making my poetical capacity subservient to their malice, or at least of screening themselves from the lash of my resentment, which they had effectually provoked. I enjoyed this triumph with great satisfaction, and not only rejected their offer with disdain, but in all my performances, whether satire or panegyric, industriously avoided mentioning their names, even while I celebrated those of their intimates: this neglect mortified their pride exceedingly, and incensed them to such a degree, that they were resolved to make me repent of my indifference. The first stroke of their revenge consisted in their hiring a poor collegian to write verses against me, the subject of which was my own poverty, and the catastrophe of my unhappy parents; but besides the badness of the composition (of which they themselves were ashamed) they did not find their account in endeavouring to reproach me with those misfortunes, which they and their relations had brought upon me: and which, consequently, reflected much more dishonour on themselves than on me, who was the innocent victim of their barbarity and avarice. Finding this plan miscarry, they found means to irritate a young gentleman against me, by telling him I had lampooned his mistress; and so effectually succeeded in the quality of incendiaries, that this enraged lover determined to fire me next night, as I returned to my lodgings from a friend's

friend's houſe that I frequented: with this view, he waited in the ſtreet, attended by two of his companions, to whom he had imparted his deſign of carrying me down to the river, in which he propoſed to have me heartily ducked, notwithſtanding the ſeverity of the weather, it being then about the middle of December. But this ſtratagem did not ſucceed; for, being appriſed of their ambuſh, I got home another way, and by the help of my landlord's apprentice diſcharged a volley from the garret-window, which did great execution upon them, and next day occaſioned ſo much mirth at their expence, that they found themſelves under a neceſſity of leaving the town, until the adventure ſhould be entirely forgotten. My couſins (though twice baffled in their expectation) did not however deſiſt from perſecuting me, who had now enraged them beyond a poſſibility of forgiveneſs, by detecting their malice, and preventing its effect; neither ſhould I have found them more humane, had I patiently ſubmitted to their rancour, and bore without murmuring the rigour of their unreaſonable hate; for I have found by experience that though ſmall favours may be acknowledged, and ſlight injuries atoned, there is no wretch ſo ungrateful as he whom you have moſt generouſly obliged; and no enemy ſo implacable as thoſe who have done you the greateſt wrong. Theſe good natured creatures, therefore, had recourſe to a ſtratagem, which conſpired with a piece of bad news I ſoon after received, to give them all the ſatisfaction they deſired: this plan was to debauch the faith of my companion and confident, who betrayed the truſt I repoſed in him, by imparting to them the particulars of my ſmall amours, which they publiſhed with ſuch exaggerations, that I ſuffered very much in the opinion of every body, and was utterly diſcarded by the dear creatures whoſe names had been called in queſtion. While I was buſy in tracing out the author of this treachery, that I might not only be revenged on him, but alſo vindicate my character to my friends, I one day perceived the looks of my landlady much altered, when I went home to dinner, and inquiring into the cauſe, ſhe ſcrewed up her mouth, and fixing her eyes on the ground, told me her huſband had received a letter from Mr Fowling, with one enclo-

fed for me—ſhe was very ſorry for what had happened, both for my ſake and his own. People ſhould be more cautious of their conduct—ſhe was always afraid his brutal behaviour would bring him into ſome misfortune or other. As for her part ſhe would be very ready to befriend me; but ſhe had a ſmall family of her own to maintain. The world would do nothing for her if ſhe ſhould come to want—charity begins at home. She wiſhed I had been bound to ſome ſubſtantial handicraft, ſuch as a weaver or a ſhoemaker, rather than loiter away my time in learning fooliſh nonſenſe, that would never bring me in a penny—but ſome folks are wiſe, and ſome are otherwiſe. I was liſtening to this myſterious diſcourſe, with great amazement, when her huſband entered, and without ſpeaking a ſyllable, put both the letters into my hand. I received them trembling, and read what follows:

To Mr ROGER POTION.

SIR,

" THIS is to let you know, that I have quitted the " thunder man of war; being obliged to ſheer off " for killing my captain, which I did fairly on the beach, " at Cape Tiberoon, in the iſland of Hiſpaniola; having " received his fire and returned it, which went through " his body:—and I would ſerve the beſt man ſo that ever " ſtept between ſtem and ſtern, if ſo be that he ſtruck " me, as captain Oakhum did. I am (thank God) ſafe " among the French, who are very civil, tho' I don't un- " derſtand their lingo,—and I hope to be reſtored in a " little time, for all the great friends and parliamentary " intereſt of the captain; for I have ſent over to my " landlord in Deal an account of the whole affair, with " our bearings and diſtances while we were engaged, " whereby I have deſired him to lay it before his Ma- " jeſty, who (God bleſs him) will not ſuffer an honeſt tar " to be wronged. My love to your ſpouſe, and am

" Your loving friend

" and ſervant to command, while

" THOMAS BOWLING."

To RODERICK RANDOM.

" Dear RORY,

" DON'T be grieved at my misfortune—but mind " your book, my lad. I have got no money to " ſend you; but what of that? Mr Potion will take care " of you, for the love he bears to me, and let you want " for nothing; and it ſhall go hard but I will ſee him " one day repaid. No more at preſent, but reſts

" Your dutiful uncle

" and ſervant, till death,

" THOMAS BOWLING."

This letter (which with the other was dated from Port Louis in Hiſpaniola) I had no ſooner read, than the apothecary ſhaking his head, began :—" I have a very great re- " gard for Mr Bowling, that's certain, and could be well " content—but times are very hard.—There's no ſuch " thing as money to be got—I believe 'tis all vaniſhed " under ground, for my part.—Beſides, I have been out " of pocket already, having entertained you ſince the be- " ginning of this month, without receiving a ſixpence, " and God knows if ever I ſhall; for I believe it will go " hard with your uncle. And more than that, I was " thinking of giving you warning, for I want your apart- " ment for a new 'prentice, whom I expect from the " country every hour:—So, I deſire you will this week " provide your ſelf with another lodging." The indignation which this harangue inſpired, gave me ſpirits to ſupport my reverſe of fortune; and to tell him, I deſpiſed his mean ſelfiſh diſpoſition ſo much, that I would rather ſtarve than be beholden to him for one ſingle meal. Upon which, out of my pocket-money, I paid him to the laſt farthing of what I owed, and aſſured him, I would not ſleep another night under his roof. This ſaid, I ſallied out in a tranſport of rage and ſorrow, without knowing whither to fly for ſhelter, having not one friend in the world capable of relieving me, and only three ſhillings in my purſe. After giving way for a few minutes to the dictates of my rage, I went and hired a ſmall bed-room at the rate of one ſhilling and ſixpence per week, which I

was

was obliged to pay per advance, before the landlord would receive me: thither I removed my luggage; and next morning got up, with a view of craving the advice and assistance of a person who had on all occasions loaded me with caresses, and made frequent offers of friendship, while I was under no necessity of accepting them. He received me with his wonted affability, and insisted on my breakfasting with him, a favour which I did not think fit to refuse. But when I communicated the occasion of my visit, he appeared so disconcerted, that I concluded him wonderfully affected with the misery of my condition, and looked upon him as a man of the most extensive sympathy and benevolence. He did not leave me long under this mistake; for recovering himself from his confusion, he told me, he was grieved at my misfortune, and desired to know what had passed between my landlord Mr Potion and me. Whereupon I recounted the conversation; and when I repeated the answer I made to his ungenerous remonstrance with regard to my leaving his house, this pretended friend affected a stare, and exclaimed, "Is it possible you could behave so ill to the "man who had treated you so kindly all along?"—My surprise at hearing this was not at all affected, whatever his might be; and I gave him to understand, with some warmth, that I did not imagine he would so unreasonably espouse the cause of a scoundrel, who ought to be expelled from every social community. This heat of mine gave him all the advantage he desired over me, and our discourse (after much altercation) concluded in his desiring never to see me again in that place; to which desire I yielded my consent, assuring him, that had I been as well acquainted with his principles formerly as I was now, he never should have had an opportunity of making that request.—And thus we parted.

On my return, I met my comrade Squire Gawky, whom his father had sent, some time ago, to town, for his improvement in writing, dancing, fencing, and other modish qualifications. As I had lived with him, since his arrival, on the footing of our old intimacy, I made no scruple of informing him of the lowness of my circumstances, and asking a small sum of money, to subsist my present ex-

pence

pence; upon which he pulled out a handful of halfpence with a ſhilling or two among them, and ſwore that was all he had to keep his pocket till next quarter-day, he having loſt the greateſt part of his allowance the night before at billiards. Though this aſſertion might very well be true, I was extremely mortified at his indifference; for he neither expreſſed any ſympathy for my miſ-hap, nor deſire of alleviating my diſtreſs; and accordingly I left him without uttering one word: but when I afterwards underſtood that he was the perſon who had formerly betrayed me to the malice of my couſins, to whom likewiſe he had carried the tidings of my forlorn ſituation, which afforded them great matter of triumph and exultation, I determined with myſelf to call him to a ſevere account; for which purpoſe I borrowed a ſword, and wrote a challenge, deſiring him to meet me at a certain time and place, that I might have an opportunity of puniſhing his perfidy, at the expence of his blood. He accepted the invitation, and I betook myſelf to the field, though not without feeling conſiderable repugnance to the combat, which frequently attacked me in cold ſweats by the way; but the deſire of revenge, the ſhame of retracting, and hope of conqueſt, conſpired to repel theſe unmanly ſymptoms of fear; and I appeared on the plain with a good grace: there I waited an hour beyond the time appointed, and was not ill pleaſed to find he had no mind to meet me; becauſe I ſhould have an opportunity of expoſing his cowardice, diſplaying my own courage, and of beating him ſoundly whereſoever I ſhould find him, without any dread of the conſequence. Elevated with theſe ſuggeſtions, which entirely baniſhed all thoughts of my deplorable condition, I went directly to Gawky's lodgings, where I was informed of his precipitate retreat, he having ſet out for the country in leſs than an hour after he had received my billet; and I was vain enough to have the whole ſtory inſerted in the news, although I was fain to ſell a gold-laced hat to my landlord, for leſs than half price, to diſcharge the expence, and contribute to my ſubſiſtence.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

I am entertained by Mr Crab—*a deſcription of him*—*I acquire the art of ſurgery*—*conſult* Crab's *diſpoſition*—*become neceſſary to him*—*an accident happens*—*he adviſes me to launch out into the world*—*aſſiſts me with money*—*I ſet out for* London.

THE fumes of my reſentment being diſſipated, as well as the vanity of my ſucceſs, I found myſelf deſerted to all the horrors of extreme want, and avoided by mankind as a creature of a different ſpecies, or rather as a ſolitary being, noways comprehended within the ſcheme or protection of providence. My deſpair had rendered me almoſt quite ſtupified, when I was one day told, that a gentleman deſired to ſee me at a certain public-houſe, whither immediately I repaired; and was introduced to one Mr Launcelot Crab, a ſurgeon in town, who was engaged with two more in drinking a liquor called *pop-in*, compoſed by mixing a quartern of brandy with a quart of ſmall beer. Before I relate the occaſion of this meſſage, I believe it will not be diſagreeable to the reader, if I deſcribe the gentleman who ſent for me, and mention ſome circumſtances of his character and conduct, which may illuſtrate what follows, and account for his behaviour to me.

This member of the faculty was aged fifty, about five feet high, and ten round the belly; his face was capacious as a full moon, and much of the complexion of a mulberry; his noſe reſembling a powder-horn, was ſwelled to an enormous ſize, and ſtudded all over with carbuncles; and his little grey eyes reflected the rays in ſuch an oblique manner, that while he looked a perſon full in the face, one would have imagined he was admiring the buckle of his ſhoe. He had long entertained an implacable reſentment againſt Potion, who, though a younger practitioner, was better employed than he, and once had the aſſurance to perform a cure, whereby he diſappointed and diſgraced the prognoſtic of the ſaid Crab. This quarrel, which was at one time upon the point of being made up, by the interpoſition and me-

diation

tion of friends, had been lately inflamed beyond a poſſibility of reconciliation by the reſpective wives of the opponents, who, chancing to meet at a chriſtening, diſagreed about precedence, proceeded from invectives to blows, and were with great difficulty, by the goſſips, prevented from converting the occaſion of joy into a ſcene of lamentation.

The difference between theſe rivals was in the height of rancour, when I received the meſſage of Crab, who received me as civilly as I could have expected from one of his diſpoſition; and after deſiring me to ſit, inquired into the particulars of my leaving the houſe of Potion; which when I had related, he ſaid with a malicious grin,—"There's a ſneaking dog;—I always thought him a fellow "without a ſoul, d—n me!—a canting ſcoundrel, who "has crept into buſineſs by his hypocriſy, and kiſſing the "a—ſe, of every body" "Ay, ay, (ſays another,) one "might ſee with half an eye, that the raſcal has no honeſty "in him, by his going ſo regularly to church." This ſentence was confirmed by a third, who aſſured his companions, that Potion was never known to be diſguiſed in liquor but once, at a meeting of the godly, where he had diſtinguiſhed himſelf by an *extempore* prayer an hour long. After this preamble, Crab addreſſed himſelf to me in theſe words, "Well, my lad, I have heard a good character of "you, and I'll do for you:—You may ſend your things "to my houſe when you pleaſe:—I have given orders "for your reception.——Z—ds! what does the booby "ſtare at? If you have no mind to embrace my courte-"ous offer, you may let it alone, and be d—mn'd." I anſwered with a ſubmiſſive bow, that I was far from rejecting his friendly offer, which I would immediately accept, as ſoon as he ſhould inform me on what footing I was to be entertained. "What footing! d—n my blood, "(cried he,) d'ye expect to have a footman and a couple "of horſes kept for you?" No, Sir, (I replied) my expectations are not quite ſo ſanguine. That I may be as little burthenſome as poſſible, I would willingly ſerve in your ſhop, by which means I may ſave you the expence of a journeyman, or porter at leaſt, for I underſtand a little pharmacy, having employed ſome of my leiſure

hours

hours in the practice of that art, while I lived with Mr Potion: neither am I altogether ignorant of surgery, which I have studied with great pleasure and application. "O ho! you did? (says Crab.) Gentlemen, here is a "complete artist!—Studied surgery! what? in books I "suppose.—I shall have you disputing with me one of "these days on points of my profession.—You can "already account for muscular motion (I warrant) "and explain the mystery of the brain and nerves—— "ha!—You are too learned for me, d—n me.——But "let's hear no more of this stuff.—Can you bleed and "give a clyster, spread a plaister and prepare a potion?" Upon my answering in the affirmative, he shook his head, telling me, he believed he should have little good of me, for all my promises; but, however, he would take me in for the sake of charity. I was accordingly that very night admitted to his house, and had an apartment assigned to me in the garret, which I was fain to put up with, notwithstanding the mortification my pride suffered in this change of circumstances. I was soon convinced of the real motives which induced Crab to receive me in this manner: for, besides the gratification of his revenge, by exposing the selfishness of his antagonist, in opposition to his own generosity, which was all affectation, he had occasion for a young man who understood something of the profession to fill up the place of his eldest apprentice, lately dead, not without violent suspicion of foul play from his master's brutality. The knowledge of this circumstance, together with his daily behaviour to his wife and the young apprentice, did not at all contribute to my enjoying my new situation with ease; however, as I did not perceive how I could bestow myself to better advantage, I resolved to study Crab's temper with all the application, and manage it with all the address in my power. And it was not long before I found out a strange peculiarity of humour, which governed his behaviour towards all his dependants. I observed when he was pleased, he was such a miser of his satisfaction, that if his wife or servants betrayed the least symptom of participation, he was offended to an unreasonable degree of choler and fury, the effects of which they seldom failed to feel: and

when his indignation was roufed, fubmiffion and foothing always exafperated it beyond the bounds of reafon and humanity. I therefore purfued a contrary plan, and one day, when he honoured me with the names of ignorant whelp, and lazy raggamuffin—I boldly replied, I was neither ignorant nor lazy, fince I both underftood and performed my bufinefs as well as he could do for his foul; neither was it juft to call me a raggamuffin, for I had a whole coat on my back, and was defcended from a better family than any he could boaft an alliance with. He gave tokens of great amazement at this affurance of mine, and fhook his cane over my head, regarding me all the time with a countenance truly diabolical. Although I was terribly ftartled at his menacing looks and poflure, I yet had reflection enough left to convince me I had gone too far to retract, and that this was the critical minute which muft decide my future lot in his fervice; I therefore fnatched up the peftle of a mortar, and fwore if he offered to ftrike without a caufe, I fhould fee whether his fcull or my weapon was hardeft.—He continued filent for fome time, and at laft broke forth into thefe ejaculations. —" This is fine ufage from a fervant to a maftcr,—very " fine!—damnation!—but no matter, you fhall pay for " this, you dog, you fhall.—I'll do your bufinefs—yes, " yes, I'll teach you to lift your hand againft me." So faying, he retired, and left me under dreadful apprehenfions, which vanifhed entirely at our next meeting, when he behaved with unufual complacency, and treated me with a glafs of punch after dinner. By this conduct, I got the afcendancy over him in a fhort time, and became fo neceffary to him, in managing his bufinefs, while he was engaged at the bottle, that fortune began to wear a kinder afpect; and I confoled myfelf for the difregard of my former acquaintance, with the knowledge I daily imbibed, by a clofe application to the duties of my employment, in which I fucceeded beyond my own expectation. I was on very good terms with my mafter's wife, whofe eiteem I acquired and cultivated, by repref'-ing Mrs Potion in the moft ridiculous lights my fatirical talents could invent, as well as by rendering her feme Chriftian offices when fhe had been too familiar with the

dram-bottle, to which ſhe had oftentimes recourſe for conſolation, under the affliction ſhe ſuffered from a barbarous huſband. In this manner I lived, without hearing the leaſt tidings of my uncle, for the ſpace of two years, during which time I kept little or no company, being neither in a humour to reliſh, nor in a capacity to maintain much acquaintance; for the Nabal, my maſter, allowed me no wages, and the ſmall perquiſites of my ſtation ſcarce ſupplied me with the common neceſſaries of life. I was no longer a pert unthinking coxcomb, giddy with popular applauſe, and elevated with the extravagance of hope; my misfortunes had taught me how little the careſſes of the world, during a man's proſperity, are to be valued by him: and how ſeriouſly and expeditiouſly he ought to ſet about making himſelf independent of them. My preſent appearance, therefore, was the leaſt of my care, which was wholly engroſſed in laying up a ſtock of inſtruction that might ſecure me againſt the caprice of fortune for the future. I became ſuch a ſloven, and contracted ſuch an air of auſterity, that every body pronounced me creſt-fallen; and Gawky returned to town without running any riſk from my reſentment, which was by this time pretty much cooled and reſtrained by prudential reaſons, ſo effectually, that I never ſo much as thought of obtaining ſatisfaction for the injuries he had done me. When I deemed myſelf ſufficiently maſter of my buſineſs, I began to caſt about for an opportunity of launching into the world, in hope of finding ſome proviſion, that might make amends for the difficulties I had undergone: but as this could not be effected without a ſmall ſum of money to equip me for the field, I was in the utmoſt perplexity how to raiſe it, well knowing, that Crab, for his own take, would never put me in a condition to leave him, when his intereſt was ſo much concerned in my ſtay. But a ſmall accident, which happened about this time, determined him in my favour. This was no other than the pregnancy of his maid-ſervant, who declared her ſituation to me, affirming, at the ſame time, that I was the occaſion of it. Although I had no reaſon to queſtion the truth of this aſſertion, I was not ignorant of the familiarities which had paſſed between her

maſter and her; taking the advantage of which, I repreſented to her the folly of laying the burden at my door, when ſhe might diſpoſe of it to much better purpoſe with Mr Crab. She liſtened to my advice, and next day acquainted him with the pretended ſucceſs of their mutual endeavours. He was far from being overjoyed at this proof of his vigour, which he foreſaw might have very troubleſome conſequences; not that he dreaded any domeſtic grumblings and reproaches from his wife, whom he kept in perfect ſubjection; but becauſe he knew it would furniſh his rival Potion with a handle for inſulting and undermining his reputation, there being no ſcandal equal to that of uncleanneſs, in the opinion of thoſe who inhabit the part of the iſland where he lived. He therefore took a reſolution worthy of himſelf, which was, to perſuade the girl that ſhe was not with child, but only afflicted with a diſorder incident to young women, which he could eaſily remove: with this view (as he pretended) he preſcribed for her ſuch medicines as he thought would infallibly procure abortion; but in this ſcheme he was diſappointed, for the maid being advertiſed by me of his deſign, and at the ſame time well acquainted with her own condition, abſolutely refuſed to follow his directions; and threatened to publiſh her ſituation to the world, if he would not immediately take ſome method of providing for the important occaſion, which ſhe expected in a few months. It was not long before I gueſſed the reſult of his deliberation, by his addreſſing himſelf to me (one day) in this manner: "I am ſurpri-
" ſed, that a young fellow like you diſcovers no inclina-
" tion to puſh his fortune in the world:—Before I was
" of your age, I was broiling on the coaſt of Guinea:—
" Damme! what's to hinder you from profiting by the
" war, which will certainly be declared in a ſhort time
" againſt Spain?—You may eaſily get on board of a
" king's ſhip in quality of ſurgeon's mate, where you
" will certainly ſee a great deal of practice, and ſtand a
" good chance of getting prize-money." I laid hold of this declaration, which I had long wiſhed for, and aſſured him I would follow his advice with pleaſure, if it was in my power; but that it was impoſſible for me to embrace

an

an opportunity of that kind, as I had no friend to advance a little money, to ſupply me with what neceſſaries I ſhould want, and defray the expences of my journey to London. He told me, that few neceſſaries were required; and as for the expence of my journey, he would lend me money, ſufficient not only for that purpoſe, but alſo to maintain me comfortably in London until I ſhould procure a warrrant for my proviſion on board of ſome ſhip. I gave him a thouſand thanks for his obliging offer, (although I was very well appriſed of his motive, which was no other than a deſign to lay the baſtard to my charge after my departure,) and accordingly ſet out in a few weeks for London; my whole fortune conſiſting of one ſuit of clothes, half a dozen ruffled ſhirts, as many plain, two pair of worſted, and a like number of thread ſtockings; a caſe of pocket-inſtruments, a ſmall edition of Horace, Wiſeman's ſurgery, and ten guineas in caſh; for which Crab took my bond, bearing *5 per cent.* intereſt; at the ſame time giving me a letter to the member of parliament for our town, which he ſaid would do my buſineſs effectually.

CHAP. VIII.

I arrive at Newcaſtle—*meet with my old ſchool-fellow Strap*—*We determine to walk together to* London—*ſet out on our journey*—*put up at a ſolitary ale-houſe*—*are diſturbed by a ſtrange adventure in the night.*

THERE is no ſuch convenience as a waggon in this country, and my finances were too weak to ſupport the expence of hiring a horſe; I determined therefore to ſet out with the carriers, who tranſport goods from one place to another on horſeback; and this ſcheme I accordingly put in execution, on the firſt day of November 1739, ſtriding upon a pack-ſaddle between two baskets, one of which contained my goods in a knapſack. But by the time we arrived at Newcaſtle upon Tyne, I was ſo fatigued with the tediouſneſs of the carriage, and benumbed with the coldneſs of the weather, that I reſol-

ved to travel the reſt of my journey on foot, rather than proceed in ſuch a diſagreeable manner.

The hoſtler of the inn at which we put up, underſtanding I was bound for London, adviſed me to take my paſſage in a collier, which would be both cheap and expeditious, and withal much eaſier than to walk upwards of three hundred miles through deep roads, in the winter time; a journey which he believed I had not ſtrength enough to perform. I was almoſt perſuaded to take his advice, when, one day, ſtepping into a barber's ſhop to be ſhaved, the young man, while he lathered my face, accoſted me thus: "Sir, I preſume you "are a Scotchman." I anſwered in the affirmative. "Pray (continued he) from what part of Scotland?" I no ſooner told him, than he diſcovered great emotion, and not confining his operation to my chin and upper-lip, beſmeared my whole face with great agitation. I was ſo offended at this profuſion, that ſtarting up, I aſked him what the d—l he meant by uſing me ſo? He begged pardon, telling me his joy at meeting with a countryman had occaſioned ſome confuſion in him; and craved my name. But when I declared my name was Random, he exclaimed in a rapture, "How! Rory Random?" The ſame, I replied, looking at him with aſtoniſhment. "What! cried he, don't you know your old ſchool-fel-"low, Hugh Strap?" At that inſtant recollecting his face, I flew into his arms, and in the tranſport of my joy, gave him back one half of the ſuds he had ſo lavithly beſtowed on my countenance; ſo that we made a very ludicrous appearance, and furniſhed a great deal of mirth for his maſter and ſhop-mates, who were witneſſes of this ſcene. When our mutual careſſes were over, I ſat down again to be ſhaved; but the poor fellow's nerves were ſo diſcompoſed by this unexpected meeting, that his hand could ſcarcely hold the razor, with which (nevertheleſs) he found means to cut me in three places, in as many ſtrokes. His maſter, perceiving his diſorder, bade another ſupply his place, and after the operation was performed, gave Strap leave to paſs the reſt of the day with me. We repaired immediately to my lodgings, where calling for ſome beer, I entreated to be informed of the ad-

ventures, which contained nothing more, than that his maſter dying before his time was out, he had come to Newcaſtle about a year ago, in expectation of journey-work, along with three young fellows of his acquaintance, who worked in the keels; that he had the good fortune of being employed by a very civil maſter, with whom he intended to ſtay till the ſpring, at which time he propoſed to go to London, where he did not doubt of finding encouragement. When I communicated to him my ſituation and deſign, he did not approve of my taking a paſſage by ſea, by reaſon of the danger of a winter voyage, which is very hazardous along that coaſt, as well as the precarioufneſs of the wind, which might poſſibly detain me a great while, to the no ſmall detriment of my fortune: whereas if I would venture by land, he would bear me company, carry my baggage all the way, and if we ſhould be fatigued before we could perform the journey, it would be no hard matter for us to find on the road, either return horſes or waggons, of which we might take the advantage for a very trifling expence. I was ſo ravithed at this propoſal, that I embraced him affectionately, and aſſured him that he might command my purſe to the laſt farthing; but he gave me to underſtand, he had ſaved money ſufficient to anſwer his own occaſions; and that he had a friend in London, who would ſoon introduce him into buſineſs in that capital, and might poſſibly have it in his power to ſerve me alſo.

Having concerted the plan, and ſettled our affairs that night, we departed next morning by day-break, armed with a good cudgel each (my companion being charged with the furniture of us both, crammed into one knapſack;) and our money ſewed between the lining and waiſtband of our breeches, except ſome looſe ſilver for our immediate expence on the road. We travelled all day at a round pace, but being ignorant of the proper ſtages were benighted at a good diſtance from any inn, ſo that we were compelled to take up our lodging at a ſmall hedge ale-houſe, that ſtood on a by-road, about half a mile from the high-way: there we found a peaſant of our own country, in whoſe company we regaled ourſelves with bacon and eggs, and a glaſs of good

good ale, before a comfortable fire, converſing all the while very ſociably with the landlord and his daughter, an hale buxom laſs, who entertained us with great good humour, and in whoſe affection I was vain enough to believe I had made ſome progreſs. About eight o'clock we were all three, at our own deſire, ſhewn into an apartment, furniſhed with two beds, in one of which Strap and I betook ourſelves to reſt, and the pedlar occupied the other, though not before he had prayed a conſiderable time *extempore*, ſearched into every corner of the room, and faſtened the door on the inſide with a ſtrong iron ſcrew which he carried about with him for that uſe. I ſlept very ſound till midnight, when I was diſturbed by a violent motion of the bed, which ſhook under me with a continual tremor. Alarmed at this phenomenon, I jogged my companion, whom, to my no ſmall amazement, I found drenched in ſweat, and quaking through every limb. He told me with a low faultering voice, that we were undone; for there was a bloody highwayman loaded with piſtols in the next room: then, bidding me make as little noiſe as poſſible, he directed me to a ſmall chink in the board partition, through which I could ſee a thick-ſet brawny fellow, with a fierce countenance, ſitting at a table with our young landlady, having a bottle of ale and a brace of piſtols before him. I liſtened with great attention, and heard him ſay in a terrible tone: "D—n that ſon of a bitch, Smack "the coachman! – He has ſerved me a fine trick, indeed! "——but d—tion ſeize me, if I don't make him repent "it!—I'll teach the ſcoundrel to give intelligence to "others, while he is under articles with me." Our landlady endeavoured to appeaſe this exaſperated robber, by ſaying he might be miſtaken in Smack, who perhaps kept no correſpondence with the other gentleman that robbed his coach,—and that if an accident had diſappointed him to-day, he might ſoon find opportunities enough to atone for his loſt trouble. "I'll tell thee what, my dear Bet, "(replied he) I never had, nor ever will, while my "name is Rodie, have ſuch a glorious booty as I miſſed "to-day.——Z—d! there was 400 l. in caſh to recruit "men for the king's ſervice, beſides the jewels, watch-

"es,

" es, ſwords, and money belonging to the paſſengers;—" had it been my fortune to have got clear off with ſo " much treaſure, I would have purchaſed a commiſſion " in the army, and made you an officer's lady, you jade, " I would." " Well, well, (cries Betty,) we muſt truſt " to providence for that;—but did you find nothing " worth taking which eſcaped the other gentleman of " the road?" " Not much, faith (ſaid the lover;) I " gleaned a few things,—ſuch as a pair of pops, ſilver " mounted, (here they are) I took them loaded from " the captain who had the charge of the money, toge- " ther with a gold watch, which he had concealed in " his breeches—I likewiſe found ten Portugal pieces in " the ſhoes of a quaker, whom the ſpirit moved to re- " vile me with great bitterneſs and devotion: but what " I value myſelf moſtly for, is this here purchaſe, a gold " ſnuff-box, my girl, with a picture on the inſide of the " lid, which I untied out of the tail of a pretty lady's " ſmock." Here, as the devil would have it, the ped- lar ſnored ſo loud, that the highwayman, ſnatching his piſtols, ſtarted up, crying, " Hell and d—n—n! I am " betrayed:—who's that in the next room?" Mrs Betty told him, he need not be uneaſy, there were only three poor wearied travellers, who miſſing the road, had taken up their lodging in the houſe, and were aſleep long ago. " Travellers! ſays he,—ſpies, you b—ch! but no matter " I'll ſend them all to hell in an inſtant." He accordingly ran towards our door; when his ſweetheart interpoſing, aſ- ſured him, there was only a couple of poor young Scotch- men, who were too raw and ignorant to give him the leaſt cauſe of ſuſpicion; and the third was a preſbyterian ped- lar of the ſame nation, who had often lodged in the houſe before. This declaration ſatisfied the thief, who ſwore he was glad there was a pedlar, for he wanted ſome linen. Then, in a joyful manner he put about the glaſs, ming- ling his diſcourſe to Betty with careſſes and familiarities, that ſpoke him very happy in his amours. During that part of the converſation which regarded us, Strap had crept under the bed, where he lay in the agonies of fear; for, (it was with great ſeriouſly I perſuaded him our danger was over, and prevailed on him to wake the ped-

lar.

lar, and inform him of what he had ſeen and heard. This itinerant merchant no ſooner felt ſomebody ſhaking him by the ſhoulder, than he ſtarted up, calling as loud as he could, "Thieves, thieves! Lord have mercy on us." And Riſle, alarmed at this exclamation, jumped up, cocked one of his piſtols, and turned towards the door, to kill the firſt man that ſhould enter; for he verily believed himſelf beſet; when his Dulcinea, after an immoderate fit of laughter, perſuaded him, that the poor pedlar, dreaming of thieves, had only cried out in his ſleep. Meanwhile, my comrade had undeceived my fellow-lodger, and informed him of his reaſon for diſturbing him; upon which, getting up ſoftly, he peeped through the hole, and was ſo terrified with what he ſaw, that falling down on his bare knees, he put up a long petition to heaven, to deliver him from the hands of that ruffian, and promiſed never to defraud a cuſtomer for the future of the value of a pin's point, provided he might be reſcued from the preſent danger. Whether or not his diſburthening his conſcience afforded him any eaſe, I know not; but he ſlipt into bed again, and lay very quiet, until the robber and his miſtreſs were aſleep, and ſnored in concert, then, riſing ſoftly, he untied a rope that was round his pack, which making faſt to one end of it, he opened the window with as little noiſe as poſſible, and lowered his goods into the yard with great dexterity; then he moved gently to our bed-ſide, and bade us farewell, telling us, that as we ran no riſk, we might take our reſt with great confidence, and in the morning aſſure the landlord that we knew nothing of his eſcape: and, laſtly, ſhaking us by the hands, and wiſhing us all manner of ſucceſs, he let himſelf drop from the window without any danger, for the ground was not above a yard from his feet as he hung on the outſide. Although I did not think proper to accompany him in his flight, I was not at all free from apprehenſion, when I reflected on what might be the effect of the highwayman's diſappointment; as he certainly intended to make free with the pedlar's ware. Neither was my companion at more eaſe in his mind, but, on the contrary, ſo poſſeſſed with the dreadful idea of Riſle, that he ſolicited me ſtrongly to follow

our countryman's example, and ſo elude the fatal reſentment of that terrible adventurer, who would certainly wreak his vengeance on us, as accomplices of the pedlar's elopement. But I repreſented to him the danger of giving Rifle cauſe to think we knew his profeſſion, and ſuggeſted, that if ever he ſhould meet us again on the road, he would look upon us as dangerous acquaintance, and find it his intereſt to put us out of the way. I told him withal, my confidence in Betty's good nature, in which he acquieſced; and, during the remaining part of the night, we concerted a proper method of behaviour, to render us unſuſpected in the morning.

It was no ſooner day, than Betty, entering our chamber, and perceiving our window open, cried out, "Odds "bobs! ſure you Scotchmen muſt have hot conſtitutions, "to lie all night with the window open, in ſuch cold "weather." I feigned to ſtart out of my ſleep, and withdrawing the curtain, called, "What's the matter?" When ſhe ſhewed me, I affected ſurpriſe, and ſaid, "Bleſs "me! the window was ſhut when we went to bed."— "I'll be hanged, ſaid ſhe, if Sawney Waddle the pedlar "has not got up in a dream and done it, for I heard "him very obſtropulous in his ſleep:—Sure I put a cham-"ber-pot under his bed." With theſe words, ſhe advanced to the bed in which he lay, and finding the ſheets cold, exclaimed, "Good lack a daiſy! the rogue is fled!" "Fled, (cried I, with feigned amazement)—God forbid! "—Sure he has not robbed us." Then ſpringing up, I laid hold of my breeches, and emptied all my looſe money into my hand, which, having reckoned, I ſaid, Heaven be praiſed our money is all ſafe:—Strap look to the knapſack. He did ſo, and found all was right. Upon which we aſked with ſeeming concern, if he had ſtole nothing belonging to the houſe? "No, no, replied ſhe, he has ſtole nothing "but his reckoning," which, it ſeems, this pious pedlar had forgot to diſcharge in the midſt of his devotion. Betty, after a moment's pauſe, withdrew, and immediately we could hear her waken Rifle, who no ſooner heard of Waddle's flight, than he jumped out of bed, and dreſſed, venting a thouſand execrations, and vowing to murder the pedlar if ever he ſhould ſet eyes on him again; "for,

" (ſaid he,) the ſcoundrel has by this time raiſed the hue " and cry againſt me." Having dreſſed himſelf in a hurry, he mounted his horſe, and for that time rid us of his company, and a thouſand fears that were the conſequence of it. While we were at breakfaſt, Betty endeavoured, by all the cunning ſhe was miſtreſs of, to learn whether or not we ſuſpected our fellow-lodger, whom we ſaw take horſe; but as we were on our guard, we anſwered her ſly queſtions with a ſimplicity ſhe could not diſtruſt; when, all of a ſudden, we heard the trampling of a horſe's feet at the door. This noiſe alarmed Strap ſo much, whoſe imagination was wholly engroſſed by the image of Riſle, that with a countenance as pale as milk, he cried, " O " Lord! there's the highwayman returned!" Our landlady ſtaring at theſe words, ſaid, " What highwayman, " young man!—Do you think any highwaymen harbour " here?" Though I was very much diſconcerted at this piece of indiſcretion in Strap, I had preſence of mind enough to tell her, we had met a horſeman the day before, whom Strap had fooliſhly ſuppoſed to be a highwayman, becauſe he rode with piſtols; and that he had been terrified at the ſound of a horſe's feet ever ſince. She forced a ſmile at the ignorance and timidity of my comrade; but I could perceive (not without great concern) that this account was not at all ſatisfactory to her.

CHAP. IX.

We proceed on our journey—are overtaken by an highwayman, who fires at Strap; *is prevented from ſhooting me by a company of horſemen, who ride in purſuit of him.*—Strap *is put to bed at an inn—adventures at that inn.*

AFTER having paid our ſcore, and taken leave of our hoſteſs, who embraced me tenderly at parting, we proceeded on our journey, bleſſing ourſelves that we had come off ſo well. We had not walked above five miles, when we obſerved a man on horſeback galloping after us, whom we in a ſhort time recognized to be no other than this formidable hero who had already given us ſo much vexa-

vexation.—He ſtopped hard by me, and aſked if I knew who he was? My aſtoniſhment had diſconcerted me ſo much, that I did not hear his queſtion, which he repeated with a volley of oaths and threats; but I remained as mute as before. Strap ſeeing my diſcompoſure, fell upon his knees in the mud, uttering with a lamentable voice theſe words: "For Chriſt's ſake, have mercy upon "us, Mr Rifle, we know you very well,"—"O ho, cried the thief, you do!—but you never ſhall be evidence "againſt me in this world, you dog!"—So ſaying, he drew a piſtol, and fired at the unfortunate ſhaver, who fell flat upon the ground without ſpeaking one word.—My comrade's fate, and my own ſituation, rivetted me to the place where I ſtood, deprived of all ſenſe and reflection; ſo that I did not make the leaſt attempt either to run away, or deprecate the wrath of this barbarian, who ſnapped a ſecond piſtol at me; but before he had time to prime again, perceiving a company of horſemen coming up, he rode off, and left me ſtanding motionleſs as a ſtatue, in which poſture I was found by thoſe whoſe appearance had ſaved my life. This company conſiſted of three men in livery, well armed, with an officer, who (as I afterwards learned) was the perſon from whom Rifle had taken the pocket-piſtols the day before; and who, making known his misfortune to a nobleman he met on the road, and aſſuring him his non-reſiſtance was altogether owing to his conſideration for the ladies in the coach, procured the aſſiſtance of his Lordſhip's ſervants to go in queſt of the plunderer. This holiday captain ſcampered up to me with great addreſs, and aſked who fired the piſtol which he had heard. As I had not yet recovered my reaſon, he, before I could anſwer, obſerved a body lying on the ground; at which ſight his colour changed, and he pronounced with a faultering tongue, "Gentlemen, "here's murder committed;—Let us alight." "No, no, "ſaid one of his followers, let us rather purſue the mur-"derer.—Which way went he, young man?" By this time I had recollected myſelf ſo far as to tell them he could not be a quarter of a mile before; and to beg one of them to aſſiſt me in conveying the corpſe of my friend to the next houſe, in order to its being interred. The

captain, foreſeeing that in caſe he ſhould purſue, he muſt ſoon come to action, began to curb his horſe, and gave him the ſpur at the ſame time, which treatment making the creature rear up and ſnort, he called out, his horſe was frightened and would not proceed; at the ſame time wheeling him round and round, ſtroaking his neck, whiſtling and wheedling him with "Sirrah, ſirrah—gently, "gently, &c." "Zounds! (cried one of the ſervants) "ſure my Lord's Sorrel is not reſty!" With theſe words, he beſtowed a laſh on his buttocks, and Sorrel diſdaining the rein, ſprung forward with the captain at a pace that would have ſoon brought him up with the robber, had not the girth (happily for him) given way, by which means he landed in the dirt; and two of his attendants continued their purſuit, without minding his ſituation.—Meanwhile, one of the three who remained at my deſire, turning the body of Strap, in order to ſee the wound which had killed him, found him ſtill warm and breathing; upon which I immediately let him blood, and ſaw him, with inexpreſſible joy, recover; he having received no other wound than what his fear had inflicted.—Having raiſed him up upon his legs, we walked together to an inn, about half a mile from the place, where Strap, who was not quite recovered, went to bed; and in a little time the third ſervant returned with the captain's horſe and furniture, leaving him to crawl after as well as he could. This gentleman of the ſword, upon his arrival, complained grievouſly of the bruiſe occaſioned by his fall; and on the recommendation of the ſervant, who warranted my ability, I was employed to bleed him; for which ſervice he rewarded me with half a crown.

The time between this event and dinner, I paſſed in obſerving a game at cards between two farmers, an exciſeman, and a young fellow in a ruſty gown and caſſock, who, as I afterwards underſtood, was curate of a neighbouring pariſh. It was eaſy to perceive that the match was not equal; and that the two farmers who were partners, had to do with a couple of ſharpers, who ſtript them of all their caſh in a very ſhort time. But what ſurpriſed me very much, was to hear this clergyman reply to one of the countrymen who ſeemed to ſuſpect foul play, in

theſe

theſe words: "D—n me, friend, d'ye queſtion my ho-
"nour?" I did not at all wonder to find a cheat in canonicals, this being a character frequent in my own country; but I was ſcandalized at the indecency of his behaviour, which appeared in the oaths he ſwore, and the bawdy ſongs which he ſung. At laſt, to make amends, in ſome ſort, for the damage he had done to the unwary boors, he pulled out a fiddle from the lining of his gown, and promiſing to treat them at dinner, began to play moſt melodiouſly, ſinging in concert all the while. This good humour of the parſon inſpired the company with ſo much glee, that the farmers ſoon forgot their loſſes, and all preſent went to dancing in the yard. While we were agreeably amuſed in this manner, our muſician ſpying a horſeman riding towards the inn, ſtopt all of a ſudden, crying out, "Gad ſo! gentlemen, I beg your pardon, there's "our dog of a doctor coming into the inn." He immediately concealed his inſtrument, and ran towards the gate, where he took hold of the vicar's bridle, and helped him off, inquiring very cordially into the ſtate of his health. This roſy ſon of the church (who might be about the age of fifty) having alighted, and entruſted the curate with his horſe, ſtalked with great ſolemnity into the kitchen, where ſitting down by the fire, he called for a bottle of ale, and a pipe; ſcarce deigning an anſwer to the ſubmiſſive queſtions of thoſe who inquired about the welfare of his family. While he indulged himſelf in this ſtate, amidſt a profound ſilence, the curate approaching him with great reverence, aſked if he would not be pleaſed to honour us with his company at dinner? To which interrogation he anſwered in the negative, ſaying, he had been to viſit ſquire Bumpkin, who had drank himſelf into a high fever at the laſt aſſizes; and that he had, on leaving his own houſe, told Betty he ſhould dine at home. Accordingly, when he had made an end of his bottle and pipe, he roſe and moved with prelatical dignity to the door, where his journeyman ſtood ready with his nag. He had no ſooner mounted, than the facetious curate, coming into the kitchen, held forth in this manner: "There the old raſcal "goes, and the d—l go with him:—you ſee how the world "wags, gentlemen. By gad, this rogue of a vicar does
"no:

" not deſerve to live; and yet he has two livings worth " 400 *l. per annum*, while poor I am fain to do all his " drudgery, and ride twenty miles every Sunday to " preach, for what! why truly, for 20 *l.* a-year. I ſcorn " to boaſt of my own qualifications, but—compariſons " are odious.—I ſhould be glad to know how this ſwag-" bellied doctor deſerves to be more at eaſe than me. He " can loll in his elbow-chair at home, indulge himſelf in " the beſt of victuals and wine, and enjoy the converſa-" tion of Betty his houſe-keeper. You underſtand me, " gentlemen. Betty is the doctor's poor kinſwoman, " and a pretty girl ſhe is; but no matter for that—ay, " and a dutiful girl to her parents, whom ſhe viſits very " regularly every year, though I muſt own I could never " learn in what country they live.—My ſervice t'ye, gen-" tlemen." By this time dinner being ready, I waked my companion, and we ate altogether with great chear-fulneſs. When our meal was ended, and every man's ſhare of the reckoning adjuſted, the curate went out on pretence of ſome neceſſary occaſion, and mounting his horſe, left the two farmers to ſatisfy the hoſt in the beſt manner they could.—We were no ſooner informed of this piece of fineſſe, than the exciſeman, who had been ſilent hitherto, began to open with a malicious grin: " Ay, ay, this is an old trick of Shuffle—I could not help ſmiling " when he talked of treating.—You muſt know, this " is a very curious fellow—He picked up ſome ſcraps " of learning while he ſerved young Lord Trifle at the " univerſity. But what he moſt excels in is pimping.—" No man knows his talents better than I, for I was *va-" let de chambre* to ſquire Tattle, an intimate companion " of Shuffle's Lord.——He got himſelf into a ſcrape, " by pawning ſome of his Lordſhip's cloaths, on which " account he was turned away; but as he was acquaint-" ed with ſome particular circumſtances of my lord's con-" duct, he did not care to exaſperate him too much, and " ſo made intereſt for his receiving orders, and afterwards " recommended him to the curacy which he now enjoys. " However, the fellow cannot be too much admired for " his dexterity in making a comfortable livelihood, in " ſpite of ſuch a ſmall allowance. You hear he plays a

" good

" good ſtick, and is really diverting company:—thoſe " qualifications make him agreeable where-ever he goes; " and as for playing at cards, there is not a man within " three counties a match for him:—the truth is, he is a " damnable cheat, and can ſhift a card with ſuch addreſs, " that it is impoſſible to diſcover him." Here he was interrupted by one of the farmers, who aſked, why he had not juſtice enough to acquaint them with theſe particulars before they engaged in play? The exciſeman replied without any heſitation, that it was none of his buſineſs to intermeddle between man and man; beſides, he did not know they were ignorant of Shuffle's character, which was notorious to the whole country. This did not ſatisfy the other, who taxed him with abetting and aſſiſting the curate's knavery, and inſiſted on having his ſhare of the winnings returned; this demand the exciſeman as poſitively refuſed, affirming, that whatever ſlights Shuffle might practiſe on other occaſions, he was very certain that he had play'd on the ſquare with them, and would anſwer it before any bench in Chriſtendom; ſo ſaying, he got up, and having paid his reckoning, ſneaked off. The landlord, thruſting his neck into the paſſage, to ſee if he was gone, ſhook his head, ſaying, " Ah! Lord help us! if " every ſinner was to have his deſerts.—Well, we victuallers muſt not diſoblige the exciſemen.—But I know " what:—If parſon Shuffle and he were weighed toge- " ther, a ſtraw thrown into either ſcale would make the " balance kick the beam.—But, maſters, this is under " the roſe," continued Boniface with a whiſper.

CHAP. X.

The highwayman is taken—we are detained as evidences againſt him—proceed to the next village—he eſcapes—we arrive at another inn, where we get to bed—in the night we are awaked by a dreadful adventure—next night we lodge at the houſe of a ſchoolmaſter—our treatment there.

STRAP and I were about to depart on our journey, when we perceived a crowd on the road, coming to-

ward

wards us, ſhouting and hallooing all the way. As it approached, we could diſcern a man on horſeback in the middle, with his hands tied behind him, whom we ſoon knew to be Rifle. This highwayman not being ſo well mounted as the two ſervants who went in purſuit of him, was ſoon overtaken, and after having diſcharged his piſtols, made priſoner without any further oppoſition. They were carrying him in triumph, amidſt the acclamations of the country people to a juſtice of peace in a neighbouring village, but ſtopt at our inn to join their companion and take refreſhment. When Rifle was diſmounted, and placed in the yard, within a circle of peaſants armed with pitchforks, I was amazed to ſee what a pitiful dejected fellow he now appeared, who had but a few hours before filled me with ſuch terror and confuſion. My companion was ſo much encouraged by this alteration in his appearance, that, going up to the thief, he preſented his clenched fiſts to his noſe, and declared he would either cudgel or box with the priſoner for a guinea, which he immediately produced, and began to ſtrip—but was diſſuaded from this adventure by me; who repreſented to him the folly of the undertaking, as Rifle was now in the hands of juſtice, which would, no doubt, give us all ſatisfaction enough. But what made me repent of our impertinent curioſity, was our being detained by the captors as evidence againſt him, when we were juſt going to ſet forward. However, there was no remedy; we were obliged to comply, and accordingly joined in the cavalcade, which luckily took the ſame road that we had propoſed to follow. About the twilight, we arrived at the place of our deſtination; but, as the juſtice was gone to viſit a gentleman in the country, with whom (we underſtood) he would probably ſtay all night, the robber was confined in an empty garret three ſtories high, from which it ſeemed impoſſible for him to eſcape: this, nevertheleſs, was the caſe; for next morning, when they went up ſtairs to bring him before the juſtice, the bird was flown, having got out of the window upon the roof, from whence he continued his rout along the tops of the adjoining houſes, and entered another garret-window, where he ſkulked, until the family were aſleep, at which time

time he ventured down ſtairs, and let himſelf out by the ſtreet-door, which was found open. This event was a great diſappointment to thoſe that apprehended him, who were flufhed with hopes of the reward; but gave me great joy, as I was permitted now to continue my journey without any further moleſtation. Reſolving to make up for the ſmall progreſs we had hitherto made, we this day travelled with great vigour, and before night reached a market town twenty miles from the place from whence we ſet out in the morning, without meeting any adventure worth notice. Here having taken up our lodging at an inn, I found myſelf ſo fatigued, that I began to deſpair of performing our journey on foot, and deſired Strap to inquire if there were any waggon, return-horſes, or other cheap carriage in this place, to depart for London next day. He was informed, that the waggon from Newcaſtle to London had halted here two nights ago, and that it would be an eaſy matter to overtake it, if not the next day, at fartheſt the day after the next. This piece of news gave us ſome ſatisfaction, and after having made a hearty ſupper on haſhed mutton, we were ſhewn to our room, which contained two beds, the one allotted for us, and the other for a very honeſt gentleman, who, we were told, was then drinking below. Though we could have very well diſpenſed with his company, we were glad to ſubmit to this diſpoſition, as there was not another bed empty in the houſe; and accordingly went to reſt, after having ſecured our baggage under the bolſter. About two or three o'clock in the morning, I was waked out of a very profound ſleep, by a dreadful noiſe in the chamber, which did not fail to throw me into an agony of conſternation, when I heard theſe words pronounced with a terrible voice:—"Blood and wounds! "run the halbert into the guts of him that's next you, "and I'll blow the other's brains out preſently." This dreadful ſalutation had no ſooner reached the ears of Strap, than ſtarting out of bed, he ran againſt ſomebody in the dark, and overturned him in an inſtant: at the ſame time bawling out, "Fire! murder! fire!" a cry which in a moment alarmed the whole houſe, and filled our chamber with a croud of naked people. When lights were brought,

the occaſion of all this diſturbance ſoon appeared; which was no other than our fellow-lodger, whom we found lying on the floor ſcratching his head, with a look teſtifying the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, at the concourſe of apparitions that ſurrounded him. This honeſt gentleman was, it ſeems, a recruiting ſerjeant, who having lifted two country-fellows over night, dreamed they had mutinied, and threatened to murder him and the drummer who was along with him. This made ſuch an impreſſion on his imagination, that he got up in his ſleep, and expreſſed himſelf as above. When our apprehenſion of danger vaniſhed, the company beheld one another with great ſurpriſe and mirth. But what attracted the notice of every one, was our landlady with nothing on her but her ſhift and a large pair of buckſkin breeches with the backſide before, which ſhe had ſlipt on in the hurry, and her huſband with her petticoat about his ſhoulders: one had wrapt himſelf in a blanket, another was covered with a ſheet; and the drummer, who had given his only ſhirt to be waſhed, appeared in *cuerpo* with the bolſter rolled about his middle. When this affair was diſcuſſed, every body retired to his own apartment, the ſerjeant ſlipt into bed, and my companion and I ſlept without any further diſturbance till morning, when we got up, went to breakfaſt, paid our reckoning, and ſet forward in expectation of overtaking the waggon; in which hope, however, we were diſappointed for that day. As we exerted ourſelves more than uſual, I found myſelf quite ſpent with fatigue, when we entered a ſmall village in the twilight. We inquired for a public-houſe, and were directed to one of a very ſorry appearance. At our entrance the landlord, who ſeemed to be a venerable old man, with long gray hair, roſe from a table, placed by a large fire in a very neat paved kitchen, and with a chearful countenance accoſted us in theſe words: "*Salvete Pueri—ingredimini.*" I was not a little pleaſed to hear our hoſt ſpeak Latin, becauſe I was in hope of recommending myſelf to him by my knowledge in that language; I therefore anſwered without heſitation,—*Diſſolve frigus, ligna ſuper foco—large reponens.* I had no ſooner pronounced theſe words, than the old gentleman running towards me, ſhook me by the hand,

hand, crying,—" *Fili mi delectiſſime! unde venis?—a ſu-*
" *peris, ni fallor.*" In ſhort, finding we were both read in the claſſics, he did not know how to teſtify his regard enough; but ordered his daughter, a jolly roſy-cheeked damſel, who was his ſole domeſtic, to bring us a bottle of his *quadrimum*—repeating from Horace at the ſame time, " *Deprome quadrimum Sabinâ, O Thaliarche, merum diotâ.*" This *quadrimum* was excellent ale of his own brewing, of which he told us he had always an *amphora* four years old, for the uſe of himſelf and friends. In the courſe of our converſation, which was interlarded with ſcraps of Latin, we underſtood that this facetious perſon was a ſchool-maſter, whoſe income being ſmall, he was fain to keep a glaſs of good liquor for the entertainment of paſſengers, by which he made ſhift to make the two ends of the year meet. " I am this day, ſaid he, the happieſt " old fellow in his majeſty's dominions.—My wife, reſt " her ſoul, is in heaven. My daughter is to be married " next week;—but the two chief pleaſures of my life " are theſe (pointing to the bottle and a large edition of " Horace that lay on the table.) I am old, 'tis true,— " what then? the more reaſon I ſhould enjoy the ſmall " ſhare of life that remains, as my friend Flaccus advi- " ſes:—*Tu ne quæſieris ſcire (nefas) quem mihi, quem* " *tibi finem dii dederint.—Carpe diem quam minimum* " *credula poſtero.*" As he was very inquiſitive about our affairs, we made no ſcruple of acquainting him with our ſituation, which, when he had learned, he enriched us with advices how to behave in the world, telling us that he was no ſtranger to the deceits of mankind. In the mean time, he ordered his daughter to lay a fowl to the fire for ſupper, for he was reſolved this night to regale his friends—*permittens divis cætera.* While our entertainment was preparing, our hoſt recounted the adventures of his own life, which, as they contained nothing remarkable, I forbear to rehearſe. When we had fared ſumptuouſly, and drank ſeveral bottles of his *quadrimum*, I expreſſed a deſire of going to reſt, which was with ſome difficulty complied with, after he had informed us that we ſhould overtake the waggon by noon next day, and that there was room enough in it for half a dozen,

for there were only four paſſengers as yet in that conve-nience. Before my comrade and I fell aſleep, we had ſome converſation about the good humour of our land-lord, which gave Strap ſuch an idea of his benevolence, that he poſitively believed we ſhould pay nothing for our lodging and entertainment. " Don't you obſerve (ſaid " he) that he has conceived a particular affection for us, " —nay, even treated us at ſupper with extraordinary " fare, which, to be ſure, we ſhould not of ourſelves have " called for?" I was partly of Strap's opinion; but the experience I had of the world made me ſuſpend my be-lief till the morning, when getting up betimes, we break-faſted with our hoſt and his daughter on haſty-pudding and ale, and deſired to know what we had to pay. " Bid-" dy will let you know, gentlemen (ſaid he,) for I never " mind theſe matters:—Money-matters are beneath the " concern of one who lives upon the Horatian plan:— " *Creſcentem ſequitur cura pecuniam.*" Meanwhile Biddy having conſulted a ſlate that hung in the corner, told us, our reckoning came to 8*s.* 7*d.* " Eight ſhillings and " ſevenpence! cried Strap, it is impoſſible—you muſt be " miſtaken, young woman." " Reckon again, child, " (ſays her father, very deliberately,) perhaps you have " miſcounted." " No indeed, father (replied ſhe,) I know " my buſineſs better." I could contain my indignation no longer, but ſaid it was an unconſcionable bill, and de-manded to know the particulars; upon which the old man got up, muttering, " Ay, ay, let us ſee the particu-" lars,—that's but reaſonable." And taking pen, ink, and paper, wrote the following *Items:*

	s.	*d.*
To bread and beer	0	6
To a fowl and ſauſages . . .	2	6
To four bottles *quadrim.* . . .	2	0
To fire and tobacco	0	7
To lodging	2	0
To breakfaſt	1	0
	8	7

As he had not the appearance of a common publican, and had raiſed a ſort of veneration in me by his demeanour the preceding night, it was not in my power to upbraid him

him as he deſerved; therefore I contented myſelf with ſaying, I was ſure he did not learn to be an extortioner from Horace. He anſwered, "I was but a young man, "and did not know the world, or I would not tax him "with extortion, whoſe only aim was to live *contentus* "*parvo*, and keep off *importuna pauperies*." My fellow-traveller could not ſo eaſily put up with this impoſition; but ſwore he ſhould either take one third of the money, or go without. While we were engaged in this diſpute, I perceived the daughter go out, and conjecturing the occaſion, immediately paid the exorbitant demand, which was no ſooner done, than Biddy returned with two ſtout fellows who came in on pretence of taking their morning-draught; but in reality to frighten us into compliance. Juſt as we departed, Strap, who was half diſtracted on account of this piece of expence, went up to the ſchool-maſter, and grinning in his face, pronounced with great emphaſis; "*Semper avarus eget*,"—to which the pedant replied, with a malicious ſmile; "*Animum rege, qui, niſi* "*paret, imperat*."

CHAP. XI.

We deſcry the waggon—get into it—arrive at an inn—our fellow-travellers deſcribed—a miſtake is committed by Strap, *which produces ſtrange things.*

WE travelled half a mile without exchanging one word; my thoughts being engroſſed by the knavery of the world, to which I muſt be daily expoſed; and the contemplation on my finances, which began ſenſibly to diminiſh. At length, Strap, who could hold no longer, addreſſed me thus:—"Well, fools and their money are ſoon "parted.—If my advice had been taken, that old ſkin-"flint ſhould have been damn'd before he had got more "than the third of his demand.—'Tis a ſure ſign you "came eaſily by your money, when you ſquander it away "in this manner.—Ah! God help you, how many brift-"ly beards muſt I have mowed before I earned four ſhil-"lings and threepence halfpenny, which is all thrown to "the dogs?—How many days have I ſat weaving hair,

"till

" till my toes were numbed by the cold, my fingers " cramp'd, and my noſe as blue as the ſign of the peri- " wig that hung over the door?—What the devil was " you afraid of?—I would have engaged to box with any " one of thoſe fellows who came in, for a guinea.—I'm " ſure I have beat ſtouter men than either of them."—And, indeed, my companion would have fought any body, when his life was in no danger; but he had a mortal averſion to fire-arms, and all inſtruments of death. In order to appeaſe him, I aſſured him no part of this extraordinary expence ſhould fall upon his ſhoulders; at which declaration he was affronted, and told me, he would have me to know, that although he was a poor barber's boy, yet he had a ſoul to ſpend his money with the beſt ſquire in the land. Having walked all day at a great pace, without halting for a refreſhment, we deſcried, towards the evening, to our inexpreſſible joy, the waggon about a quarter of a mile before us; and by that time we reached it, were both of us ſo weary, that I verily believe it would have been impracticable for us to have walked one mile farther. We therefore bargained with the driver, whoſe name was Joey, to give us a caſt to the next ſtage for a ſhilling; at which place we ſhould meet the maſter of the waggon, with whom we might agree for the reſt of the journey.

Accordingly, the convenience ſtopt, and Joey having placed the ladder, Strap (being loaded with our baggage) mounted firſt; but juſt as he was getting in, a tremendous voice aſſailed his ears in theſe words: " God's " fury! there ſhall no paſſengers come here." The poor ſhaver was ſo diſconcerted at this exclamation, which both he and I imagined proceeded from the mouth of a giant, that he deſcended with great velocity, and a countenance as white as paper. Joey perceiving our aſtoniſhment, called with an arch ſneer, " Waunds, captain, " whay woan't yau ſooffer the poor waggoneer to meake " a penny?—Coom, coom, young man, get oop, get oop, " —never moind the captain.—I'ſe not afear'd of the " captain." This was not encouragement ſufficient to Strap, who could not be prevailed upon to venture up again; upon which I attempted, though not without a quaking

quaking heart, when I heard the ſame voice muttering like diſtant thunder: "Hell and the devil confound me "if I don't make you ſmart for this!"—However, I crept in, and by accident got an empty place in the ſtraw, which I immediately took poſſeſſion of, without being able to diſcern the faces of my fellow-travellers in the dark. Strap following with the knapſack on his back, chanced to take the other ſide, and by a jolt of the carriage, pitched directly upon the ſtomach of the captain, who bellowed out in the moſt dreadful manner: "Blood "and thunder! where's my ſword?" At theſe words, my frighted comrade ſtarted up, and at one ſpring bounced againſt me with ſuch force, that I thought he was the ſuppoſed ſon of Anak, who intended to preſs me to death. In the mean time, a female voice cried, "Bleſs "me! what is the matter, my dear?" "The matter," replied the captain, "damn my blood! my guts are "ſqueezed into a pancake, by that Scotchman's hump." Strap trembling all the while at my back, aſked him pardon, and laid the blame of what had happened upon the jolting of the waggon; and the woman who ſpoke before, went on: "Ay, ay, my dear, it is our own fault, we may "thank ourſelves for all the inconveniences we meet "with.—I thank God, I never travelled ſo before:—I "am ſure if my lady or Sir John was to know where "we are, they would not ſleep this night for vexation.— "I wiſh to God we had writ for the chariot:—I know "we ſhall never be forgiven." "Come, come, my dear, "(replied the captain,) it don't ſignify fretting now,—we "ſhall laugh it over as a frolic.—I hope you will not ſuffer in your health.—I ſhall make my lord very merry "with our adventures in the *Diligence*." This diſcourſe gave me ſuch a high notion of the captain and his lady, that I durſt not venture to join in the converſation; but immediately after, another female voice began; "Some "people give themſelves a great many needleſs airs; better "folks than any here have travelled in waggons before now. "Some of us have rode in coaches and chariots, with three "footmen behind them, without making ſo much fuſs a-"bout it.—What then! we are now all upon a footing, "therefore let us be ſociable and merry.—What do you

"ſay

" ſay, Iſaac? Is not this a good motion, you doating " rogue?—Speak, you old *cent. per cent.* fornicator.— " What deſperate debt are you thinking of? What mort- " gage are you planning?—Well, Iſaac, poſitively you ſhall " never gain my favour till you turn over a new leaf; grow " honeſt, and live like a gentleman.—In the mean time, " give me a kiſs, you old fumbler."—Theſe words, accompanied with a hearty ſmack, enlivened the perſon to whom they were addreſſed, to ſuch a degree, that he cried in tranſport, tho' with a faultering voice, " Ah! you " wanton baggage—upon my credit you are a waggiſh girl, " he,--he,--he." This laugh introduced a fit of coughing, which almoſt ſuffocated the poor uſurer (ſuch we afterwards found was the profeſſion of this our fellow-traveller.) About this time I fell aſleep, and enjoyed a comfortable nap till ſuch time as we arrived at the inn where we put up. Here, having alighted from the waggon, I had an opportunity of viewing the paſſengers, in order, as they entered. The firſt who appeared was a briſk airy girl, about twenty years old, with a ſilver-laced hat on her head inſtead of a cap, a blue ſtuff riding ſuit trimmed with ſilver, very much tarniſhed, and a whip in her hand. After her, came limping, an old man with a worſted night-cap buttoned under his chin, and a broad brimmed hat ſlouched over it, an old ruſty blue cloak tied about his neck, under which appeared a brown ſurtout, that covered a threadbare coat and waiſtcoat, and, as we afterwards diſcerned, a dirty flannel-jacket:—His eyes were hollow, bleared, and gummy; his face was ſhrivelled into a thouſand wrinkles, his gums were deſtitute of teeth, his noſe ſharp and drooping, his chin peeked and prominent, ſo that when he mumped or ſpoke, they approached one another like a pair of nut-crackers; he ſupported himſelf on an ivory-headed cane, and his whole figure was a juſt emblem of winter, famine, and avarice. But how was I ſurpriſed, when I beheld the formidable captain in the ſhape of a little thin creature, about the age of forty, with a long withered viſage, very much reſembling that of a baboon, through the upper part of which, two little grey eyes peeped: He wore his own hair in a queue that reached to his rump, which immoderate length, I ſup-

poſe

poſe, was the occaſion of a baldneſs that appeared on the crown of his head, when he deigned to take off his hat, which was very much of the ſize and cock of Piſtol's. Having laid aſide his great coat, I could not help admiring the extraordinary make of this man of war: he was about five feet and three inches high, ſixteen inches of which went to his face and long ſcraggy neck: his thighs were about ſix inches in length, his legs reſembling ſpindles or drum-ſticks, two feet and a half, and his body, which put me in mind of extenſion without ſubſtance, engroſſed the remainder;—ſo that, on the whole, he appeared like a ſpider or graſhopper erect,—and was almoſt a *vox et preterea nihil*. His dreſs conſiſted of a frock of what is called bear ſkin, the ſkirts of which were about half a foot long, an Huſſar waiſtcoat, ſcarlet breeches reaching half way down his thigh, worſted ſtockings rolled up almoſt to his groin, and ſhoes with wooden heels at leaſt two inches high; he carried a ſword very near as long as himſelf in one hand, and with the other conducted his lady, who ſeemed to be a woman of his own age, and ſtill retained ſome remains of an agreeable perſon; but ſo ridiculouſly affected, that, had I not been a novice in the world, I might have eaſily perceived in her the deplorable vanity and ſecond-hand airs of a lady's woman. We were all aſſembled in the kitchen, when Captain Weazel (for that was his name) deſired a room with a fire for himſelf and ſpouſe; and told the landlord, they would ſup by themſelves. The innkeeper replied, that he could not afford them a room by themſelves; and as for ſupping, he had prepared victuals for the paſſengers in the waggon, without reſpect of perſons; but if he could prevail on the reſt to let him have his choice in a ſeparate manner, he ſhould be very well pleaſed. This was no ſooner ſaid, than all of us declared againſt the propoſal, and Miſs Jenny (our other female paſſenger) obſerved, that if Captain Weazel and his lady had a mind to ſup by themſelves, they might wait until we ſhould have done. At this hint the captain put on a martial frown, and looked very big, without ſpeaking; while his yokefellow, with a diſdainful toſs of her noſe, muttered ſomething about "Creatures!"—which Miſs

Jenny overhearing, ſtept up to her, ſaying, " None of " your names, good Mrs Abigail :—creature, quotha !— " I'll aſſure you ;—no ſuch creature as you neither—no " ten pound ſneaker—no quality coupler." Here the captain interpoſed, with a " Damme, madam, what d'ye " mean by that ?" " Damn you, Sir, who are you ? " (replied Miſs Jenny) ; who made you a captain, you pi- " tiful, trencher-ſcraping, pimping, curler ?—'Sdeath ! " the army is come to a fine paſs, when ſuch fellows as " you get commiſſions.—What, I ſuppoſe you think I " don't know you ?—Agad, you and your help-mate are " well met,—a caſt off miſtreſs, and a bald *valet de cham-* " *bre* are well yoked together." " Blood and wounds ! " (cried Weazel) d'ye queſtion the honour of my wife, " madam ?—Hell and damnation ! No man in England " durſt ſay ſo much :—I would flea him, carbonado him ! " Fury and deſtruction ! I would have his liver for my " ſupper." So ſaying, he drew his ſword and flouriſhed with it, to the great terror of Strap ; while Miſs Jenny, ſnapping her fingers, told him, ſhe did not value his reſentment a louſe. In the midſt of this quarrel, the maſter of the waggon alighted, who underſtanding the cauſe of the diſturbance, and fearing the captain and his lady would take umbrage, and leave his carriage, was at great pains to have every thing made up, which he at laſt accompliſhed, and we ſat down to ſupper all together. At bed-time we were ſhew'd to our apartments : the old uſurer, Strap and I to one room ; the captain, his wife, and Miſs Jenny to another. About midnight, my companion's bowels being diſordered, he got up, in order to go backward ; but in his return, miſtaking one door for another, entered Weazel's chamber, and without any heſitation went to bed to his wife, who was faſt aſleep ; the captain being at another end of the room groping for ſome empty veſſel, in lieu of his own chamber pot, which was leaky. As he did not perceive Strap coming in, he went towards his own bed, after having found a convenience ; but no ſooner did he feel a rough head, covered with a cotton night-cap, than it came into his mind, that he had miſtaken Miſs Jenny's bed inſtead of his own, and that the head he felt was that of

T. Rowlandson del.t & Fec.

Mutual defiance of Capt. Weazel and Miss Jenny Hamper

ſome gallant, with whom ſhe had made an aſſignation. Full of this conjecture, and ſcandalized at the proſtitution of his apartment, he ſnatched up the veſſel he had juſt before filled, and emptied it at once on the aſtoniſhed barber, and his own wife, who waking at that inſtant, broke forth into lamentable cries, which not only alarmed the huſband beyond meaſure, but frightened poor Strap almoſt out of his ſenſes; for he verily believed himſelf bewitched; eſpecially when the incenſed captain ſeized him by the throat, with a volley of oaths, aſking him how he durſt have the preſumption to attempt the chaſtity of his wife. Poor Strap was ſo amazed and confounded, that he could ſay nothing, but—"I take God to witneſs ſhe's "a virgin for me." Mrs Weazel enraged to find herſelf in ſuch a pickle, through the precipitation of her huſband, aroſe in her ſhift, and with the heel of her ſhoe, which ſhe found by the bed-ſide, belaboured the captain's bald pate, till he roared, "Murder." "I'll teach you to "empty your ſtink-pots on me (cried ſhe) you pitiful "hop-o'-my thumb coxcomb. What! I warrant you're "jealous, you man of lath. Was it for this I condeſcend-"ed to take you to my bed, you poor, withered, ſapleſs "twig?" The noiſe occaſioned by this adventure had brought the maſter of the waggon and me to the door, where we overheard all that paſſed, with great ſatisfaction. In the mean time we were alarmed with the cry of "Rape! Murder! Rape!" which Miſs Jenny pronounced with great vociferation. "O! you vile abomi-"nable old villain (ſaid ſhe) would you rob me of my "virtue - But I'll be revenged of you, you old goat! "I will! - help! for heaven's ſake! help!—I ſhall be "ravished! ruined! help!" Some ſervants of the inn hearing this cry, came running up ſtairs with lights, and ſuch weapons as chance afforded; when we beheld a very diverting ſcene. In one corner ſtood the poor captain ſhivering in his ſhirt, which was all torn to rags, with a woful viſage, ſcratched all over by his wife, who had by this time wrapt the counterpane about her, and ſat ſobbing on the ſide of her bed. In the other end, lay the old uſurer trawling on Miſs Jenny's bed, with his flannel-jacket on his ſhift, and his tawny meagre limbs ex-

poſed to the air; while ſhe held him faſt by the two ears, and loaded him with execrations. When we aſked what was the matter, ſhe affected to weep, told us, ſhe was afraid that wicked rogue had ruined her in her ſleep, and bade us take notice of what we ſaw, for ſhe intended to make uſe of our evidence againſt him. The poor wretch looked like one more dead than alive, and begged to be releaſed; a favour which he had no ſooner obtained, than he proteſted ſhe was no woman, but a devil incarnate;—that ſhe had firſt ſeduced his fleſh to rebel, and then betrayed him. "Yes, cockatrice (continued he) you know "you laid this ſnare for me,—but you ſhan't ſucceed,—"for I will hang myſelf before you ſhall get a farthing "of me." So ſaying, he crawled to his own bed, groaning all the way. We then advanced to the captain, who told us, "Gentlemen, here has been a damn'd miſtake; "but I'll be revenged on him who was the occaſion of "it:—That Scotchman, who carries the knapſack ſhall "not breathe this vital air another day, if my name be "Weazel. My dear, I aſk you ten thouſand pardons; "you are ſenſible I could mean no harm to you." "I "know not what you meant (replied ſhe ſighing) but I "know I have got enough to ſend me to my grave." At length they were reconciled: the wife was complimented with a ſhare of Miſs Jenny's bed (her own being overflowed) and the maſter of the waggon invited Weazel to ſleep the remaining part of the night in his. I retired to mine, where I found Strap mortally afraid, he having ſtole away in the dark while the captain and his lady were at logger-heads.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Captain Weazel *challenges* Strap, *who declines the combat—an affair between the Captain and me—the Uſurer is fain to give Miſs* Jenny *five guineas for a releaſe—we are in danger of loſing a meal—the behaviour of* Weazel, Jenny, *and* Joey *on that occaſion—an account of Captain* Weazel *and his Lady—the Captain's courage tried*—Iſaac's *mirth at the Captain's expence.*

NEXT morning, I agreed to give the maſter of the waggon ten ſhillings for my paſſage to London, provided Strap ſhould be allowed to take my place when I ſhould be diſpoſed to walk. At the ſame time, I deſired him to appeaſe the incenſed captain, who had entered the kitchen, with a drawn ſword in his hand, and threatened, with many oaths, to ſacrifice the villain who attempted to violate his bed; but it was to no purpoſe for the maſter to explain the miſtake, and aſſure him of the poor lad's innocence, who ſtood trembling behind me all the while: the more ſubmiſſion that appeared in Strap, the more implacable ſeemed the reſentment of Weazel, who ſwore he muſt either fight him, or he would inſtantly put him to death. I was extremely provoked at this inſolence, and told him, it could not be ſuppoſed that a poor barber lad would engage a man of the ſword at his own weapon, but I was perſuaded he would wreſtle or box with him. To which propoſal Strap immediately gave his aſſent, by ſaying, he would box with him for a guinea. Weazel replied with a look of diſdain, that it was beneath any gentleman of his character to fight like a porter, or even to put himſelf on a footing, in any reſpect, with ſuch a fellow as Strap. "Odds bodikins! (cries Joey,) ſure, coptain, yaw would "not coomit moorder! Here's a poor lad that is willing "to make atoonment for his offence: and an that woan't "ſatisfie yaw, offers to fight yaw fairly:—And yaw woan't "box, I dare ſay he will coodgel with yaw.—Woan't "yaw, my lad?" Strap, after ſome heſitation, anſwered, "Ye—yes, I'll cudgel with him." But this expedient being alſo rejected by the captain, I began to ſmell his character, and tipping Strap the wink, told the company that

that I had always heard it ſaid, the perſon who receives a challenge ſhould have the choice of the weapons; this, therefore, being the rule in point of honour, I would venture to promiſe on the head of my companion, that he ſhould even fight Captain Weazel at ſharps; but it ſhould be with ſuch ſharps as Strap was beſt acquainted with, namely, razors. At my mentioning razors, I could perceive the captain's colour change, while Strap, pulling me me by the ſleeve, whiſper'd, with great eagerneſs, "No, "no, no; for the love of God, don't make any ſuch bar-"gain." At length Weazel, recovering himſelf, turned towards me, and, with a ferocious countenance, aſked, "Who the devil are you?—will you fight me?" With theſe words, putting himſelf in a poſture, I was grievouſly alarmed at ſeeing the point of a ſword within half a foot of my breaſt; and ſpringing to one ſide, ſnatched up a ſpit that ſtood in the chimney-corner, with which I kept my formidable adverſary at bay, who made a great many half-lounges, ſkipping backward at every puſh, till at laſt I pinned him up in a corner, to the no ſmall diverſion of the company. While he was in this ſituation, his wife entered, and ſeeing her huſband in theſe dangerous circumſtances, uttered a dreadful ſcream. In this emergency, Weazel demanded a ceſſation, which was immediately granted; and at laſt was contented with the ſubmiſſion of Strap, who falling on his knees before him, proteſted the innocence of his intention, and aſked pardon for the miſtake he had committed. This affair being ended without bloodſhed, we went to breakfaſt, but miſſed two of our company, namely, Miſs Jenny and the uſurer. As for the firſt, Mrs Weazel informed us that ſhe had kept her awake all night with her groans; and that when ſhe roſe in the morning, Miſs Jenny was ſo much indiſpoſed, that ſhe could not proceed on her journey. At that inſtant, a meſſage came from her to the maſter of the waggon, who immediately went into her chamber, followed by us all. She told him, in a lamentable tone, that ſhe was afraid of a miſcarriage, owing to the fright ſhe received laſt night, from the brutality of Iſaac; and as the event was uncertain, deſired the uſurer might be detained to anſwer for the conſequence. Accordingly, this ancient

Jew

Tarquin was found in the waggon, whither he had retired to avoid the ſhame of the laſt night's diſgrace, and brought by force into her preſence. He no ſooner appeared, than ſhe began to weep and ſigh moſt piteouſly, and told us, if ſhe died, ſhe would leave her blood upon the head of that raviſher. Poor Iſaac turned up his eyes and hands to heaven, prayed that God would deliver him from the machinations of that Jezabel; and aſſured us, with tears in his eyes, that his being found in bed with her was the reſult of her own invitation. The waggoner, underſtanding the caſe, adviſed Iſaac to make it up, by giving her a ſum of money: to which advice he replied with great vehemence, "A ſum of money!—a halter for the "cockatrice!"—"O! 'tis very well (ſaid Miſs Jenny:) "I ſee it is in vain to attempt that flinty heart of his "by fair means.—Joey, be ſo good as to go to the juſ"tice, and tell him there is a ſick perſon here who wants "to ſee him on an affair of conſequence." At the name of Juſtice, Iſaac trembled, and, bidding Joey ſtay, aſked with a quavering voice "what ſhe would have?" She told him, that as he had not perpetrated his wicked purpoſe, ſhe would be ſatisfied with a ſmall matter; and tho' the damage ſhe might ſuſtain in her health might be irreparable, ſhe would give him a releaſe for an hundred guineas. "An hundred guineas! (cried he in an ecſtacy,) "an hundred furies!—Where ſhould a poor old wretch "like me have an hundred guineas? If I had ſo much mo"ney, d'ye think I ſhould be found travelling in a wag"gon at this ſeaſon of the year?" "Come, come, (re"plied Jenny) none of your miſerly artifice here:—You "think I don't know Iſaac Rapine, the money-broker "in the Minories:—Ah! you old rogue! many a pawn "have you had of me and my acquaintance which was "never redeemed." Iſaac finding it was in vain to diſguiſe himſelf, offered twenty ſhillings for a diſcharge, which ſhe abſolutely refuſed under fifty pounds: at laſt, however, ſhe was brought down to five, which he paid, with great reluctancy, rather than be proſecuted for a rape. After which accommodation, the ſick perſon made ſhift to get into the waggon, and we ſet forwards in great tranquillity, Strap being accommodated with Joey's horſe,

the

the driver himſelf deſiring to walk. This morning and forenoon we were entertained with an account of the valour of Captain Weazel, who told us he had once knocked down a ſoldier that made game of him; tweaked a drawer by the noſe, who found fault with his picking his teeth with a fork, at another time: and that he had moreover challenged a cheeſe-monger, who had the preſumption to be his rival: for the truth of ſuch exploits he appealed to his wife. She confirmed whatever he ſaid, and obſerved, "the laſt affair happened that very day on "which I received a love-letter from ſquire Gobble; and "don't you remember, my dear, I was prodigiouſly ſick "that very night with eating ortolans, when my Lord "Diddle took notice of my complexion's being altered, "and my lady was ſo alarmed, that ſhe had well nigh "fainted." "Yes, my dear, (replied the captain,) you "know my Lord ſaid to me, with a ſneer,—"Billy, "Mrs Weazel is certainly breeding." And I anſwered cavalierly, "My Lord I wiſh I could return the compli-"ment:" "Upon which the whole company broke out "into an immoderate fit of laughter; and my Lord, who "loves a repartee dearly, came round and buſſed me." We travelled in this manner five days, without interruption, or meeting any thing worth notice: Miſs Jenny (who ſoon recovered her ſpirits) entertaining us every day with diverting ſongs, of which ſhe could ſing a great number; and rallying her old gallant, who notwithſtanding would never be reconciled to her. On the ſixth day, while we were about to ſit down to dinner, the innkeeper came and told us that three gentlemen, juſt arrived, had ordered the victuals to be carried to their apartment, although he had informed them that they were beſpoke by the paſſengers in the waggon. To which information, they had replied, "The paſſengers in the waggon might be damn'd; "their betters muſt be ſerved before them—they ſup-"poſed it would be no hardſhip for ſuch travellers to "dine upon bread and cheeſe for one day." This was a terrible diſappointment to us all; and we laid our heads together how to remedy it; when Miſs Jenny obſerved, that Captain Weazel being by profeſſion a ſoldier, ought in this caſe to protect and prevent us from being

ing inſulted. But the captain excuſed himſelf, ſaying, he would not for all the world be known to have travelled in a waggon; ſwearing, at the ſame time, that could he appear with honour, they ſhould eat his ſword ſooner than his proviſion. Upon this declaration, Miſs Jenny ſnatching his weapon, drew it, and ran immediately into the kitchen, where ſhe threatened to put the cook to death, if he did not ſend the victuals into our chamber immediately. The noiſe ſhe made brought the three ſtrangers down, one of whom no ſooner perceived her, than he cried, "Ha! Jenny Ramper! what the devil "brought thee hither?"—"My dear Jack Rattle! "(replied ſhe, running into his arms) is it you?—Then "Weazel may go to hell for a dinner—I ſhall dine with "you." They conſented to this propoſal with a great deal of joy; and we were on the point of being reduced to a very uncomfortable meal, when Joey, underſtanding the whole affair, entered the kitchen with a pitchfork in his hand, and ſwore he would be the death of any man who ſhould pretend to ſeize the victuals prepared for the waggon. This menace had like to have produced fatal conſequences; the three ſtrangers drawing their ſwords, and being joined by their ſervants, and we ranging ourſelves on the ſide of Joey; when the landlord interpoſing, offered to part with his own dinner to keep the peace, which was accepted by the ſtrangers; and we ſat down at table without any further moleſtation. In the afternoon, I choſe to walk along with Joey, and Strap took my place. Having entered into a converſation with this driver, I ſoon found him to be a merry, facetious, good-natured fellow, and withal very arch: He informed me, that Miſs Jenny was a common girl upon the town, who falling into company with a recruiting officer, he carried her down in the ſtage coach from London to Newcaſtle, where he had been arreſted for debt, and was now in priſon; upon which ſhe was fain to return to her former way of life, by this conveyance. He told me likewiſe, that one of the gentlemen's ſervants, whom we left at the inn, having accidentally ſeen Weazel, immediately knew him, and acquainted Joey with ſome particulars of his character: That he had ſerved my Lord Frizzle in quality of *valet de*

chambre many years, while he lived ſeparate from his lady; but upon their reconciliation, ſhe expreſsly inſiſted upon Weazel's being turned off, as well as the woman he kept: when his lordſhip, to get rid of them both with a good grace, propoſed that he ſhould marry his miſtreſs, and he would procure a commiſſion for him in the army. This expedient was agreed to, and Weazel is now, by his lordſhip's intereſt, enſign in ——'s regiment. I found he and I had the ſame ſentiments with regard to Weazel's courage, which we reſolved to put to the trial, by alarming the paſſengers with the cry of "an highwayman!" as ſoon as an horſeman ſhould appear. This ſcheme we put in practice towards the duſk, when we deſcried a man on horſeback approaching us. Joey had no ſooner intimated to the people in the waggon, that he was afraid we ſhould be all robbed, than a general conſternation aroſe! Strap jumped out of the waggon and hid himſelf behind a hedge. The uſurer put forth ejaculations, and made a ruſtling among the ſtraw, which made us conjecture he had hid ſomething under it. Mrs Weazel, wringing her hands, uttered lamentable cries; and the captain, to our great amazement, began to ſnore: but this artifice did not ſucceed; for Miſs Jenny, ſhaking him by the ſhoulder, bawl'd out, "'Sdeath! captain, is this a time to "ſnore, when we are going to be robbed?—Get up, for "ſhame, and behave like a ſoldier and a man of honour." Weazel pretended to be in a great paſſion for being diſturbed, and ſwore he would have his nap out, if all the highwaymen in England ſurrounded him. "D—n my "blood! what are you afraid of?" (continued he,) at the ſame time trembling with ſuch agitation, that the whole carriage ſhook. This ſingular piece of behaviour incenſed Miſs Ramper ſo much, that ſhe cried, "D—n your "pitiful ſoul, you are as arrant a poltroon as ever was "drummed out of a regiment. Stop the waggon, Joey, "—let me get out, and by G—d, if I have rhetoric "enough, the thief ſhall not only take your purſe, but "your ſkin alſo." So ſaying, ſhe leapt out with great agility. By this time the horſeman came up with us, and happened to be a gentleman's ſervant well known to Joey, who communicated the ſcheme, and deſired him to carry

it

it on a little further, by going up to the waggon, and queſtioning thoſe within. The ſtranger conſenting for the ſake of diverſion, approached it, and in a terrible tone, demanded, "who have we got here?" Iſaac replied, with a lamentable voice, "Here's a poor miſerable ſin-"ner, who has got a ſmall family to maintain, and no-"thing in the world wherewithal, but theſe fifteen ſhil-"lings, which if you rob me of, we muſt all ſtarve toge-"ther." "Who's that ſobbing in the other corner?" (ſaid the ſuppoſed highwayman.) "A poor unfortunate "woman,) anſwered Mrs Weazel), upon whom I beg "you, for Chriſt's ſake, to have compaſſion." "Are you "maid or wife?" (ſaid he.) "Wife, to my ſorrow," "(cried ſhe.) "Who, or where is your huſband?" (con-"tinued he.) "My huſband (replied Mrs Weazel) is an "officer of the army, and was left ſick at the laſt inn "where we dined." "You muſt be miſtaken, madam, "(ſaid he) for I myſelf ſaw him get into the waggon this "afternoon. But pray, what ſmell is that? Sure your "lap-dog has befouled himſelf; let me catch hold of the "naſty cur, I'll teach him better manners." Here he laid hold of one of Weazel's legs, and pulled him out from under his wife's petticoats, where he had concealed himſelf. The poor trembling captain being detected in this inglorious ſituation, rubbed his eyes, and affecting to wake out of ſleep, cried, "What's the matter?—What's "the matter?"—"The matter is not much, (anſwered "the horſeman), I only called in to inquire after your "health, and ſo adieu, moſt noble captain." So ſaying, he clapped ſpurs to his horſe, and was out of ſight in a mo-ment. It was ſome time before Weazel could recollect himſelf; but at length, re-aſſuming the big look, he ſaid, "Damn the fellow! why did he ride away before I had "time to aſk him how his lord and lady do?—Don't you "remember Tom, my dear?" addreſſing himſelf to his wife. "Yes, (replied ſhe), I think I do remember "ſomething of the fellow, but you know I ſeldom con-"verſe with people of his ſtation." "Hey day! (cried "Joey) do yaw knaw the young mon, coptain?" "Know "him, (ſaid Weazel), many a time has he filled a glaſs of "Burgundy for me, at my lord Tripper's table." "And

" what may his name be, coptain ?" (ſaid Joey.) " His " name !—his name (replied Weazel) is Tom Rinſer."— " Waunds ! (cried Joey) a has changed his own neame " then ! for I'ſe lay any wager he was chriſtened John " Trotter." This obſervation raiſed a laugh againſt the captain, who ſeemed very much diſconcerted; when Iſaac broke ſilence, and ſaid, " It is no matter who or " what he was, ſince he has not proved the robber we " ſuſpected.—And we ought to bleſs God for our nar- " row eſcape." " Bleſs God, (ſaid Weazel) bleſs the de- " vil ! for what ? had he been a highwayman I ſhould " have eat his blood, body, and guts, before he had robbed " me, or any one in this *Diligence*." " Ha, ha, ha ! " (cried Miſs Jenny) I believe you will eat all you kill in- " deed, captain." The uſurer was ſo well pleaſed at the event of this adventure, that he could not refrain from being ſevere, and took notice that captain Weazel ſeemed to be a good Chriſtian, for he had armed himſelf with patience and reſignation, inſtead of carnal weapons; and worked out his ſalvation with fear and trembling. This piece of ſatire occaſioned a great deal of mirth at Weazel's expence, who muttered a great many oaths, and threatened to cut Iſaac's throat. The uſurer taking hold of his menace, ſaid, " Gentlemen and ladies, I take you all to " witneſs, that my life is in danger from this bloody- " minded officer. I'll have him bound over to the peace." This ſecond ſneer procured another laugh againſt him, and he remained creſt-fallen during the remaining part of our journey.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Strap *and I are terrified by an apparition*—Strap's *conjecture*—*the myſtery explained by* Joey—*we arrive at* London—*our dreſs and appearance deſcribed*—*we are inſulted in the ſtreet*—*an adventure in an ale-houſe*—*we are impoſed upon by a waggiſh footman*—*ſet to rights by a tobacconiſt*—*take lodgings*—*dive for a dinner*—*an accident at our ordinary.*

WE arrived at our inn, ſupped, and went to bed; but Strap's diſtemper continuing, he was obliged to riſe in the middle of the night, and taking the candle in his hand, which he had left burning for the purpoſe, he went down to the houſe of office, whence in a ſhort time he returned in a great hurry, with his hair ſtanding on end, and a look betokening horror and aſtoniſhment. Without ſpeaking a word, he ſet down the light and jumped into bed behind me, where he lay and trembled with great violence. When I aſked him what was the matter? he replied with a broken accent, "God have mercy on "us! I have ſeen the devil." Though my prejudice was not quite ſo ſtrong as his, I was not a little alarmed at this exclamation, and much more ſo, when I heard the ſound of bells approaching our chamber, and felt my bed-fellow cling cloſe to me, uttering theſe words, "Chriſt "have mercy upon us! there he comes." At that inſtant, a monſtrous overgrown raven entered our chamber, with bells at his feet, and made directly towards our bed. As this creature is reckoned in our country a common vehicle for the devil and witches to play their pranks in, I verily believed we were haunted, and in a violent fright ſhrunk under the bed clothes. This terrible apparition leapt upon the bed, and after giving us ſeveral ſevere dabs with its beak through the blankets, hopped away and vaniſhed. Strap and I recommended ourſelves to the protection of heaven with great devotion, and when we no longer heard the noiſe, ventured to peep up and take breath. But we had not been long freed from this phantom, when another appeared that had well nigh deprived

us both of our ſenſes. We perceived an old man enter the room, with a long white beard that reached to his middle: there was a certain wild peculiarity in his eyes and countenance that did not ſavour of this world; and his dreſs conſiſted of a brown ſtuff coat, buttoned behind and at the wriſts, with an odd faſhioned cap of the ſame ſtuff upon his head. I was ſo amazed, that I had not power to move my eyes from ſuch a ghaſtly object, but lay motionleſs, and ſaw him come ſtraight up to me: when he reached the bed, he wrung his hands, and cried with a voice that did not ſeem to belong to a human creature, "Where is Ralph?" I made no reply; upon which he repeated in an accent ſtill more preternatural, "Where "is Ralpho?" He had no ſooner pronounced theſe words, than I heard the ſound of the bells at a diſtance; which the apparition having liſtened to, tript away, and left me almoſt petrified with fear. It was a good while before I could recover myſelf ſo far as to ſpeak; and when at length I turned to Strap, I found him in a fit, which, however, did not laſt long. When he came to himſelf, I aſked his opinion of what had happened; and he aſſured me that the firſt muſt certainly be the ſoul of ſome perſon damned, which appeared by the chains about its legs (for his fears had magnified the creature to the bigneſs of a horſe, and the ſound of ſmall morrice bells to the clanking of maſſy chains.) As for the old man, he took it to be the ſpirit of ſomebody murdered long ago in this place, which had power granted it to torment the aſſaſſin in the ſhape of a raven, and that Ralpho was the name of the ſaid murderer. Although I had not much faith in this interpretation, I was too much troubled to enjoy any ſleep; and in all my future adventures never paſſed a night ſo ill. In the morning, Strap imparted the whole affair to Joey, who, after an immoderate fit of laughter, explained the matter, by telling him the old man was the landlord's father, who had been an ideot ſome years, and diverted himſelf with a tame raven, which, it ſeems, had hopped away from his apartment in the night, and induced him to follow it to our chamber, where he had inquired after it, under the name of Ralpho.

Nothing

Nothing remarkable happened during the remaining part of our journey, which continued ſix or ſeven days longer: at length, we entered the great city, and lodged all night at the inn where the waggon put up. Next morning, all the paſſengers parted different ways; while my companion and I ſallied out to inquire for the member of parliament to whom I had a letter of recommendation from Mr Crab. As we had diſcharged our lodging at the inn, Strap took up our baggage, and marched behind me in the ſtreet with the knapſack on his back, as uſual, ſo that we made a very whimſical appearance. I had dreſſed myſelf to the greateſt advantage; that is, put on a clean ruffled ſhirt, and my beſt thread ſtockings; my hair (which was of the deepeſt red) hung down upon my ſhoulders, as lank and ſtraight as a pound of candles; and the ſkirts of my coat reached to the middle of my leg; my waiſtcoat and breeches were of the ſame piece, and cut in the ſame taſte; and my hat very much reſembled a barber's baſon, in the ſhallowneſs of the crown and narrowneſs of the brims. Strap was habited in a much leſs aukward manner; but a ſhort crop-eared wig that very much reſembled Scrub's in the play, and the knapſack on his back, added to what is called a queer phiz, occaſioned by a long chin, and hook-noſe and high cheek-bones, rendered him on the whole a very fit ſubject of mirth and pleaſantry. As we walked along, Strap, at my deſire, inquired of a carman whom we met, whereabout's Mr Cringer lived;—and was anſwered by a ſtare accompanied with the word, "Anan!" Upon which I came up, in order to explain the queſtion, but had the misfortune to be unintelligible likewiſe, the carman damning us for a louſy Scotch guard, and whipping his horſes with a "Gee ho!" which nettled me to the quick, and rouſed the indignation of Strap ſo far, that after the fellow was gone a good way, he told me, he would fight him for a farthing. While we were deliberating upon what was to be done, an hackney-coachman driving ſoftly along, and perceiving us ſtanding by the kennel, came up cloſe to us, and calling, "A coach, maſter!" by a dexterous management of the reins, made his horſes ſtumble in the wet, and bedaub us all over with mud. After

which

which exploit he drove on, applauding himſelf with a hearty laugh, in which ſeveral people joined, to my great mortification; but one more compaſſionate than the reſt, ſeeing us ſtrangers, adviſed me to go into an ale-houſe, and dry myſelf. I thanked him for his advice, which I immediately complied with; and going into the houſe he pointed out, called for a pot of beer, and ſat down by a fire in the public room, where we cleaned ourſelves as well as we could. In the mean time, a wag, who ſat in a box, ſmoaking his pipe, underſtanding by our dialect that we were from Scotland, came up to me, and with a grave countenance, aſked how long I had been caught? As I did not know the meaning of this queſtion, I made no anſwer; and he went on, ſaying, it could not be a great while, for my tail was not yet cut; at the ſame time taking hold of my hair, and tipping the wink to the reſt of the company, who ſeemed highly entertained with his wit. I was incenſed at this uſage, but afraid of reſenting it, becauſe I happened to be in a ſtrange place, and perceived the perſon who ſpoke to me was a brawny fellow, for whom I thought myſelf by no means a match. However, Strap, having either more courage or leſs caution, could not put up with the inſults I ſuffered; but told him in a peremptory tone, "He was an uncivil fellow for "making ſo free with his betters."—Then the wit going toward him, aſked, what he had got in his knapſack? "Is it oat-meal or brimſtone, Sawney?" ſaid he, ſeizing him by the chin, which he ſhook to the inexpreſſible diverſion of all preſent. My companion feeling himſelf aſſaulted in ſuch an opprobrious manner, diſengaged himſelf in a trice, and lent his antagoniſt ſuch a box on the ear, as made him ſtagger to the other ſide of the room; and, in a moment, a ring was formed for the combatants. Seeing Strap beginning to ſtrip, and my blood being heated with indignation, which baniſhed all other thoughts, I undreſſed myſelf to the ſkin in an inſtant, and declared, that as the affront that occaſioned the quarrel was offered to me, I would fight it out myſelf; upon which one or two cried out, "That's a brave Scotch boy; you ſhall have fair play, by G—d." This aſſurance gave me freſh ſpirits, and going up to my adverſary, who by his

pale

pale countenance did not ſeem much inclined to the battle, I ſtruck him ſo hard on the ſtomach, that he reeled over a bench, and fell to the ground. Then I attempted to keep him down, in order to improve my ſucceſs, according to the manner of my own country; but was reſtrained by the ſpectators, one of whom endeavoured to raiſe up my opponent, but in vain; for he proteſted he would not fight, for he was not quite recovered of a late illneſs. I was very well pleaſed with this excuſe, and immediately dreſſed myſelf, having acquired the good opinion of the company for my bravery, as well as of my comrade Strap, who ſhook me by the hand, and wiſhed me joy of the victory. After having drunk our pot, and dried our clothes, we inquired of the landlord if he knew Mr Cringer the member of parliament, and were amazed at his replying in the negative; for we imagined he muſt be altogether as conſpicuous here as in the borough he repreſented: but he told us we might poſſibly hear of him as we paſſed along. We betook ourſelves therefore to the ſtreet, where, ſeeing a footman ſtanding at the door, we made up to him, and aſked if he knew where our patron lived? This member of the party-coloured fraternity, ſurveying us both very minutely, ſaid he knew Mr Cringer very well, and bade us turn down the firſt ſtreet on our left, then turn to the right, and then to the left again, after which perambulation we would obſerve a lane, through which we muſt paſs, and at the other end we ſhould find an alley that leads to another ſtreet, where we ſhould ſee the ſign of the Thiſtle and three Pedlars, and there he lodged. We thanked him for his information, and went forwards, Strap telling me, that he knew this perſon to be an honeſt friendly man by his countenance, before he opened his mouth; in which opinion I acquieſced, aſcribing his good manners to the company he daily ſaw in the houſe where he ſerved. We followed his directions punctually, in turning to the left and to the right, and to the left again; but inſtead of ſeeing a lane before us, found ourſelves at the ſide of the river, a circumſtance that perplexed us not a little: and my fellow-traveller ventured to pronounce, that we had certainly miſſed our way. By this time we were [illegible] much

fatigued with our walk, and not knowing how to proceed, I went into a ſmall ſnuff-ſhop hard by, encouraged by the ſign of the Highlander, where I found, to my inexpreſſible ſatisfaction, the ſhop-keeper was my countryman. He was no ſooner informed of our peregrination, and the directions we had received from the footman, than he informed us we had been impoſed upon, telling us, Mr Cringer lived in the other end of the town; and that it would be to no purpoſe for us to go thither to-day, for by that time he was gone to the Houſe. I then aſked if he could recommend us to a lodging. He readily gave us a line to one of his acquaintance who kept a chandler's ſhop not far from St Martin's Lane; there we hired a bed-room, up two pair of ſtairs, at the rate of 2 *s. per* week, ſo very ſmall, that when the bed was let down, we were obliged to carry out every other piece of furniture that belonged to the apartment, and uſe the bed-ſtead by way of chairs. About dinner-time, our landlord aſked how we propoſed to live? to which interrogation we anſwered that we would be directed by him. "Well then "(ſays he) there are two ways of eating in this town for "people of your condition; the one more creditable and "expenſive than the other; the firſt is, to dine at an "eating-houſe frequented by well-dreſſed people only; "and the other is called Diving, practiſed by thoſe who "are either obliged or inclined to live frugally." I gave him to underſtand that, provided the laſt was not infamous, it would ſuit much better with our circumſtances than the other. "Infamous! (cried he,) God forbid; "there are many creditable people, rich people, ay and "fine people, that dive every day. I have ſeen many a "pretty gentleman with a laced waiſtcoat, dine in that "manner very comfortably for three pence halfpenny, "and go afterwards to the coffeehouſe, where he made "a figure with the beſt lord in the land;—but your own "eyes ſhall bear witneſs—I will go along with you to-day "and introduce you" He accordingly conducted us to a certain lane, where ſtopping, he bade us obſerve him, and do as he did, and walking a few paces, dived into a cellar and diſappeared in an inſtant. I followed his example, and deſcending very ſucceſsfully, found myſelf in

in the middle of a cook's ſhop, almoſt ſuffocated with the ſteams of boiled beef, and ſurrounded by a company of hackney-coachmen, chairmen, draymen, and a few footmen out of place or on board-wages; who ſat eating ſhin of beef, tripe, cow heel, or ſauſages, at ſeparate boards, covered with cloths which turned my ſtomach. While I ſtood in amaze, undetermined whether to ſit down or walk upwards again, Strap, in his deſcent, miſſing one of the ſteps, tumbled headlong into this infernal ordinary, and overturned the cook as ſhe carried a porringer of ſoup to one of the gueſts. In her fall, ſhe daſhed the whole meſs againſt the legs of a drummer belonging to the foot-guards, who happened to be in her way, and ſcalded him ſo miſerably, that he ſtarted up, and danced up and down, uttering a volley of execrations that made my hair ſtand on end. While he entertained the company in this manner, with an eloquence peculiar to himſelf, the cook got up, and after a hearty curſe on the poor author of this miſchance, who lay under the table ſcratching his rump with a woful countenance, emptied a ſalt-ſeller in her hand, and ſtripping down the patient's ſtocking, which brought the ſkin along with it, applied the contents to the ſore. This poultice was ſcarce laid on when the drummer, who had begun to abate of his exclamation, broke forth into ſuch a hideous yell, as made the whole company tremble; then ſeizing a pewter pint-pot that ſtood by him, ſqueezed the ſides of it together as if it had been made of pliant leather, grinding his teeth at the ſame time with a moſt horrible grin. Gueſſing the cauſe of this violent tranſport, I bade the woman waſh off the ſalt and bathe the part with oil, which ſhe did, and procured him immediate eaſe. But here another difficulty occurred, which was no other than the landlady's inſiſting on his paying for the pot he had rendered uſeleſs. He ſwore he would pay for nothing but what he had eaten, and bade her be thankful for his moderation, or elſe he would proſecute her for damages. Strap foreſeeing the whole affair would lie at his door, promiſed to ſatisfy the cook, and called for a dram of gin to treat the drummer, which entirely appeaſed him, and compoſed all animoſities. After this accommodation, our landlord and

we ſat down at board, and dined upon ſhin of beef moſt deliciouſly: our reckoning amounting to twopence half-penny each, bread and ſmall beer included.

CHAP. XIV.

We viſit Strap's *friend—a deſcription of him—his advice—we go to Mr* Cringer's *houſe—are denied admittance—an accident befals* Strap—*an extraordinary adventure occurs, in the courſe of which I loſe all my money.*

IN the afternoon, my companion propoſed to call at his friend's houſe, which, we were informed, was in the neighbourhood, whither we accordingly went, and were ſo lucky as to find him at home. This gentleman, who had come from Scotland three or four years before, kept a ſchool in town, where he taught the Latin, French, and Italian languages; but what he chiefly profeſſed was the pronunciation of the Engliſh tongue, after a method more ſpeedy and uncommon than any practiſed heretofore; and indeed, if his ſcholars ſpoke like their maſter, the latter part of his undertaking was certainly performed to a tittle; for although I could eaſily underſtand every word of what I had heard hitherto ſince I entered England, three parts in four of his dialect were as unintelligible to me, as if he had ſpoken in Arabic or Iriſh. He was a middle-ſized man, and ſtooped very much, though not above the age of forty; his face was frightfully pitted with the ſmall pox, and his mouth extended from ear to ear.—He was dreſſed in a night-gown of plaid, faſtened about his middle with a ſerjeant's old ſaſh, and a tie-perriwig with a fore top three inches high, in the faſhion of King Charles the Second's reign. After he had received Strap (who was related to him) very courteouſly, he inquired of him who I was? and being informed, he took me by the hand, telling me, he was at ſchool with my father.—When he underſtood my ſituation, he aſſured me that he would do me all the ſervice in his power, both by his advice and otherwiſe; and while he ſpoke theſe words, eyed me with great attention, walking round me ſeveral times, and muttering,

fering, "O Ch—u! O Ch—ft! fat a faight is here." I ſoon gueſſed the reaſon of his ejaculation, and ſaid, "I "ſuppoſe, Sir, you are not pleaſed with my dreſs."—"Dreſs, (anſwered he,) you may caal it fat you pleaſe in "your country, but I vow to Gad, 'tis a maſquerade "here.—No Chriſtian will admit ſuch a figure into his "hawſe.—Upon my conſcience I wonder the dogs did "not hunt you.—Did you paſs through St James's mar-"ket?—God bleſs my eye faight! you look like a cou-"ſin-german of Ouran Outang." I began to be a little ſerious at this diſcourſe, and aſked him, if he thought I ſhould obtain entrance to-morrow at the houſe of Mr Cringer, on whom I chiefly depended, for an introduction into buſineſs?—"Mr Cringer, Mr Cringer (replied he "ſcratching his cheek) may be a very honeſt gentleman "—I know nothing to the contrary; but is your ſole de-"pendence upon him? Who recommended you to him?" —I pulled out Mr Crab's letter, and told him the foundation of my hopes; at which he ſtared at me, and repeated, "Ch—ft!" I began to conceive bad omens from this behaviour of his, and begged he would aſſiſt me with his advice; which he promiſed to give very frankly; and, as a ſpecimen, directed us to a periwig-warehouſe in the neighbourhood, in order to be accommodated; laying ſtrong injunctions on me not to appear before Mr Cringer, till I had parted with theſe carroty locks, which (he ſaid) were ſufficient to beget an antipathy againſt me, in all mankind. And as we were going to purſue this advice, he called me back, and made me be ſure to deliver my letter into Mr Cringer's own hand. As we walked along, Strap triumphed greatly in our reception with his friend, who (ſome) had aſſured him, he would in a day or two provide for him with ſome good maſter; and "now (ſays he) you will ſee how I will fit you with a "wig.—There's ne'er a barber in London (and that's a "bold word) can palm a roach in curl, or a penny-weight "of dead hair upon me." And indeed this zealous adherent did wrangle ſo long with the merchant, that he was deſired twenty times to leave the ſhop, and ſee if he could get one cheaper elſewhere. At length I made choice of a good handſome bob, for which I paid ten ſhillings,

lings; and returned to our lodging, where, Strap, in a moment, rid me of that hair which had given the ſchool-maſter ſo much offence.

We got up next day betimes, having been informed that Mr Cringer gave audience by candle-light to all his dependents, he himſelf being obliged to attend the levee of my Lord Terrier at break of day, becauſe his Lord-ſhip made one at the miniſter's between eight and nine o'clock.—When we came to Mr Cringer's door, Strap, to give me an inſtance of his politeneſs, ran to the knocker, which he employed ſo loud and ſo long that he alarmed the whole ſtreet; and a window opening in the ſecond ſtory of the next houſe, a chamber-pot was diſcharged upon him ſo ſucceſsfully, that the poor barber was wet to the ſkin; while I, being luckily at ſome diſtance, eſcaped the unſavoury deluge. In the mean time a footman opening the door, and ſeeing nobody in the ſtreet but us, aſked, with a ſtern countenance, if it was I who made ſuch a damned noiſe, and what I wanted. I told him I had buſineſs with his maſter, whom I deſired to ſee. Upon which he clapped the door in my face, telling me, I muſt learn better manners before I could have acceſs to his maſter. Vexed at this diſappointment, I turned my reſentment againſt Strap, whom I ſharply reprimanded for his preſumption; but he not in the leaſt regarding what I ſaid, wrung the urine out of his periwig, and lifting up a large ſtone, flung it with ſuch force againſt the ſtreet-door of that houſe from whence he had been bedewed, that the lock giving way, it flew wide open, and he took to his heels, leaving me to follow him as I could. Indeed there was no time for deliberation; I therefore purſued him with all the ſpeed I could exert, until we found ourſelves about the dawn, in a ſtreet we did not know. Here, as we wandered along, gaping about, a very decent ſort of a man, paſſing by me, ſtopped of a ſudden, and took up ſomething, which having examined, he turned, and preſented it to me with theſe words, "Sir, you have dropt "half a crown." I was not a little ſurpriſed at this inſtance of honeſty, and told him it did not belong to me; but he bade me recollect, and ſee if all my money was ſafe: upon which I pulled out my purſe (for I had bought one

ſince

ſince I came to town) and reckoning my money in my hand, which was now reduced to five guineas, ſeven ſhillings and twopence, aſſured him I had loſt nothing.—"Well "then, (ſays he) ſo much the better;—this is Godſend "—and as you two were preſent when I picked it up, "you are entitled to equal ſhares with me." I was aſtoniſhed at theſe words, and looked upon this perſon to be a prodigy of integrity, but abſolutely refuſed to take any part of the ſum. "Come, gentlemen, (ſaid he,) you are "too modeſt:—I ſee you are ſtrangers;—but you ſhall "give me leave to treat you with a wet this cold raw "morning." I would have declined this invitation, but Strap whiſpered to me that the gentleman would be affronted, and I complied. "Where ſhall we go? (ſaid "the ſtranger,) I am quite ignorant of this part of the "town." I informed him that we were in the ſame ſituation: upon which he propoſed to go into the firſt public-houſe we ſhould find open; and as we walked together, he began in this manner:—"I find by your "tongues you are from Scotland, gentlemen:—My "grandmother by the father's ſide was of your country, "and I am ſo prepoſſeſſed in its favour, that I never meet "a Scotchman but my heart warms:—The Scots are a "very brave people—There is ſcarce a great family in "the kingdom that cannot boaſt of ſome exploits performed by its anceſtors many hundred years ago.—"There's your Douglaſſes, Gordons, Campbells, Hamiltons:—We have no ſuch ancient families here in England:—Then you are all very well educated.—I have "known a pedlar talk in Greek and Hebrew, as well as "if they had been his mother-tongue:—And for honeſty—I once had a ſervant, his name was Gregory Macgregor, I would have truſted him with untold gold." This eulogium on my native country gained my affection ſo ſtrongly, that I believe I could have gone to death to ſerve the author; and Strap's eyes ſwam in tears. At length, as we paſſed through a dark narrow lane, we perceived a public houſe, which we entered; and found a man ſitting by the fire, ſmoaking a pipe, with a pint of pearl before him. Our new acquaintance aſked us, if ever we had drank egg-flip? To which queſtion we anſwering

ſwering in the negative, he aſſured us of a regale, and ordered a quart to be prepared, calling for pipes and tobacco at the ſame time. We found this compoſition very palatable, and drank heartily; the converſation (which was introduced by the gentleman) turning upon the ſnares that young unexperienced people are expoſed to in this metropolis. He deſcribed a thouſand cheats that are daily practiſed upon the ignorant and unwary; and warned us of them with ſo much good-nature and concern, that we bleſſed the opportunity which threw us in his way. After we had put the cann about for ſome time, our new friend began to yawn, telling us he had been up all night with a ſick perſon; and propoſed we ſhould have recourſe to ſome diverſion to keep him awake: —"Suppoſe (ſaid "he) we ſhould take a hand at whiſt for paſtime. But "let me ſee, that won't do, there's only three of us; "and I cannot play at any other game.—The truth is, "I ſeldom or never play, but out of complaiſance, or "at ſuch a time as this, when I am in danger of falling "aſleep." Although I was not much inclined to gaming, I felt no averſion to paſs an hour or two at cards with a friend; and knowing that Strap underſtood as much of the matter as I, made no ſcruple of ſaying, "I wiſh we "could find a fourth hand." While we were in this perplexity, the perſon whom we found in the houſe at our entrance, over-hearing our diſcourſe, took the pipe from his mouth very gravely, and accoſted us thus: "Gentlemen, my pipe is out, you ſee, (ſhaking the aſhes "into the fire) and rather than you ſhould be baulked, "I don't care if I take a hand with you for a trifle,— "but remember I won't play for any thing of conſe- "quence." We accepted his proffer with pleaſure; having cut for partners, it fell to my lot to play with him againſt our friend and Strap, for threepence a game. We were ſo ſucceſsful, that in a ſhort time I was half a crown gainer; when the gentleman whom we had met in the ſtreet obſerving he had no luck to-day, propoſed to leave off, or change partners. By this time I was inflamed with my good fortune and the expectation of improving it, as I perceived the two opponents play'd but indifferently: therefore I voted for giving him his revenge; and

and cutting again, Strap and I (to our mutual ſatisfaction) happened to be partners. My good fortune attended me ſtill, and in leſs than an hour we had got thirty ſhillings of their money; for as they loſt, they grew the keener, and doubled ſtakes every time. At laſt the inconſtant goddeſs began to veer about, and we were very ſoon ſtript of all our gains, and about forty ſhillings of our own money. This loſs mortified me extremely, and had a viſible effect on the muſcles of Strap's face, which lengthened apace; but our antagoniſts perceiving our condition, kindly permitted us to retrieve our loſs, and conſole ourſelves with a new acquiſition. Then my companion wiſely ſuggeſted it was time to be gone; upon which the perſon who had joined us in the houſe began to curſe the cards; and muttered that we were indebted to fortune only for what we had got, no part of our ſucceſs being owing to our good play. This inſinuation nettled me ſo much, that I challenged him to a game at piquet for a crown; and he was with difficulty perſuaded to accept the invitation. This conteſt ended in leſs than an hour, to my inexpreſſible affliction, who loſt every ſhilling of my own money, Strap abſolutely refuſing to ſupply me with a ſixpence. The gentleman, at whoſe requeſt we had come in, perceiving by my diſconſolate looks the ſituation of my heart, which well nigh burſted with grief and reſentment, when the other ſtranger got up, and went away with my money, began in this manner: "I am "truly afflicted at your bad luck, and would willingly re- "pair it, was it in my power. But what in the name "of goodneſs could provoke you to tempt your fate ſo "long? It is always a maxim with gameſters to purſue "ſucceſs as far as it will go, and to ſtop whenever for- "tune ſhifts about:—You are a young man, and your "paſſions too impetuous; you muſt learn to govern them "better:—However, there is no experience like that "which is bought; you will be the better for this the "longeſt day you have to live.—As for the fellow who "has got your money, I don't half like him.—Did not "you obſerve me tip you the wink to leave off in time?" I anſwered, No. "No, (continued he,) you was too ea- "ger to mind any thing but the game.—But, harkee,

" (ſaid he, in a whiſper), are you ſatisfied of that young " man's honeſty? his looks are a little ſuſpicious;—but " I may be miſtaken; he made a great many grimaces " while he ſtood behind you; this is a very wicked town." I told him I was very well convinced of my comrade's integrity, and that the grimaces he mentioned were doubtleſs owing to his anxiety at my loſs. " O ho! if that be " the caſe, I aſk his pardon.—Landlord, ſee what's to " pay." The reckoning amounted to eighteen pence, which having diſcharged, the gentleman ſhook us both by the hand, and ſaying he ſhould be very glad to ſee us again, departed.

CHAP. XV.

Strap *moralizes—preſents his purſe to me—we inform our landlord of my misfortune; he unravels the myſtery—I preſent myſelf to* Cringer *—he recommends and turns me over to Mr* Staytape—*I become acquainted with a fellow-dependent, who explains the characters of* Cringer *and* Staytape—*and informs me of the method to be purſued at the Navy-office and Surgeons Hall—*Strap *is employed.*

IN our way to our lodging, after a profound ſilence on both ſides, Strap with a hideous groan obſerved, that we had brought our pigs to a fine market. To this obſervation I made no reply, and he went on: " God " ſend us well out of this place, we have not been in " London eight and forty hours, and I believe we have " met with eight and forty thouſand misfortunes. We " have been jeered, reproached, buffeted, piſſed upon, " and at laſt ſtript of our money; and I ſuppoſe by and " by we ſhall be ſtript of our ſkins. Indeed, as to the " money-part of it, that was owing to our own folly; " Solomon ſays, *Bray a fool in a mortar, and he will never* " *be wiſe.* Ah! God help us, an ounce of prudence is " worth a pound of gold." This was no time for him to tamper with my diſpoſition, already mad with my loſs, and inflamed with reſentment againſt him for having refuſed me a little money to attempt to retrieve it. I there-

fore

fore turned towards him with a ſtern countenance, and aſked, "Who he called fool?" Being altogether unaccuſtomed to ſuch looks from me, he ſtood ſtill and ſtared in my face for ſome time; then with ſome confuſion, uttered, "Fool!—I called nobody fool but myſelf;—I am "ſure I am the greateſt fool of the two, for being ſo much "concerned at other people's misfortunes;—but *Nemo* "*omnibus horis ſapit*—that's all—that's all." Upon which a ſilence enſued that brought us to our lodging, where I threw myſelf upon the bed in an agony of deſpair, reſolved to periſh, rather than apply to my companion or any other body for relief; but Strap, who knew my temper, and whoſe heart bled within him at my diſtreſs, after ſome pauſe, came to the bed-ſide, and putting a leathern purſe into my hand, burſt into tears, crying, "I know "what you think; but I ſcorn your thoughts.—There's "all I have in the world, take it, and I'll perhaps get "more for you before that be done.—If not I'll beg for "you, ſteal for you, go through the wide world with you, "and ſtarve with you; for though I be a poor cobler's "ſon, I am no ſcout." I was ſo touched with the generous paſſion of this poor creature, that I could not refrain from weeping alſo, and we mingled our tears together for ſome time. Upon examining the purſe, I found in it two half guineas and half a crown, which I would have returned to him, ſaying, he knew better than I how to manage it, but he abſolutely refuſed my propoſal, and told me, it was more reaſonable and decent that he ſhould depend upon me, who was a gentleman, than that I ſhould be controuled by him.

After this friendly conteſt was over, and our minds more at eaſe, we informed our landlord of what had happened to us, taking care to conceal the extremity to which we were reduced: He no ſooner heard the ſtory, than he aſſured us we had been grievouſly impoſed upon by a couple of ſharpers, who were aſſociates; and that this polite, honeſt, friendly, humane perſon, who had treated us ſo civilly, was no other than a raſcally money-dropper, who made it his buſineſs to decoy ſtrangers in that manner to one of his own haunts, where an accomplice or two were always waiting to aſſiſt in pillaging the prey he had run

down. Here the good man recounted a great many ſtories of people who had been ſeduced, cheated, pilfered, beat,—nay, even murdered by ſuch villains. I was confounded at the artifice and wickedneſs of mankind; and Strap, lifting up his eyes and hands to heaven, prayed that God would deliver him from ſuch ſcenes of iniquity, for ſurely the devil had ſet up his throne in London. Our landlord being curious to know what reception we had met with at Mr Cringer's, we acquainted him with the particulars, at which he ſhook his head, and told us, we had not gone the right way to work; that there was nothing to be done with a m—b—r of p—m—t, without a bribe; that the ſervant was commonly infected with the maſter's diſeaſe, and expected to be paid for his work, as well as his betters. He therefore adviſed me to give the footman a ſhilling the next time I ſhould deſire admittance to my patron, or elſe I ſhould ſcarce find an opportunity to deliver my letter. Accordingly, next morning, when the door was opened, I ſlipt a ſhilling into his hand, and told him I had a letter for his maſter. I found the good effects of my liberality; for the fellow let me in immediately, and taking the letter out of my hand, deſired me to wait in a kind of paſſage for an anſwer. In this place I continued ſtanding for three quarters of an hour, during which time I ſaw a great many young fellows, whom I formerly knew in Scotland, paſs and repaſs, with an air of familiarity, in their way to and from the audience-chamber; while I was fain to ſtand ſhivering in the cold, and turn my back to them, that they might not perceive the lowneſs of my condition. At length, Mr Cringer came out to ſee a young gentleman to the door, who was no other than ſquire Gawky, dreſſed in a very gay ſuit of clothes: at parting, Mr Cringer ſhook him by the hand, and told him he hoped to have the pleaſure of his company at dinner. Then turning about towards me, aſked what were my commands: when he underſtood I was the perſon who had brought the letter from Mr Crab, he affected to recollect my name, which, however, he pretended he could not do till he had conſulted the letter again; to ſave him the trouble, I told him my name was Random. Upon which he went

on,

on, "Ay, ay, Random, Random, Random—I think I "remember the name;" and very well he might, for this very individual Mr Cringer had many a time rode before my grandfather's cloak-bag, in quality of a footman.—— "Well, (says he), you propose to go on board a man of "war, as surgeon's mate." I replied by a low bow. "I "believe it will be a difficult matter (continued he) to "procure a warrant, there being already such a swarm of "Scotch surgeons at the navy office, in expectation of "the next vacancy, that the commissioners are afraid of "being torn to pieces, and have actually applied for "a guard to protect them. However, some ships will "soon be put in commission, and then we shall see what's "to be done." So saying, he left me exceedingly mortified at the different reception Mr Gawky and I had met with from this upstart, proud, mean member, who (I imagined) would have been glad of an opportunity to be grateful for the obligations he owed to my family.

At my return, I was surprised with the agreeable news of Strap's being employed on the recommendation of his friend the schoolmaster, by a periwig-maker in the neighbourhood, who allowed him five shillings per week, besides bed and board. I continued to dance attendance every other morning at the levee of Mr Cringer, during a fortnight; in which time I became acquainted with a young fellow of my own country and profession, who also depended on the member's interest; but was treated with much more respect than I, both by the servants and master, and often admitted into a parlour, where there was a fire for the convenience of the better sort of those who waited for him.—Thither I was never permitted to penetrate, on account of my appearance, which was not at all fashionable; but was obliged to stand blowing my fingers in a cold lobby, and take the first opportunity of Mr Cringer's going to the door, to speak with him.—One day, while I enjoyed this occasion, a person was introduced, whom Mr Cringer no sooner saw, than running towards him, he saluted him with a bow to the very ground, and afterwards shaking him by the hand with great heartiness and familiarity, called him his good friend, and asked very kindly after Mrs Staytape and the young ladies; then,

after

after a whiſper, which continued ſome minutes, wherein I overheard the word *Honour* repeated ſeveral times with great emphaſis, Mr Cringer introduced me to this gentleman, as to a perſon whoſe advice and aſſiſtance I might depend upon, and having given me his direction, followed me to the door, where he told me, I need not give myſelf the trouble to call at his houſe any more, for Mr Staytape would do my buſineſs. At that inſtant my fellow-dependent coming out after me, overheard the diſcourſe of Mr Cringer, and making up to me in the ſtreet, accoſted me very civilly: This addreſs I looked upon as no ſmall honour, conſidering the figure he made; for he was dreſſed in a blue frock with a gold button, a green ſilk waiſtcoat trimmed with gold, black velvet breeches, white ſilk ſtockings, ſilver buckles, a gold-laced hat, a ſpencer-wig, and a ſilver-hilted hanger, with a fine clouded cane in his hand.—"I perceive (ſays he) you are but "lately come from Scotland;—pray what may your bu-"ſineſs with Mr Cringer be? I ſuppoſe it is no ſecret—"and I may poſſibly give you ſome advice that will be "ſerviceable; for I have been ſurgeon's ſecond mate on "board of a ſeventy gun ſhip, and conſequently know a "good deal of the world." I made no ſcruple to diſcloſe my ſituation, which, when he had learned, he ſhook his head, and told me he had been pretty much in the ſame circumſtances about a year ago; that he had relied on Cringer's promiſes, until his money (which was conſiderable) as well as his credit, was quite exhauſted; and when he wrote to his relations for a freſh ſupply, inſtead of money, he received nothing but reproaches, and the epithets of idle, debauched fellow:—That after he had waited at the navy office many months for a warrant to no purpoſe, he was fain to pawn ſome of his clothes, which raiſed a ſmall ſum, wherewith he bribed the f——t—y, who ſoon procured a warrant for him, notwithſtanding he had affirmed the ſame day, that there was not one vacancy:—That he had gone on board, where he remained nine months; at the end of which the ſhip was put out of commiſſion; and he ſaid the company were to be paid off in Broad-ſtreet the very next day:—That his relations being reconciled to him, had charged

him

him to pay his devoirs regularly to Mr Cringer, who had informed them by letter, that his intereſt alone had procured the warrant; in obedience to which command, he came to his levee every morning, as I ſaw, though he looked upon him to be a very pitiful ſcoundrel. In concluſion, he aſked me if I had yet paſſed at Surgeons hall? To which queſtion I anſwered, I did not ſo much as know it was neceſſary—Neceſſary! (cried he) "O Lord, O "Lord! I find I muſt inſtruct you—come along with "me, and I'll give you ſome information about that mat-"ter."—So ſaying, he carried me into an ale-houſe, where he called for ſome beer, and bread and cheeſe, on which we breakfaſted. While we ſat in this place, he told me I muſt firſt go to the navy-office, and write to the Board, deſiring them to order a letter for me to ſurgeons-hall, that I might be examined touching my ſkill in ſurgery:—That the ſurgeons, after having examined me, would give me my qualification ſealed up in form of a letter directed to the commiſſioners, which qualification I muſt deliver to the ſecretary of the board, who would open it in my preſence, and read the contents:—After which I muſt employ my intereſt to be provided for as ſoon as poſſible:—That the expence of his qualification for ſecond mate of a third rate, amounted to thirteen ſhillings, excluſive of the warrant, which coſt him half-a-guinea and half-a-crown, beſides the preſent to the ſecretary, which conſiſted of a three pound twelve piece. This calculation was like a thunder-bolt to me, whoſe whole fortune did not amount to twelve ſhillings. I accordingly made him acquainted with this part of my diſtreſs, after having thanked him for his information and advice. He condoled me on this occaſion; but bade me be of good cheer, for he had conceived a friendſhip for me, and would make all things eaſy.—He was run out at preſent, but to-morrow or next day he was certain of receiving a conſiderable ſum; of which he would lend me what would be ſufficient to anſwer my exigencies. This frank declaration pleaſed me ſo much, that I pulled out my purſe and emptied it before him, begging him to take what he pleaſed for pocket-expence, until he ſhould receive his own money.—With a good deal of preſſing, he

was

was prevailed upon to take five ſhillings, telling me, that he might have what money he wanted at any time for the trouble of going into the city; but as he had met with me, he would defer his going thither till to-morrow, when I ſhould go along with him, and he would put me in a way of acting for myſelf, without a ſervile dependance on that raſcal Cringer, much leſs on the louſy tailor to whom he heard him turn me over.—"How, (cried I) is "Mr Staytape a tailor?" "No leſs, I'll aſſure you "(anſwered he), and I confeſs, more likely to ſerve you "than the member: for, provided you can entertain him "with politics and conundrums, you may have credit with "him for as many and as rich clothes as you pleaſe."—I told him, I was utterly ignorant of both, and ſo incenſed at Cringer's uſage, that I would never ſet foot within his door again. After a good deal more converſation, my new acquaintance and I parted, having made an appointment to meet next day at the ſame place, in order to ſet out for the city. I went immediately to Strap, and related every thing which had happened, but he did not at all approve of my being ſo forward to lend money to a ſtranger, eſpecially as we had already been ſo much impoſed upon by appearances. "However, (ſaid he,) if you are "ſure he is a Scotchman, I believe you are ſafe."

CHAP. XVI.

My new acquaintance breaks an appointment—I proceed, by myſelf, to the Navy-office—addreſs myſelf to a perſon there, who aſſiſts me with his advice—write to the Board—they grant me a letter to the Surgeons at the Hall—I am informed of the beau's name and character—find him—he makes me his confident in an amour—deſires me to pawn my linen for his occaſions—I recover what I lent him—ſome curious obſervations of Strap *on that occaſion—his vanity.*

IN the morning I roſe and went to the place of rendezvous, where I waited two hours in vain; and was ſo exaſperated againſt him for breaking his appointment, that I ſet out for the city by myſelf, in hope of finding the villain

him, and being revenged on him for his breach of promiſe. At length I found myſelf at the navy-office, which I entered, and ſaw crowds of young fellows walking below; many of whom made no better appearance than myſelf. I conſulted the phyſiognomy of each, and at laſt made up to one whoſe countenance I lik'd; and aſked, if he could inſtruct me in the form of the letter which was to be ſent to the Board to obtain an order for examination: He anſwered me in broad Scotch, that he would ſhew me the copy of what he had writ for himſelf, by the direction of another who knew the form: and accordingly pulled it out of his pocket for my peruſal; and told me, that if I was expeditious, I might ſend it in to the Board before dinner, for they did no buſineſs in the afternoon. He then went with me to a coffeehouſe hard by, where I wrote the letter, which was immediately delivered to the meſſenger, who told me, I might expect an order to-morrow about the ſame time.—Having tranſacted this piece of buſineſs, my mind was a good deal compos'd; and as I had met with ſo much civility from this ſtranger, I deſired further acquaintance with him, fully reſolved however, not to be deceived by him ſo much to my prejudice as I had been by the beau. He agreed to dine with me at the cook's ſhop which I frequented; and on our way thither, carried me to 'Change, where I was in ſome hopes of finding Mr Jackſon (for that was the name of the perſon who had broke his appointment)—I ſought him there to no purpoſe, and on our way towards the other end of the town, imparted to my companion his behaviour towards me: upon which, he gave me to underſtand, that he was no ſtranger to the name of beau Jackſon (ſo he was called at the navy office) although he did not know him perſonally; that he had the character of a good natur'd careleſs fellow, who made no ſcruple of borrowing from any body that would lend; that moſt people who knew him, believed he had a good principle at bottom; but his extravagance was ſuch, he would probably never have it in his power to manifeſt the honeſty of his intention. This account made me ſweat for my five ſhillings, which I nevertheleſs did not altogether deſpair of recovering, provided I could find out the debtor.

This young man likewiſe added another circumſtance of Squire Jackſon's hiſtory, which was, that being deſtitute of all means to equip himſelf for ſea when he received his laſt warrant, he had been recommended to a perſon who lent him a little money, after he had ſigned a will and power, intitling that perſon to lift his wages when they ſhould become due, as alſo to inherit his effects in caſe of his death.—That he was ſtill under the tutorage and direction of that gentleman, who advanced him ſmall ſum from time to time upon this ſecurity, at the rate of 50 *per cent.* But at preſent his credit was very low, becauſe his funds would do little more than pay what he had already received, this moderate intereſt included. After the ſtranger (whoſe name was Thomſon) had entertained me with this account of Jackſon, he informed me that he himſelf had paſſed for third mate of a third rate, about four months ago; ſince which time, he had conſtantly attended at the navy office, in hope of a warrant, having been aſſured from the beginning, both by a Scotch member and one of the commiſſioners to whom the member recommended him, that he ſhould be put into the firſt vacancy; notwithſtanding which promiſe, he had the mortification to ſee ſix or ſeven appointed in the ſame ſtation almoſt every week—that now being utterly impoveriſh'd, his ſole hope conſiſted in the promiſe of a friend lately come to town, to lend him a ſmall matter, for a preſent to the ſ——t—y; without which he was perſuaded he might wait a thouſand years to no purpoſe. I conceived a mighty liking for this young fellow, which (I believe) proceeded from the ſimilitude of our fortunes: We ſpent the whole day together; and as he lived at Wapping, I deſired him to take a ſhare of my bed. Next day we returned to the navy-office, where, after being called before the board, and queſtion'd about the place of my nativity and education, they ordered a letter to be made out for me, which, upon paying half a crown to the clerk, I received, and delivered into the hands of the clerk at Surgeon's Hall, together with a ſhilling for his trouble in regiſtering my name. By this time my whole ſtock was diminiſhed to two ſhillings, and I ſaw not the leaſt proſpect of relief, even for preſent ſubſiſtence,

ence, much leſs to enable me to pay the fees at Surgeons-Hall for my examination, which would come on in a fortnight. In this ſtate of perplexity I conſulted Strap, who aſſured me he would pawn every thing he had in the world, even to his razors, before I ſhould want: but this expedient I abſolutely rejected, telling him, I would a thouſand times rather liſt for a ſoldier, of which I had ſome thoughts, than be any longer a burden to him. At the word ſoldier, he grew pale as death, and begged on his knees I would think no more of that ſcheme. "God "preſerve us all in our right wits! (cried he) would you "turn ſoldier, and perhaps be ſent abroad againſt the "Spaniards, where you muſt ſtand and be ſhot at like a "woodcock?—Heaven keep cold lead out of my car-"caſe! and let me die in a bed like a Chriſtian, as all "my forefathers have done!—What ſignifies all the rich-"es and honours of this life, if one enjoys not content? "and in the next, there is no reſpect of perſons. Bet-"ter be a poor honeſt barber with a good conſcience, and "time to repent of my ſins upon my death-bed, than be "cut off (God bleſs us) by a muſket-ſhot, as it were in "the very flower of one's age, in the purſuit of riches "and fame. What ſignify riches (my dear friend?) do "they not make unto themſelves wings, as the wiſe man "ſaith? and does not Horace obſerve, *Non domus aut* "*fundus, non æris acervus aut auri ægroto domini deduxit* "*corpore febrem, non animo curas?*—I could moreover men-"tion many other ſayings in contempt of riches, both "from the Bible and other good books; but as I know "you are not very fond of thoſe things, I ſhall only aſ-"ſure you, that if you take on to be a ſoldier, I will do "the ſame; and then if we ſhould both be ſlain, you will "not only have your own blood to anſwer for, but mine al-"ſo: and peradventure the lives of all thoſe whom we "ſhall kill in battle. Therefore I pray you, conſider "whether you will ſit down contented with ſmall things, "and ſhare the fruits of my induſtry in peace, till Pro-"vidence ſhall ſend better tidings; or by your deſpair, "plunge both our ſouls and bodies into everlaſting per-"dition, which God of his infinite mercy forbid." I could not help ſmiling at this harangue, which was deli-

vered with great earneſtneſs, the tears ſtanding in his eyes all the time: and promiſed to do nothing of that ſort without his conſent and concurrence. He was much comforted with this declaration; and told me, in a few days he ſhould receive a week's wages, which ſhould be at my ſervice, but adviſed me in the mean time to go in queſt of Jackſon, and recover, if poſſible, what he had borrowed of me. I accordingly trudg'd about from one end of the town to the other, for ſeveral days, without being able to learn any thing certain concerning him: and, one day, being extremely hungry, and allur'd by the ſteams that regal'd my noſtrils from a boiling cellar, I went down with an intention to gratify my appetite with a twopennyworth of beef; when, to my no ſmall ſurpriſe, I found Mr Jackſon ſitting at dinner with a footman. He no ſooner perceived me than he got up and ſhook me by the hand, ſaying, "He was glad to ſee me, "for he intended to have call'd at my lodgings in the "afternoon," I was ſo well pleas'd with this rencounter, and the apologies he made for not keeping his appointment, that I forgot my reſentment, and ſat down to dinner, with the happy expectation of not only recovering my own money before we ſhould part, but alſo of reaping the benefit of his promiſe to lend me wherewithal to paſs examination; and this hope my ſanguine complexion ſuggeſted, though the account Thomſon gave me of him ought to have moderated my expectation. When we had feaſted ſumptuouſly, he took his leave of the footman, and adjourned with me to an ale-houſe hard by, where, after ſhaking me by the hand again, he began thus, "I ſuppoſe you think me a ſad dog, Mr Random, "and I do confeſs that appearances are againſt me.— "But I dare ſay you will forgive me when I tell you, "my not coming at the time appointed was owing to a "peremptory meſſage I receiv'd from a certain lady, "whom—harkee (but this is a great ſecret) I am to mar- "ry very ſoon:—You think this ſtrange perhaps, but it "is not leſs true for all that:—a five thouſand pounder, "I'll aſſure you, beſides expectations:—For my own part, "devil take me if I know what any woman can ſee en- "gaging about me—but a whim you know,—and then

"one

" one would not baulk one's good fortune.—You ſaw " that footman who din'd with us,—he's one of the ho- " neſteſt fellows that ever wore livery:—You muſt know, " it was by his means I was introduced to her, for he " made me firſt acquainted with her woman, who is his " miſtreſs—ay, many a crown has he and his ſweetheart " had of my money—but what of that! things are now " brought to a bearing.—I have—(come a little this way) " I have propos'd marriage, and the day is fix'd—ſhe's " a charming creature! and writes like an angel.—O " Lord! ſhe can repeat all the Engliſh tragedies as well " as e'er a player in Drury Lane!—and indeed is ſo fond " of plays, that to be near the ſtage, ſhe has taken lod- " gings in a court hard by the theatre—but you ſhall ſee— " you ſhall ſee—here's the laſt letter ſhe ſent me" With theſe words he put it into my hand, and I read (to the beſt of my remembrance) as follows;

" Deer Kreeter,

" AS you are the animable hopjack of my contem- " playſhins, your aydear is infernally ſkimming " before my keymerycal fanſee, when Murfy ſends his " puppies to the heys of ſlipping mortals; and when " Febus ſhines from his merrydying throne: whereup- " on, I ſhall canfeeif old whorie time has loſt his pin- " ners, as alſo cubit his harrows, until thou enjoy ſweet " propoſe in the loafseek harms of thy faithfool to com- " mend,

" Wingar-Yeard Droory-Lane, January 12th. } " CLAYRENDER.

While I was reading, he ſeemed to be in an ecſtacy, rubbing his hands, and burſting out into fits of laughter; at laſt he caught hold of my hand, and ſqueezing it, cried, " There is ſtyle for you! what do you think of this bil- " letdoux?" I anſwer'd, It might be ſublime for ought I " know, for it was altogether above my comprehenſion." " O ho! (ſaid he) I believe it is—both tender and ſub- " lime—ſhe's a divine creature! and ſo doats upon me! " Let me ſee—what ſhall I do with this money, when I

have

" have once got it into my hands?—In the firſt place I " ſhall do for you—I'm a man of few words—but, ſay " no more,—that's determin'd—whether would you ad- " viſe me to purchaſe ſome poſt, by which I may riſe in " the ſtate; or lay out my wife's fortune in land, and " retire to the country at once?" I gave my opinion without hesitation, that he could not do better than buy an eſtate and improve; eſpecially ſince he had already ſeen ſo much of the world. Then I launch'd out into the praiſes of a country life, as deſcrib'd by the poets whoſe works I had read. He ſeem'd to reliſh my advice, but withal told me, that although he had ſeen a great deal of the world both at land and ſea, having cruiz'd three whole months in the channel, yet he ſhould not be ſatisfied until he had viſited France, which he propos'd to do before he ſhould ſettle; and to carry his wife along with him—I had nothing to object to his propoſal; and aſk'd how ſoon he hoped to be happy.—" As to that (he re- " plied) nothing obſtructs my happineſs but the want of " a little ready cash—for you muſt know, my friend in " the city has gone out of town for a week or two; and " I unfortunately miſſed my pay at Broad-ſtreet, by being " detain'd too long by the dear charmer—but there will " be a recal at Chatham next week, whither the ſhip's " books are ſent, and I have commiſſion'd a friend in " that place to receive the money."—" If that be all " (ſaid I) there's no great harm in deferring your mar- " riage a few days." " Yes, faith! but there is (ſaid he) " you don't know how many rivals I have, who would " take all advantages againſt me. I would not baulk the " impatience of her paſſion for the world—the leaſt ap- " pearance of coldneſs and indifference would ruin all: " and ſuch offers don't occur every day." I acquieſced in this obſervation, and inquir'd how he intended to proceed. At this queſtion he rubb'd his chin, and ſaid, " Why, truly, I muſt be oblig'd to ſome friend or other " —do you know no body that would lend me a ſmall " ſum for a day or two?"—I aſſur'd him, I was ſuch an utter ſtranger in London, that I did not believe I could borrow a guinea if my life depended upon it. "No (ſaid " he) that's hard—that's hard—I wiſh I had any thing

" to

" to pawn—upon my ſoul, you have got excellent linen " (feeling the ſleeve of my ſhirt) how many ſhirts of that " kind have you got?" I anſwer'd, " Six ruffled, and " ſix plain."—At which he teſtified great ſurpriſe, and ſwore that no gentleman ought to have more than four. —" How many d'ye think I have got (continued he;) " but this and another as I hope to be ſav'd! and I dare " ſay we ſhall be able to raiſe a good ſum out of your " ſuperfluity—let me ſee—let me ſee—each of theſe " ſhirts are worth ſixteen ſhillings at a moderate " computation—now ſuppoſe we pawn them for half " price—eight times eight is ſixty-four, that's three " pounds four: z—ds! that will do—give me your " hand."—" Softly, ſoftly, Mr Jackſon (ſaid I) don't " diſpoſe of my linen without my conſent: firſt pay " me the crown you owe me, and then we ſhall " talk of other matters." He proteſted he had not above one ſhilling in his pocket, but that he would pay me out of the firſt of the money raiſed from the ſhirts. This piece of aſſurance incenſed me ſo much, that I ſwore I would not part with him until I had received ſatisfaction for what I had lent him, and as for the ſhirts, I would not pawn one of them to ſave him from the gallows.—At this expreſſion he laughed aloud, and then complained it was damn'd hard that I ſhould refuſe him a trifle that would infallibly enable him not only to make his own fortune, but mine alſo. " You talk of pawning my ſhirts, (ſaid I,) " ſuppoſe you ſhould ſell this hanger, Mr Jackſon? I be- " lieve it would fetch a good round ſum." " No, hang " it, (ſaid he,) I can't appear decently without my hang- " er, or elſe it ſhould go." However, finding me inflexible with regard to my linen, he at length unbuckled his ſum-ter, and throwing me the ſign of the blue bull, deſired me to carry it thither and pawn it for two guineas. This office I would by no means be prevailed, had I ſeen any likelihood of having my money other-wiſe; but not willing to ſtick at a piece of roguery, to get the only opportunity I had, I, like a knave, went and pawned the ſword for two guineas, and demanded two guineas and a ſixpence of Thomas Williams.

" Two

" Two guineas, (ſaid the pawn-broker, looking at the " hanger,) this piece of goods has been here ſeveral times " before for thirty ſhillings; however, ſince I believe the " gentleman to whom it belongs will redeem it, he ſhall " have what he wants;" and accordingly he paid me the money, which I carried to the houſe where I had left Jackſon, and calling for change, counted out to him ſeven and thirty ſhillings, reſerving the other five for myſelf. After looking at the money ſome time, he ſaid, " D—n it! " it don't ſignify—this won't do my buſineſs; ſo you " may as well take half a guinea or a whole one, as the " five ſhillings you have kept." I thanked him kindly, but refuſed to accept of any more than was my due, becauſe I had no proſpect of repaying it.—Upon which declaration, he ſtared in my face, and told me, I was exceſſively raw, or I would not talk in that manner. " Blood, " (cried he,) I have a very bad opinion of a young fellow " who won't borrow of his friend when he is in want— " 'tis the ſign of a ſneaking ſpirit. Come, come, Random, " give me back the five ſhillings, and take this half gui- " nea; and if ever you are able to pay me, I believe you " will; if not, d—n me if ever I aſk it." When I reflected upon my preſent neceſſity, I ſuffered myſelf to be perſuaded, and after making my acknowledgments to Mr Jackſon, who offered to treat me with a play, I returned to my lodgings with a much better opinion of this gentleman than I had in the morning: and at night, imparted my day's adventure to Strap, who rejoiced at my good luck, ſaying, " I told you, if he was a Scotchman, you " was ſafe enough—and who knows but this marriage " may make us all.—You have heard, I ſuppoſe, as how " a countryman of ours, a journeyman baker, ran away " with a great lady of this town, and now keeps his " coach—Egad! I ſay nothing; but yeſterday morning " as I was ſhaving a gentleman at his own houſe, there " was a young lady in the room—a fine buxom wench, i' " faith! and ſhe threw ſo many ſheep's eyes at a cer- " tain perſon, whom I ſhall not name, that my heart " went knock, knock, knock, like a fulling mill, and my " hand ſh—ſh—ſhook ſo much that I ſlaced a piece of " ſkin out of the gentleman's noſe; whereby he ſwore a

" deadly,

" deadly oath, and was going to horſewhip me, when ſhe " prevented him, and made my peace.—*Omen haud ma-* " *lum!* Is not a journeyman barber as good as a journey- " man baker? The only difference is, the baker uſes " flower for the belly, and the barber uſes it for the head: " and as the head is a more noble member than the bel- " ly, ſo is a barber more noble than a baker—for what's " the belly without the head?—Beſides, I am told, he " could neither read nor write; now you know I can do " both; and moreover ſpeak Latin—But I will ſay no " more, for I deſpiſe vanity—nothing is more vain than " vanity." With theſe words, he pulled out of his pock- et a wax candle's end, which he applied to his forehead; and, upon examination, I found he had combed his own hair over the toupee of his wig, and was indeed, in his whole dreſs, become a very ſmart ſhaver. I congratulated him on his proſpect with a ſatirical ſmile, which he under- ſtood very well; and ſhaking his head, obſerved I had very little faith, but the truth would come to light in ſpite of my incredulity.

CHAP. XVII.

I go to Surgeons Hall, where I meet with Mr Jackſon—*am examined—a fierce diſpute ariſes between two of the examiners*—Jackſon *diſguiſes himſelf to attract reſpect—is detected—in hazard of being ſent to Bridewell—he treats us at a tavern—carries us to a night-houſe—a troubleſome adventure there—we are committed to the Round-houſe—carried before a Juſtice—his behaviour.*

WITH the aſſiſtance of this faithful adherent, who gave me almoſt all the money he earned, I preſerved my half guinea entire till the day of examination, when I went with a quaking heart to Surgeons Hall, in order to undergo that ceremony. Among a croud of young fellows who walked in the outward hall, I perceived Mr Jackſon, to whom I immediately went up, and, inquiring into the ſtate of his amour, underſtood it was ſtill undetermined, by reaſon of his friend's abſence, and the delay of the recal at Chatham, which put it out of

his power to bring it to a concluſion. I then aſked what his buſineſs was in this place; he replied, he was reſolved to have two ſtrings to his bow, that in caſe the one failed, he might uſe the other; and with this view, he was to paſs that night for a higher qualification. At that inſtant a young fellow came out fromthe place of examination, with a pale countenance, his lip quivering, and his looks as wild as if he had ſeen a ghoſt. He no ſooner appeared, than we all flocked about him with the utmoſt eagerneſs to know what reception he had met with; which (after ſome pauſe) he deſcribed, recounting all the queſtions they had aſked, with the anſwers he made. In this manner we obliged no leſs than twelve to recapitulate, which, now the danger was paſt, they did with pleaſure, before it fell to my lot: at length the beadle called my name, with a voice that made me tremble as much as if it had been the ſound of the laſt trumpet. However, there was no remedy, I was conducted into a large hall, where I ſaw about a dozen of grim faces ſitting at a long "table; one of whom bade me come forward in ſuch an imperious tone, that I was actually for a minute or two bereft of my ſenſes. The firſt queſtion he put to me was, "Where was you born?" To which I anſwered, In Scotland. "In Scotland, (ſaid he,) I know that very well— "we have ſcarce any other countrymen to examine here "—you Scotchmen have overſpread us of late as the lo- "cuſts did Egypt:—I aſk you in what part of Scotland was "you born?" I named the place of my nativity, which he had never before heard of: he then proceeded to interrogate me about my age, the town where I ſerved my time, with the term of my apprenticeſhip: and when I informed him that I ſerved three years only, he fell into a violent paſſion, ſwore it was a ſhame and a ſcandal to ſend ſuch raw boys into the world as ſurgeons; that it was great preſumption in me, and an affront upon the Engliſh, to pretend ſufficient ſkill in my buſineſs having ſerved ſo ſhort a time, when every apprentice in England was bound ſeven years at leaſt; that my friends would have done better if they had made me a weaver or ſhoemaker, but their pride would have me a gentleman (he ſuppoſed,) at any rate, and their poverty could not afford the

the neceſſary education. This exordium did not at all contribute to the recovery of my ſpirits, but, on the contrary, reduced me to ſuch a ſituation that I was ſcarcely able to ſtand; which being perceived by a plump gentleman who ſat oppoſite to me with a ſkull before him, he ſaid, Mr Snarler was too ſevere upon the young man; and turning towards me, told me, I need not be afraid, for nobody would do me any harm: then bidding me take time to recollect myſelf, he examined me touching the operation of the trepan, and was very well ſatisfied with my anſwers. The next perſon who queſtioned me was a wag, who began by aſking if I had ever ſeen amputation performed; and I replying in the affirmative, he ſhook his head and ſaid, "What! upon a dead ſubject, I ſuppoſe? If, (continued he,) during an engagement at ſea, "a man ſhould be brought to you with his head ſhot "off, how would you behave?" After ſome heſitation, I owned ſuch a caſe had never come under my obſervation; neither did I remember to have ſeen any method of cure propoſed for ſuch an accident, in any of the ſyſtems of ſurgery I had peruſed. Whether it was owing to the ſimplicity of my anſwer, or the archneſs of the queſtion, I know not, but every member at the Board deigned to ſmile, except Mr Snarler, who ſeemed to have very little of the *animal riſibile* in his conſtitution. The facetious member, encouraged by the ſucceſs of his laſt joke, went on thus: "Suppoſe you was called to a patient of "a plethoric habit, who had been bruiſed by a fall, what "would you do?" I anſwered, I would bleed him immediately. "What, (ſaid he,) before you had tied up "his arm?" But this ſtroke of wit not anſwering his expectation, he deſired me to advance to the gentleman who ſat next him; and who, with a pert air, aſked what method of cure I would follow in wounds of the inteſtines. I repeated the method of cure as it is preſcribed by the beſt chirurgical writers, which he heard to an end, and then ſaid with a ſupercilious ſmile, "So, you think "with ſuch treatment the patient might recover;" I told him I ſaw nothing to make me think otherwiſe. "That "may be, (reſumed he,) I won't anſwer for your ſuc-"ceſs; —but did you ever know a caſe of this kind ſuc-

" ceed ?" I acknowledged I did not, and was about to tell " him I had never ſeen a wounded inteſtine; but he ſtops me, by ſaying, with ſome precipitation, " nor never will. " I affirm, that all wounds of the inteſtines, whether " great or ſmall, are mortal." " Pardon me, brother, " (ſays the fat gentleman.) there is very good authority," —Here he was interrupted by the other, with " Sir, ex- " cuſe me, I deſpiſe all authority—*Nullius in verba*—I " ſtand upon my own bottom."—" But, Sir, Sir, (replied " his antagoniſt,) the reaſon of the thing ſhews." " A fig " for reaſon (cried this ſufficient member) I laugh at rea- " ſon, give me occular demonſtration." The corpulent gentleman began to wax warm, and obſerved, that no man acquainted with the anatomy of the parts, would advance ſuch an extravagant aſſertion. This *inuendo* enraged the other ſo much, that he ſtarted up, and in a furious tone exclaimed: " What, Sir! do you queſtion my " knowledge in anatomy?" By this time all the examiners had eſpouſed the opinion of one or other of the diſputants, and raiſed their voices altogether, when the chairman commanded ſilence, and ordered me to withdraw. In leſs than a quarter of an hour I was called in again, received my qualification ſealed up, and was ordered to pay five ſhillings. I laid down my half guinea upon the table, and ſtood ſome time, until one of them bade me begone; to this I replied, I will, when I have got my change; upon which another threw me five ſhillings and ſixpence, ſaying, I ſhould not be a true Scotchman if I went away without my change. I was afterwards obliged to give three ſhillings and ſixpence to the beadles, and a ſhilling to an old woman who ſwept the hall: this diſburſement ſunk my finances to thirteen-pence half-penny, with which I was ſneaking off, when Jackſon perceiving it, came up to me, and begged I would tarry for him, and he would accompany me to the other end of the town, as ſoon as his examination ſhould be over. I could not refuſe this to a perſon that was ſo much my friend, but I was aſtoniſhed at the change of his dreſs, which was varied in half an hour from what I have already deſcribed to a very groteſque faſhion. His head was covered with an old ſmoaked tye-wig that did not boaſt one crooked hair,

hair, and a flouched hat over it, which would have very well become a chimney-ſweeper or a duſt-man; his neck was adorned with a black crape, the ends of which he had twiſted, and fixed in the button-hole of a ſhabby great coat that wrapped up his whole body; his white ſilk ſtockings were converted into black worſted hoſe; and his countenance was rendered venerable by wrinkles and a beard of his own painting.—When I expreſſed my ſurpriſe at this metamorphoſis, he laughed, and told me it was done by the advice and aſſiſtance of a friend, who lived over the way, and would certainly produce ſomething very much to his advantage; for it gave him the appearance of age, which never fails of attracting reſpect. I applauded his ſagacity, and waited with impatience for the effects of it. At length he was called in, but whether the oddneſs of his appearance excited a curioſity more than uſual in the Board, or his behaviour was not ſuitable to his figure I know not, he was diſcovered to be an impoſtor, and put into the hands of the beadle in order to be ſent to Bridewell. So that, inſtead of ſeeing him come out with a chearful countenance, and a ſurgeon's qualification in his hand, I perceived him led through the outward hall as a priſoner; and was very much alarmed and anxious to know the occaſion; when he called with a lamentable voice and a piteous aſpect to me, and ſome others who knew him, "For God's ſake, gentle-"men, bear witneſs that I am the ſame individual John "Jackſon who ſerved as ſurgeon's ſecond mate on board "the Elizabeth, or elſe I ſhall go to Bridewell." It would have been impoſſible for the moſt auſtere hermit that ever lived to have refrained from laughing at his appearance and addreſs; we therefore indulged ourſelves a good while at his expence, and afterwards pleaded his cauſe ſo effectually with the beadle, who was gratified with half a crown, that the priſoner was diſmiſſed; and in a few moments renewed his former gaiety; ſwearing, ſince the Board had refuſed his money, he would ſpend it every ſhilling before he went to bed, in treating his friends; at the ſame time inviting us all to favour him with our company. It was now ten o'clock at night, and, as I had a great way to walk through ſtreets that were utterly

utterly unknown to me, I was prevailed on to be of their party, in hopes he would afterwards accompany me to my lodgings, according to his promiſe. He conducted us to his friend's houſe, who kept a tavern over the way, where we continued drinking punch, until the liquor mounted up to our heads, and made us all extremely frolickſome: I, in particular, was ſo much elevated, that nothing would ſerve me but a wench; at which demand Jackſon expreſſed much joy, and aſſured me I ſhould have my deſire before we parted. Accordingly, when he had paid the reckoning, we ſallied out, roaring and ſinging; and were conducted by our leader to a place of nocturnal entertainment, where I immediately attached myſelf to a fair one, with whom I propoſed to ſpend the remaining part of the night; but ſhe not reliſhing my appearance, refuſed to grant my requeſt, before I ſhould have made her ſome acknowledgment, which not ſuiting with my circumſtances, we broke off our correſpondence, to my no ſmall mortification and reſentment, becauſe I thought the mercenary creature had not done juſtice to my merit. In the mean time, Mr Jackſon's dreſs had attracted the inclinations and aſſiduities of two or three nymphs, who loaded him with careſſes, in return for the arrack punch with which he treated them, till at length, notwithſtanding the ſprightly ſallies of thoſe charmers, Sleep began to exert his power over us all, and our conductor called, "To "pay." When the bill was brought, which amounted to twelve ſhillings, he put his hand in his pocket, but might have ſaved himſelf the trouble, for his purſe was gone. This accident diſconcerted him a good deal at firſt; but, after ſome recollection, he ſeized the two dulcineas, who ſat by him, one in each hand; and ſwore if they did not immediately reſtore his money, he would charge a conſtable with them. The good lady at the bar, ſeeing what paſſed, whiſpered ſomething to the drawer, who went out; and then with great compoſure, aſked what was the matter? Jackſon told her he was robbed, and ſwore if ſhe refuſed him ſatisfaction, he would have her and her whores committed to Bridewell. "Robbed! (cried ſhe,) robbed "in my houſe! Gentlemen and ladies, I take you all to "witneſs, this perſon has ſcandalized my reputation." At

that

that inſtant, ſeeing the conſtable and watch enter, ſhe proceeded, "What! you muſt not only endeavour by your "falſe aſperſions to ruin my character, but even com- "mit an aſſault upon my family? Mr Conſtable, I charge "you with this uncivil perſon, who has been guilty of a "riot here; I ſhall take care and bring an action againſt "him for defamation." While I was reflecting on this melancholy event, which had made me quite ſober, the lady whoſe favours I had ſolicited, being piqued at ſome repartee that paſſed between us, cried, "They are all "concerned;" and deſired the conſtable to take us all into cuſtody, an arreſt which was performed inſtantly, to the utter aſtoniſhment and deſpair of us all, except Jackſon, who having been often in ſuch ſcrapes, was very little concerned, and charged the conſtable, in his turn, with the landlady and her whole bevy: upon which we were carried altogether priſoners to the Round-houſe; where Jackſon (after a word of comfort to us) informed the conſtable of his being robbed, to which he ſaid he would ſwear next morning before the juſtice. "Ay, ay, (ſays "the bawd,) we ſhall ſee whoſe oath will moſt ſignify." In a little time the conſtable calling Jackſon into another room, ſpoke to him thus: "I perceive that you and your "company are ſtrangers, and am very ſorry for your be- "ing involved in ſuch an ugly buſineſs. I have known "this woman a great while; ſhe has kept a notorious "houſe in the neighbourhood this many years; and al- "though often complained of as a nuiſance, ſtill eſcapes "through her intereſt with the J—t—ces, to whom ſhe "and all of her employment pay contribution quarterly "for protection.—As ſhe charged me with you firſt, her "complaint will have the preference, and ſhe can procure "evidence to ſwear whatſoever ſhe ſhall pleaſe to deſire of "them. So that, unleſs you can make it up before "morning, you and your companions may think your- "ſelves happily quit for a month's hard labour in Bride- "well.—Nay, if ſhe ſhould ſwear a robbery or an aſſault "againſt you, you will be committed to Newgate, and "tried at the next ſeſſion at the Old-Bailey for your "life." This laſt piece of information had ſuch an effect upon Jackſon, that he agreed to make it up, provided his money

money might be reſtored. The conſtable told him, that inſtead of retrieving what he had loſt, he was pretty certain it would coſt him ſome more before they could come to any compoſition. But, however, he had compaſſion on him, and would, if he pleaſed, found them about a mutual releaſe. The unfortunate beau thanked him for his friendſhip, and returning to us, acquainted us with the ſubſtance of this dialogue; while the conſtable deſiring to ſpeak in private with our adverſary, carried her into the next room, and pleaded our cauſe ſo effectually, that ſhe condeſcended to make him umpire: he accordingly propoſed an arbitration, to which we gave our aſſent; and he fined each party in three ſhillings, to be laid out in a bowl of punch, wherein we drowned all animoſities, to the inexpreſſible joy of my two late acquaintances and me, who had been in the ſtate of the damned ever ſince Jackſon mentioned Bridewell and Newgate. By the time we had finiſhed our bowl, to which, by the by, I had contributed my laſt ſhilling, it was morning, and I propoſed to move homeward, when the conſtable gave me to underſtand, he could diſcharge no priſoners but by order of the juſtice, before whom we muſt appear. This renewed my chagrin, and I curſed the hour in which I had yielded to Jackſon's invitation. About nine o'clock we were eſcorted to the houſe of a certain juſtice not many miles diſtant from Covent Garden; who no ſooner ſaw the conſtable enter with a train of priſoners at his heels, than he ſaluted him as follows: "So, Mr Conſtable, you are a diligent man.—What den of rogues "have you been ſcouring?" Then looking at us, who appeared very much dejected, he continued; "Ay, ay, "thieves, I ſee—old offenders—O, your humble ſervant, "Mrs Harriſon! I ſuppoſe theſe fellows have been taken robbing your houſe—Yes, yes, here's an old acquaintance of mine—you have uſed expedition (ſaid he "to me,) in returning from tranſportation; but we ſhall "ſave you that trouble for the future—the ſurgeons will "fetch you from your next tranſportation at their expence." I aſſured his worſhip he was miſtaken in me, for he had never ſeen me in his life before. To this declaration he replied, "How! you impudent raſcal, dare "you

" you ſay ſo to my face? Do you think I am to be im-
" poſed upon by that northern accent which you have aſ-
" ſumed? but it ſhan't avail you—you ſhall find me too
" far north for you.—Here, clerk, write this fellow's
" *mittimus*.—His name is Patrick Gaghagan."—Here Mr Jackſon interpoſed, and told him I was a Scotchman lately come to town, deſcended of a good family, and that my name was Random. The juſtice looked upon this aſſertion as an outrage upon his memory, on which he valued himſelf much; and ſtrutting up to Jackſon, with a fierce countenance, put his hands in his ſide, and ſaid, " Who are you, Sir?—Do you give me the lie?—Take
" notice, gentlemen, here's a fellow who affronts me upon
" the bench; but I'll lay you faſt, ſirrah, I will,—for not-
" withſtanding your laced jacket, I believe you are a no-
" torious felon." My friend was ſo much abaſhed at this menace, which was thundered out with great vociferation, that he changed colour, and remained ſpeechleſs. This confuſion his worſhip took for a ſymptom of guilt, and, to complete the diſcovery, continued his threats. " Now, I am convinced you are a thief,—your face diſ-
" covers it,—you tremble all over—your conſcience won't
" lie ſtill—you'll be hanged, ſirrah, (raiſing his voice,)
" you'll be hanged, and happy had it been for the
" world, as well as for your own miſerable ſoul, if you
" had been detected and cut off in the beginning of your
" career.—Come hither, clerk, and take this man's con-
" feſſion." I was in an agony of conſternation, when the conſtable going into another room with his worſhip, acquainted him with the truth of the ſtory; which, having learned, he returned with a ſmiling countenance, and addreſſing himſelf to us all, ſaid, it was always his way to terrify young people when they came before him, that his threats might make a ſtrong impreſſion on their minds, and deter them from engaging in ſcenes of riot and debauchery, which commonly ended before the judge. Thus, having cloaked his own want of diſcernment, under the diſguiſe of paternal care, we were diſmiſſed, and I found myſelf as much lightened as if a mountain had been lifted off my breaſt.

CHAP. XVIII.

*I carry my qualification to the navy-office—the nature of it—the behaviour of the S—t—y—*Strap's *concern for my abſence—a battle betwixt him and a blackſmith—the troubleſome conſequence of it—his harangue to me—his friend the ſchool-maſter recommends me to a* French *apothecary, who entertains me as a journeyman.*

I WOULD willingly have gone home to ſleep, but was told by my companions, that we muſt deliver our letters of qualification at the navy-office before one o'clock: accordingly we went thither and gave them to the S—t—y, who opened and read them, and I was mightily pleaſed to find myſelf qualified for ſecond mate of a third rate. When he had ſtuck them altogether on a file, one of our company aſked if there were any vacancies; to which interrogation he anſwered, No. Then I ventured to inquire if any ſhips were to be put in commiſſion ſoon. At which queſtion, he ſurveyed me with a look of ineffable contempt, and puſhing us out of his office, locked the door without deigning us another word. We went down ſtairs, and conferred together on our expectations, when I underſtood that each of them had been recommended to one or other of the commiſſioners; and each of them promiſed the firſt vacancy that ſhould fall; but that none of them relied ſolely upon that intereſt, without a preſent to the S—t—y, with whom ſome of the C——— went ſnacks. For which reaſon, each of them had provided a ſmall purſe; and I was aſked what I propoſed to give? This was a vexatious queſtion to me, who (far from being in a capacity to gratify a ravenous S—t—y) had not wherewithal to purchaſe a dinner. I therefore anſwered, I had not yet determined what to give; and ſneaked off toward my own lodging, curſing my fate all the way, and inveighing with much bitterneſs againſt the barbarity of my grandfather, and the ſordid avarice of my relations, who left me a prey to contempt and indigence. Full of theſe diſagreeable reflections, I arrived at the houſe where I lodged, and relieved my landlord

landlord from great anxiety on my account; for, this honeſt man believed I had met with ſome diſmal accident, and that he never ſhould ſee me again. Strap, who had come to viſit me in the morning, underſtanding I had been abroad all night, was almoſt diſtracted, and after having obtained leave of his maſter, had gone in queſt of me, tho' he was even more ignorant of the town than I. Not being willing to inform the landlord of my adventure, I told him, I had met an acquaintance at Surgeons Hall, with whom I ſpent the evening and night, but being very much infeſted by bugs, I had not ſlept much, and therefore intended to take a little repoſe; ſo ſaying, I went to bed, and deſired to be awakened if Strap ſhould happen to come while I ſhould be aſleep. I was accordingly rouſed by my friend himſelf, who entered my chamber about three o'clock in the afternoon; and preſented a figure to my eyes that I could ſcarce believe real. In ſhort, this affectionate ſhaver ſetting out towards Surgeons Hall, had inquired for me there to no purpoſe; from thence he found his way to the navy-office, where he could hear no tidings of me, becauſe I was unknown to every body then preſent; he afterwards went upon Change, in hopes of ſeeing me upon the Scotch walk, but without ſucceſs. At laſt, being almoſt in deſpair of finding me, he reſolved to aſk every body he met in the ſtreet, if perchance any one could give him information about me; and actually put his reſolution in practice, in ſpite of the ſcoffs, curſes, and reproaches with which he was anſwered; until a blackſmith's 'prentice ſeeing him ſtop a porter with a burden on his back, and hearing his queſtion, for which he received a hearty curſe, called to him, and aſked if the perſon he inquired after was not a Scotchman?—Strap replied with great eagerneſs, "Yes, and had on a brown coat with long ſkirts." "The ſame, (ſaid the black-"ſmith.) I ſaw him paſs by an hour ago." "Did you "ſo? (cried Strap, rubbing his hands,) Odd! I am very "glad of that—which way went he?" "Towards Ty-"burn in a cart, (ſaid he;) if you make good ſpeed, you "may get thither time enough to ſee him hang'd." This piece of wit incenſed my friend to ſuch a degree, that he called the blackſmith ſcoundrel, and proteſted he

would fight him for half a farthing. "No, no, ſaid the "other, ſtripping,) I'll have none of your money—you "Scotch men ſeldom carry any about you—but I'll fight you "for love." There was a ring immediately formed by the mob: and Strap finding he could not get off honourably without fighting, at the ſame time burning with reſentment againſt his adverſary, quitted his clothes to the care of the multitude, and the battle began with great violence on the ſide of Strap, who in a few minutes exhauſted his breath and ſpirits on his patient antagoniſt, who ſuſtained the aſſault with great coolneſs, till finding the barber quite ſpent, he returned the blows he had lent him, with ſuch intereſt, that Strap, after having received three falls on the hard ſtones, gave out, and allowed the blackſmith to be the better man. The victory being thus decided, it was propoſed to adjourn to a cellar hard by and drink friends. But when my friend began to gather up his clothes, he perceived that ſome honeſt perſon or other had made free with his ſhirt, neckcloth, hat, and wig, which were carried off; and probably his coat and waiſtcoat would have met with the ſame fate, had they been worth ſtealing. It was in vain for him to make a noiſe, which only yielded mirth to the ſpectators; he was fain to get off in this manner, which he accompliſhed with much difficulty, and appeared before me all beſmeared with blood and dirt. Notwithſtanding this misfortune, ſuch was his tranſport at finding me ſafe and ſound, that he had almoſt ſtifled and ſtunk me to death with his embraces. After he had cleaned himſelf, and put on one of my ſhirts, and a woollen night-cap; I recounted to him the particulars of my night's campaign, which filled him with admiration, and made him repeat with great energy an obſervation which was often in his mouth, namely, "that ſurely London "is the devil's drawing-room." As neither of us had dined, he deſired me to get up, and the milk-woman coming round at that inſtant, he went down ſtairs and brought up a quart, with a penny brick, on which we made a comfortable meal. He then ſhared his money with me, which amounted to eighteen pence, and left me with an intention to borrow an old wig and hat of his friend the ſchoolmaſter.

He

He was no ſooner gone than I began to conſider my ſituation with great uneaſineſs, and revolved all the ſchemes my imagination could ſuggeſt, in order to chuſe and purſue ſome one that would procure me bread; for it is impoſſible to expreſs the pangs I felt, when I reflected on the miſerable dependence in which I lived at the expence of a poor barber's boy. My pride took the alarm, and having no hopes of ſucceeding at the navy-office, I came to a reſolution of enliſting in the foot-guards next day, be the event what it would. This extravagant deſign, by flattering my diſpoſition, gave great ſatisfaction, and I was charging the enemy at the head of my own regiment, when Strap's return interrupted my reverie. The ſchoolmaſter had made him a preſent of the tye-wig which he wore when I was introduced to him, together with an old hat, whoſe brims would have overſhadowed a Coloſſus. Though Strap had ventured to wear them in the duſk, he did not chuſe to entertain the mob by day; therefore went to work immediately, and reduced them both to a moderate ſize. While he was employed in this office, he addreſſed me thus: "To be ſure, Mr Random, you are "born a gentleman, and have a great deal of learning— "and indeed look like a gentleman; for as to perſon, you "may hold up your head with the beſt of them.—On the "other hand, I am a poor, but honeſt cobler's ſon—my "mother was as induſtrious a woman as ever broke "bread, 'till ſuch time as ſhe took to drinking, which you "very well know—but every body has failings—*humanum eſt errare*—Now for myſelf, I am a poor journeyman barber, tolerably well made, and underſtand ſome "Latin, and have a ſmattering of Greek—but what of "that? perhaps I might alſo ſay that I know a little of "the world—but that is to no purpoſe—though you be "gentle, and I ſimple, it does not follow, but that I who "am ſimple may do a good office to you who are gentle. "—Now this is the caſe—my kinſman the ſchoolmaſter "—perhaps you did not know how nearly he is related "to me—I'll ſatisfy you in that preſently—his mother "and my grandmother's father's nephew—no, that's not it "—my grandfather's brother's daughter—rabbit it! I "am to get the degrees, but this I know, he and I

"are

" are couſins ſeven times removed." My impatience to know the good office he had done me got the better of my temper, and I interrupted him at this place, with " D—n your relation and pedigree. If the ſchoolmaſ- " ter or you can be of any advantage to me, why don't " you tell me without all this preamble." When I pronounced theſe words with ſome vehemence, Strap looked at me for ſome time with a grave countenance, and then went on: " Surely our pedigree is not to be d—n'd be- " cauſe it is not ſo noble as your's.—I am very ſorry to " ſee ſuch an alteration in your temper of late—you was " always fiery, but now you are grown as crabbed as old " Periwinkle the drunken tinker, on whom you and I, " (God forgive us,) played ſo many unlucky tricks while " we were at ſchool;—but I will no longer detain you in " ſuſpence, becauſe (doubtleſs) nothing is more uneaſy " than doubt—*dubio procul dubio nil dubius.*—My friend " or relation, or which you will, or both, the ſchoolmaſter, " being informed of the regard I have for you—for you " may be ſure I did not fail to let him know of your " good qualities—by the by, he has undertaken to teach " you the pronunciation of the Engliſh tongue, with- " out which (he ſays) you will be unfit for buſineſs " in this country—I ſay my relation has ſpoke in your " behalf to a French apothecary who wants a journey- " man; and on his recommendation you may have fif- " teen pounds *per* year, bed and board, whenever you " pleaſe." I was too much intereſted in this piece of news to entertain it with indifference; but jumping up, inſiſted on Strap's immediately accompanying me to the houſe of his friend, that I might not loſe this opportunity through the leaſt delay or neglect on my part. We were informed that the ſchoolmaſter was in company at a public houſe in the neighbourhood, whither we repaired, and found him drinking with the very individual apothecary in queſtion. When he was called to the door at our deſire, and obſerved my impatience, he broke out into his uſual term of admiration: " O C——ſt! I ſuppoſe " when you heard of this offer, you did not take leiſure " enough to come down ſtairs, but leapt out of the win- " dow; did you overturn no porter nor oyſter woman in

" your

" your way?—It was a mercy of God you did not knock " your brains out againſt ſome poſt in your career.—O " my conſcience! I believe had I been in the inmoſt re- " ceſſes of my habitation,—the very *penetralia*,—even in " bed with my wife, your eagerneſs would have ſur- " mounted bolts, bars, decency, and every thing. The " den of Cacus or *Sanctum Sanctorum* could not have hid " me from you. But come along, the gentleman of whom " I ſpoke is in the houſe, I will preſent you to him forth- " with." When I entered the room, I perceived four or five people ſmoaking, one of whom the ſchoolmaſter accoſted thus: " Mr Lavement, here's the young man of " whom I ſpoke to you." The apothecary, who was a little old withered man, with a forehead about an inch high, a noſe turned up at the end, large cheek bones that helped to form a pit for his little grey eyes, a great bag of looſe ſkin hanging down on each ſide in wrinkles like the alforjos of a baboon; and a mouth ſo much accuſ- tomed to that contraction which produces grinning, that he could not pronounce a ſyllable without diſcovering the remains of his teeth, which conſiſted of four yellow fangs, not improperly, by anatomiſts, called *canine*. This per- ſon, (I ſay,) after having eyed me ſome time; ſaid, " Oho, " 'tis ver well, Monſ. Concordance;—young man, you " are ver welcome, take one coup of bierre—and come " to mine houſe to-marrow morning; Monſ. Concord- " ance vil ſhew you de way." Upon this I made my bow, and as I went out of the room could hear him ſay, *Ma foy! ce'ſt un beau garçon, ce'ſt un galiard.* As I had by my own application, while I ſerved Crab, acquired the French tongue well enough to read authors written in that language, and underſtand any thing that occurred in converſation, I determined to pretend ignorance to my new maſter, that he and his family, whom I ſuppoſed to be of the ſame country, not being on the reſerve before me, might poſſibly diſcover ſomething in diſcourſe, which would either yield me amuſement or advantage. Next morning Mr Concordance carried me to the apothecary's houſe, where the bargain was made, and orders given to provide an apartment for me immediately. But, before I entered upon buſineſs, the ſchoolmaſter recommended me

to

to his tailor, who gave me credit for a ſuit of clothes to be paid out of the firſt moiety of my wages, and they were begun upon that very day; he afterwards accommodated me with a new hat on the ſame terms; ſo that in a few days, I hoped to make a very faſhionable appearance. In the mean time, Strap conveyed my baggage to the place allotted for me, which was a back room up two pair of ſtairs, furniſhed with a pallet for me to lie upon, a chair without a back, an earthen chamber-pot without a handle, a bottle by way of candleſtick, and a triangular piece of glaſs inſtead of a mirrour; the reſt of its ornaments having been lately removed to one of the garrets, for the convenience of the ſervant of an Iriſh captain, who lodged in the firſt floor.

CHAP. XIX.

The characters of Mr Lavement, *his wife and daughter—ſome anecdotes of the family—the mother and daughter rivals—I am guilty of a miſtake that gives me preſent ſatisfaction, but is attended with troubleſome conſequences.*

NEXT day, while I was at work in the ſhop, a bouncing damſel well dreſſed came in, on pretence of finding a vial for ſome uſe or other; and taking an opportunity, when ſhe thought I did not mind her, of obſerving me narrowly, went away with a ſilent look of diſdain. I eaſily gueſſed her ſentiments, and my pride took the reſolution of entertaining the ſame indifference and neglect towards her. At dinner, the maids, with whom I dined in the kitchen, gave me to underſtand that this was my maſter's only daughter, who would have a very handſome fortune, on account of which, and her beauty, a great many young gentlemen made their addreſſes to her—that ſhe had been twice on the brink of marriage, but diſappointed by the ſtinginess of her father, who refuſed to part with a ſhilling to promote the match—for which reaſon the young lady did not behave to her father with all the filial veneration that might be expected: In

particular,

particular, ſhe harboured the moſt perfect hatred for his countrymen; in which diſpoſition ſhe reſembled her mother, who was an Engliſh woman; and by the hints they dropp'd, I learned the gray mare was the better horſe—that ſhe was a matron of a high ſpirit, which was often manifeſted at the expence of her dependents; that ſhe loved diverſions, and looked upon miſs as her rival in all parties; which was indeed the true cauſe of her diſappointments; for had the mother been hearty in her intereſt, the father would not have ventured to refuſe her demands. Over and above this intelligence, I, of myſelf, ſoon made more diſcoveries. Mr Lavement's ſignificant grins at his wife, while ſhe looked another way, convinced me that he was not at all content with his lot, and his behaviour in preſence of the captain, made me believe his chief torment was jealouſy. As for my own part, I was conſider'd in no other light than that of a menial ſervant, and had been already ſix days in the houſe without being honoured with one word from either mother or daughter; the latter (as I underſtood from the maids,) having at table one day expreſſed ſome ſurpriſe that her papa ſhould entertain ſuch an aukward mean-looking journeyman. I was nettled at this piece of information, and next Sunday (it being my turn to take my diverſion) dreſſed myſelf in my new clothes to the greateſt advantage, and, vanity apart, made no contemptible figure. After having ſpent moſt part of the day in company with Strap and ſome of his acquaintance, I came home in the afternoon, and was let in by miſs, who not knowing me, dropt a low courteſy as I advanced, which I returned with a profound bow, and ſhut the door. By that time I had turned about, ſhe had perceived her miſtake, and changed colour, but did not withdraw. The paſſage being narrow, I could not get away without jolting her; ſo I was forced to remain where I was with my eyes fixed on the ground, and my face glowing with bluſhes. At length her vanity coming to her aſſiſtance, ſhe went away tittering, and I could hear her pronounce the word "Creature." From this day forward, ſhe came into the ſhop fifty times every day upon various pretences, and put in practice ſo many ridiculous airs, that I could eaſily per-

ceive her opinion of me was changed, and that ſhe did not think me altogether an unworthy conqueſt. But my heart was ſo ſteel'd againſt her charms by pride and reſentment, which were two chief ingredients in my diſpoſition, that I remained inſenſible to all her arts; and notwithſtanding ſome advances ſhe made, could not be prevailed upon to yield her the leaſt attention. This neglect ſoon baniſh'd all the favourable impreſſions ſhe felt for me, and the rage of a ſlighted woman took place in her heart; this ſhe manifeſted not only in all the ſuggeſtions her malice could invent to my prejudice with her father, but alſo in procuring for me ſuch ſervile employments, as ſhe hoped would ſufficiently humble my ſpirit. One day in particular, ſhe ordered me to bruſh my maſter's coat; but I refuſing, a ſmart dialogue enſued, which ended in her burſting into tears of rage; when her mother interpoſing, and examining into the merits of the cauſe, determined it in my favour; and this good office I owed not to any eſteem or conſideration ſhe had for me, but ſolely to the deſire of mortifying her daughter, who on this occaſion obſerved, that let people be never ſo much in the right, there were ſome folks who would never do them juſtice; but to be ſure they had their reaſons for it, which ſome people were not ignorant of, although they deſpiſed their little arts. This inſinuation of ſome people and ſome folks, put me upon obſerving the behaviour of my miſtreſs more narrowly for the future; and it was not long before I had reaſon to believe that ſhe looked upon her daughter as a rival in the affections of Captain O'Donnell, who lodged in the houſe. In the mean time my induſtry and knowledge gain'd me the good will of my maſter, who would often ſay in French, "*Mardy! ce'ſt un bon garçon.*" He had a great deal of buſineſs; but as he was moſtly employed among his fellow refugees, his profits were ſmall. However, his expence for medicines was not great, for he was the moſt expert man at a ſuccedaneum of any apothecary in London, ſo that I have been ſometimes amazed to ſee him, without the leaſt heſitation, make up a phyſician's preſcription, though he had not in his ſhop one medicine mentioned in it. Oyſter-ſhells he could convert into crab's

eyes;

eyes; common oil into oil of ſweet almonds; ſyrup of ſugar into balſamic ſyrup; Thames water into *aqua cinnamomi*; turpentine into capivi; and a hundred more coſtly preparations were produced in an inſtant, from the cheapeſt and coarſeſt drugs of the *materia medica*: and when any common thing was ordered for a patient, he always took care to diſguiſe it in colour or taſte, or both, in ſuch a manner, as that it could not poſſibly be known. For which purpoſe cochineal and oil of cloves were of great ſervice. Among many noſtrums which he poſſeſſed, there was one for the venereal diſeaſe, that brought him a good deal of money; and this he conceal'd ſo artfully from me that I could never learn its compoſition: but during the eight months I ſtaid in his ſervice, he was ſo unfortunate in the uſe of it, that three parts in four of thoſe who took it, were fain to confirm the cure by a ſalivation under the direction of another doctor. This bad ſucceſs, in all appearance, attached him the more to his ſpecific; and, before I left him, I may venture to ſay, he would have ſooner renounced the Trinity (notwithſtanding hi being a good Huguenot) than his confidence in the never-failing power of this remedy. Mr Lavement had attempted more than once to introduce a vegetable diet into his family, by launching out into the praiſe of roots and greens, and decrying the uſe of fleſh, both as a phyſician and philoſopher; but all his rhetoric could not make one proſelyte to his opinion, and even the wife of his boſom declared againſt the propoſal. Whether it was owing to the little regard ſhe payed to her huſband's admonition in this particular, or to the natural warmth of her conſtitution, I know not; but this lady's paſſions became every day more and more violent, till at laſt ſhe look'd upon decency as an unneceſſary reſtraint; and one afternoon, when her huſband was abroad, and her daughter gone to viſit, ordered me to call a hackney-coach, in which ſhe and the captain drove towards Covent Garden. Miſs came home in the evening, and ſupping at her uſual hour, went to bed. About eleven o'clock my maſter entered, and aſked if his wife was gone to ſleep: upon which I told him, my miſtreſs went out in the afternoon, and was not yet returned. This was

like a clap of thunder to the poor Apothecary, who ſtarting back, cried, "*Mort de ma vie!* vat you tell a me?—My vife not at home!"—At that inſtant a patient's ſervant arrived with a preſcription for a draught, which my maſter taking, went into the ſhop to make it up with his own hand. While he rubbed the ingredients in a glaſs mortar, he inquired of me, whether or no his wife went out alone; and no ſooner heard that ſhe was in company with the captain, than with one blow he ſplit the mortar into a thouſand pieces, and grinning like the head of a baſs viol, exclaimed, "Ah traitreſſe!"—It would have been impoſſible for me to have preſerved my gravity a minute longer, when I was happily relieved by a rap at the door, which I opened, and perceived my miſtreſs coming out of the coach. She flounced immediately into the ſhop, and addreſſed her huſband thus: "I ſuppoſe you thought I was loſt, my dear—Captain "O'Donnel has been ſo good as to treat me with a play." "—"Play—play (replied he) Oho! yes, by gar, I be-"lieve ver prettie play."—"Bleſs me! (ſaid ſhe) what's "the matter?"—"Vat de matter?" (cried he forgetting all his former complaiſance): "by gar, you be one damn "dog's wife—ventre bleu! me vill ſhow you vat it is to "put one horn upon mine head. Pardieu! le capitaine "O'Donnell be one."—Here the captain, who had been all the while at the door diſcharging the coach, entered, and ſaid with a terrible voice, "D—mme! what am I?" Mr Lavement changing his tone immediately ſaluted him with, "*Oh ſerviteur monſieur le capitaine, vous etes un* "*gallant homme—ma femme eſt fort obligée.*" Then turning about towards me pronounced with a low voice, "*Et* "*diablement obligeante, ſans doute.*"—"Harkee, Mr Lave-"ment, (ſaid the captain) I am a man of honour, and "I believe you are too much of a gentleman to be of-"fended at the civility I ſhew your wife." This declaration had ſuch an effect on the apothecary, that he reſumed all the politeſſe of a Frenchman; and with the utmoſt proſtration of compliment, aſſured the captain that he was perfectly well ſatisfied with the honour he had done his wife. Matters being thus compoſed, every body went to reſt. Next day I perceived through a

glaſs

Published by W. Hone, 45 Ludgate Hill, London.

glaſs door that opened from the ſhop into the parlour, the captain talking earneſtly to miſs, who heard him with a look that expreſſed anger mingled with ſcorn; which however he at laſt found means to mollify, and ſealed his reconciliation with a kiſs. This circumſtance ſoon convinced me of the occaſion of the quarrel; but notwithſtanding all my vigilance, I could never diſcover any other commerce between them. In the mean while, I had reaſon to believe I had inſpired one of the maids with tender ſentiments for me; and one night when I thought every other perſon in the houſe aſleep, I took the opportunity of going to reap the fruits of my conqueſt; her bedfellow having the day before gone to Richmond to viſit her parents. Accordingly I got up, and (naked as I was) explored my way in the dark, to the garret where ſhe lay. I was raviſhed to find the door open, and moved ſoftly to her bedſide, tranſported with the hope of compleating my wiſhes. But what horrors of jealouſy and diſappointment did I feel, when I found her aſleep, faſt locked in the arms of a man, whom I eaſily gueſſed to be no other than the captain's ſervant! I was upon the point of doing ſome raſh thing, when the noiſe of a rat ſcratching behind the wainſcot, put me to flight, and I was fain to get back to my own bed in ſafety. Whether this alarm had diſordered my mind, or that I was led aſtray by the power of deſtiny, I know not; but inſtead of turning to the left hand, when I deſcended to the ſecond ſtory, I purſued the contrary courſe, and miſtook the young lady's bed-chamber for my own. I did not perceive my miſtake before I had run againſt the bed-poſts, and then it was not in my power to retreat undiſcovered; for the nymph being awake, felt my approach, and with a ſoft voice, bade me make leſs noiſe, leſt the Scotch booby in the next room ſhould overhear us. This hint was ſufficient to inform me of the nature of the aſſignation; and as my paſſions, at any time high, were then in a ſtate of exaltation, I reſolved to profit by my good fortune. Without any more ceremony therefore, I made bold to ſlip into bed to this charmer, who gave me as favourable a reception as I could deſire. Our converſation was very ſparing on my part,

so

but ſhe upbraided the perſon whom I repreſented with his jealouſy of me, whom ſhe handled ſo roughly, that my reſentment had well nigh occaſioned a diſcovery more than once; but I was conſoled for her hatred of me by the revenge I enjoyed in underſtanding from her own mouth, that it was now high time to ſave her reputation by matrimony; for ſhe had reaſon to fear ſhe could not much longer conceal the effects of their mutual intercourſe. While I was meditating an anſwer to this propoſal, I heard a noiſe in my room, like ſomething heavy falling down upon the floor: upon which I ſtarted up, and creeping to the door of my chamber, obſerved by moon-light, the ſhadow of a man groping his way out; ſo I retired to one ſide to let him paſs, and ſaw him go down ſtairs as expeditiouſly as he could. It was an eaſy matter to divine that this was the captain, who having overſlept himſelf, had got up at laſt to keep his aſſignation; and finding my door open, had entered my apartment inſtead of that of his miſtreſs, where I ſupplied his place. But finding his miſtake, by falling over my chair, he was afraid the noiſe might alarm the family, and for that reaſon made off, delaying the gratification of his deſires till another opportunity. By this time I was ſatisfied; and inſtead of returning to the place from whence I came, retreated to my own caſtle, which I fortified by bolting the door, and in the congratulation of my own happineſs fell aſleep. But the truth of this adventure could not be long concealed from my young miſtreſs, who next day came to an explanation with the captain, upon his lamenting his laſt night's diſappointment, and begging pardon for the noiſe he had made. Their mutual chagrin, when they came to the knowledge of what had happened, may be eaſily conjectured, though each had a peculiar grief unfelt by the other: for ſhe was conſcious of not only having betrayed to me the ſecrets of her commerce with him; but alſo, of having incenſed me by the freedoms ſhe had taken with my name, beyond a hope of reconciliation. On the other hand, his jealouſy ſuggeſted that her ſorrow was all artifice; and that I had ſupplied his place with her own privity and conſent. That ſuch was the ſituation of their thoughts

will

will appear in the ſequel—for, that very day ſhe came into the ſhop where I was alone, and fixing her eyes, ſwimming in tears, upon me, ſighed moſt piteouſly: but I was proof againſt her diſtreſs, by recollecting the epithets with which ſhe had honoured me the night before, and believing that the good reception I enjoyed was deſtined for another; therefore I took no notice of her affliction: and ſhe had the mortification to find her diſdain returned fourfold. However, from thenceforward ſhe thought proper to uſe me with more complaiſance than uſual, knowing that it was in my power at any time to publiſh her ſhame. By theſe means my life became much more agreeable (though I never could prevail upon myſelf to repeat my nocturnal viſit) and as I every day improved in my knowledge of the town, I ſhook off my awkward air by degrees, and acquired the character of a polite journeyman apothecary.

CHAP. XX.

I am aſſaulted and dangerouſly wounded—ſuſpect O'Donnell, *and am confirmed in my opinion—concert a ſcheme of revenge, and put it in execution*—O'Donnell *robbs his own ſervant, and diſappears—I make my addreſſes to a lady, and am miraculouſly delivered from her ſnare.*

ONE night, about twelve o'clock, as I returned from viſiting a patient at Chelſea, I received a blow on my head from an unſeen hand, that ſtretched me ſenſeleſs on the ground; and was left for dead with three ſtabs of a ſword in my body. The groans I uttered when I recovered the uſe of my reaſon alarmed the people of a ſolitary alehouſe, that ſtood near the ſpot where I lay; and they were humane enough to take me in, and ſend for a ſurgeon, who dreſſed my wounds, and aſſured me they were not mortal. One of them penetrated through the ſkin and muſcles of one ſide of my belly in ſuch a manner, that (doubtleſs) the aſſaſſin imagined he had run me through the entrails. The ſecond ſlanted along one of my ribs; and the laſt, which was intended for

the

the finiſhing ſtroke, having been directed to my heart, the ſword ſnapt upon my breaſt-bone, and the point remained ſticking in the ſkin. When I reflected upon this event, I could not perſuade myſelf that I had been aſſaulted by a common foot-pad, becauſe it is not uſual for ſuch people to murder thoſe they rob, eſpecially when they meet with no reſiſtance; and I found my money and every thing elſe about me (but my carcaſe) ſafe. I concluded therefore, that I muſt either have been miſtaken for another, or obliged to the private reſentment of ſome ſecret enemy for what had happened; and as I could remember no body who had the leaſt cauſe of complaint againſt me, except Captain O'Donnell and my maſter's daughter, my ſuſpicion ſettled upon them, though I took care to conceal it, that I might the ſooner arrive at confirmation. With this view, I went home in a chair about ten o'clock in the morning; and as the chairman ſupported me into the houſe, met the captain in the paſſage; who no ſooner ſaw me than he ſtarted back, and gave evident ſigns of guilty confuſion, which he would have accounted for from ſurpriſe occaſioned by the ſeeing me in ſuch a condition. My maſter having heard my ſtory, condoled me with a good deal of ſympathy, and when he underſtood my wounds were not dangerous, ordered me to be carried up ſtairs to bed; though not without ſome oppoſition from his wife, who was of opinion, it would be better for me to go to an hoſpital, where I ſhould be more carefully attended. My meditation was employed in concerting with myſelf ſome method of revenge againſt ſquire O'Donnell and his inamorata, whom I looked upon as the authors of my misfortune; when miſs (who was not at home at my arrival) entered my chamber; and ſaying ſhe was ſorry for the accident that had befallen me, aſked if I ſuſpected any body to be the aſſaſſin: upon which I fixed my eyes ſtedfaſtly upon her, and anſwered, "Yes." She diſcovered no ſymptom of "confuſion; but replied haſtily, "If that be the caſe, "why don't you take out a warrant to have him appre-"hended? It will coſt but a trifle—if you have no mo-"ney, I'll lend you." This frankneſs not only cured me of my ſuſpicion with reſpect to her, but even ſtag-

ger'd

fer'd my belief with regard to the captain, of whofe guilt I refolved to have further proof before I fhould enterprife any thing in the way of revenge. I thanked her kindly for her generous offer; which however I had no occafion to accept, being determined to do nothing rafhly: for though I could plainly perceive the perfon who attacked me, to be a foldier, whofe face I thought was familiar to me, I could not fwear with a fafe confcience to any particular man; and granting I could, my profecution of him would not much avail. This uncertainty I pretended, left the captain hearing from her that I knew the perfon who wounded me, might think proper to withdraw before I could be in a condition to requite him. In two days I was up and able to do a little buſineſs, ſo that Mr Lavement made ſhift to carry on his practice, without hiring another journeyman in my room. The firſt thing I attempted towards a certain diſcovery of my ſecret enemy, was to get into O'Donnell's apartment, while he was abroad in an undreſs, and examine his ſword, the point of which being broke off, I applied the fragment that was found ſticking in my body, and found it anſwered the fractured part exactly. There was no room left for doubt; and all that remained was to fix upon a ſcheme of revenge, which almoſt ſolely engroſſed my thoughts during the ſpace of eight nights and days. Sometimes I was tempted to fall upon him in the ſame manner as he had practiſed upon me, and kill him outright. But this aſſault my honour oppoſed as a piece of barbarous cowardice, in which he was not to be imitated. At other times I entertained thoughts of demanding ſatisfaction in an honourable way; but was diverted from this undertaking by conſidering the uncertainty of the event, and the nature of the injury he had done me, which did not intitle him to ſuch eaſy terms. At laſt I determined to purſue a middle courſe; and actually put my deſign in execution after this manner. Having ſecured the aſſiſtance of Strap and two of his acquaintance whom he could depend upon, we provided ourſelves with diſguiſes, and I cauſed the following letter to be delivered to him by one of our aſſociates in livery, one Sunday evening.

SIR,

" IF I may be allowed to judge from appearance, it will " not be disagreeable for you to hear that my hus- " band is gone to Bagshot to visit a patient, and will not " return till to-morrow night; so that if you have any " thing to propose to me (as your behaviour on many " occasions has seemed to insinuate) you will do well to " embrace the present opportunity of seeing

Yours, &c.

This letter was signed with the name of an apothecary's wife who lived in Chelsea, of whom I had heard O'Donnell was an admirer. Every thing succeeded to our wish. The amorous hero hastened towards the place of assignation; and was encountered by us in the very place where he had assaulted me. We rushed upon him all at once, secured his sword, stript off his clothes even to the skin, which we scourged with nettles till he was blistered from head to foot, notwithstanding all the eloquence of his tears and supplications. When I was satisfied with the stripes I had bestowed, we carried off his clothes, which we hid in a hedge near the place, and left him stark naked to find his way home in the best manner he could, while I took care to be there before him. I afterwards understood that in his way to the lodgings of a friend, who lived in the skirts of the town, he was picked up by the watch, who carried him to the Round-house, from whence he sent for clothes to his lodgings; and next morning arrived at the door in a chair, wrapt up in a blanket he had borrowed; for his body was so sore and swelled, that he could not bear to be confined in his wearing apparel. He was treated with the utmost tenderness by my mistress and her daughter, who vied with each other in their care and attendance of him; but Lavement himself could not forbear expressing his joy, by several malicious grins, while he ordered me to prepare an unguent for his sores. As to myself, nobody can doubt my gratification, when I had every day an opportunity of seeing my revenge protracted on the body of my adversary, by the ulcers of which I had been the cause; and indeed I

but

not only enjoyed the ſatisfaction of having ſtead him alive, but another alſo which I had not foreſeen. The ſtory of his being attacked and ſtript in ſuch a place having been inſerted in the news, gave information to thoſe who found his clothes next day, whither to bring them; and accordingly he retrieved every thing he had loſt except a few letters, among which was that which I had writ to him in the name of the apothecary's wife. This, and the others, which (it ſeems) were all on the ſubject of love, (for this Hibernian hero was one of thoſe people who are called Fortune-hunters,) fell into the hands of a certain female author, famous for the ſcandal ſhe has publiſhed; who, after having embelliſhed them with ſome ornaments of her own invention, gave them to the town in print. I was very much ſhocked on reflection, that I might poſſibly be the occaſion of a whole family's unhappineſs on account of the letter I had written; but was eaſed of that apprehenſion, when I underſtood that the Chelſea apothecary had commenced a law-ſuit againſt the printer for defamation; and looked upon the whole as a piece of forgery committed by the author, who had diſappeared. But, whatever might be his opinion of the matter, our two ladies ſeemed to entertain a different idea of it: for, as ſoon as the pamphlet appeared, I could perceive their care of their patient conſiderably diminiſh, till at laſt it ended in a total neglect. It was impoſſible for him to be ignorant of this change, any more than of the occaſion of it; but as he was conſcious to himſelf of having deſerved worſe than contempt at their hands, he was glad to come off ſo cheaply, and contented himſelf with muttering curſes and threats againſt the apothecary, who (as he imagined) having got an inkling of the appointment with his wife, had taken revenge of him in the manner deſcribed. By that time he had got a new ſcarf ſkin, his character was become ſo notorious, that he thought it high time for him to decamp; and his retreat he performed in one night, without beat of drum, after having robbed his own ſervant of every thing that belonged to him except the clothes he had on his back. A few days after he diſappeared, Mr Lavement, for his own ſecurity, took into cuſtody a large

old trunk which he had left; and as it was very heavy, made no queſtion that the contents were ſufficient to indemnify him for what O'Donnel owed in lodging. But, a month being elapſed without hearing any tidings of this adventurer; and my maſter being impatient to know what the trunk contained, he ordered me to break it open in his preſence, which taſk I performed with the peſtle of our great mortar, and diſcovered, to his inexpreſſible aſtoniſhment and mortification, a heap of ſtones.

About this time, my friend Strap informed me of an offer he had to go abroad with a gentleman in quality of *valet de chambre*, and at the ſame time aſſured me, that whatever advantage he might propoſe to himſelf from this proſpect, he could not bear the thoughts of parting from me, ſo much was he attached to my fortune. In ſpite of all the obligations I owed to this poor honeſt fellow, ingratitude is ſo natural to the heart of man, that I began to be tired of his acquaintance; and now, that I had contracted other friendſhips which appeared more creditable, was even aſhamed to ſee a journeyman barber inquiring after me with the familiarity of a companion. I therefore, on pretence of conſulting his welfare, inſiſted upon his accepting the propoſal, which he at laſt determined to embrace with great reluctance; and in a few days took his leave of me, ſhedding a flood of tears, which I could not behold without emotion. I now began to look upon myſelf as a gentleman in reality; learned to dance of a Frenchman whom I had cured of a faſhionable diſtemper; frequented plays during the holidays; became the oracle of an ale-houſe, where every diſpute was referred to my deciſion; and at length contracted an acquaintance with a young lady, who found means to make a conqueſt of my heart, and upon whom I prevailed, after much attendance and ſolicitation, to give me a promiſe of marriage. As this beautiful creature paſſed for a rich heireſs, I bleſſed my good fortune, and was actually on the point of crowning all my wiſhes by matrimony; when one morning I went to her lodgings, and, her maid being abroad, took the privilege of a bridegroom to enter her chamber, where to my utter confuſion, I found her in bed with a man. Heaven gave me patience and preſence of mind enough

to

to withdraw immediately; and I thanked my ſtars a thouſand times for the happy diſcovery, by which I reſolved to profit ſo much, as to abandon all thoughts of marriage for the future.

CHAP. XXI.

Squire Gawky *comes to lodge with my maſter—is involved in a troubleſome affair, out of which he is extricated by me—he marries my maſter's daughter—they conſpire againſt me—I am found guilty of theft—diſcharged—deſerted by my friend.—I hire a room in St* Giles's*—where, by accident, I find the Lady to whom I made my addreſſes in a miſerable condition—I relieve her.*

WHEN I enjoyed myſelf at large in this temper of mind, Mr Lavement let his firſt floor to my countryman and acquaintance Squire Gawky who by this time had got a lieutenancy in the army, and ſuch a martial ferocity in his appearance, that I was afraid he would remember what happened between us in Scotland, and atone for his breach of appointment then, by his punctuality now: but whether he had actually forgot me, or was willing to make me believe ſo, he betrayed not the leaſt ſymptom of recognition at ſight of me, and I remained quite cured of my apprehenſion; though I had occaſion not long after to be convinced, that howſoever his externals might be altered, he was at bottom the ſame individual Gawky whom I have already deſcribed. For, coming home late one night from the houſe of a patient, I heard a noiſe in the ſtreet, and as I approached, perceived two gentlemen in cuſtody of three watchmen. The priſoners, who were miſerably diſfigured with dirt, complained bitterly of the loſs of their hats and wigs; and one of them, whom by his tongue I knew to be a Scotchman, lamented moſt pitcouſly, offering a guinea for his liberty, which the watchmen refuſed, alledging that one of his companions was wounded grievouſly, and that he muſt ſtand to the conſequence. My prejudice in favour of my native country was ſo ſtrong, that I could not bear to

ſee

ſee any body belonging to it in diſtreſs, and therefore, with one blow of my faithful cudgel, knocked down the watchman who had hold of the perſon for whom I was chiefly concerned. He was no ſooner diſengaged than he betook himſelf to his heels, and left me to maintain the diſpute as I ſhould think proper; and indeed I came off but ſcurvily, for, before I could avail myſelf of my ſpeed, I received a blow on the eye, from one of the other two, that had well nigh deprived me of the uſe of that organ. However, I made ſhift to get home, where I was informed of Captain Gawky's being robbed and abuſed by a company of foot-pads; and was ordered by my maſter to prepare an emollient glyſter and paregoric draught, in order to allay and compoſe the ferment of his ſpirits, occaſioned by the barbarous treatment he had undergone, while he took twelve ounces of blood from him immediately. When I inquired into the particulars of this adventure, and underſtood by the ſervant that he came in juſt before me, without hat and wig, I made no ſcruple of believing him to be the perſon I had releaſed, and was confirmed in my belief upon hearing his voice, to which (before that event) I had been ſo long a ſtranger. My eye being conſiderably ſwelled and inflamed, I could not reflect upon my enterprize without curſing my own folly, and even reſolving to declare the truth of the whole ſtory, in order to be revenged on the cowardly wretch for whom I had ſuffered: accordingly, next day, after he had told in preſence of my maſter, his wife and daughter, who came to viſit him, a thouſand lies concerning the proweſs he had ſhewn in making his eſcape, I ventured to explain the myſtery, and calling in the evidence of my contuſed eye, upbraided him with cowardice and ingratitude. Gawky was ſo aſtoniſhed at this diſcourſe, that he could not anſwer one word; and the reſt of the company ſtared at one another; till at length my miſtreſs reprimanded me for my inſolent behaviour, and threatened to turn me away for my preſumption. Upon which, Gawky (having recollected himſelf) obſerved, as the young man might have miſtaken another perſon for him, he could forgive his inſinuations, more eſpecially as he ſeem-

ed

ed to have ſuffered for his civility; but adviſed me to be more certain in my conjectures for the future, before I ventured to publiſh them to the prejudice of any man. Miſs applauded the captain's generoſity in pardoning one who had ſo villainouſly aſperſed him, and I began to imagine her praiſe was not at all diſintereſted. But the apothecary, who perhaps had more penetration or leſs partiality than his wife and daughter, differed from them in his ſentiments of the matter, and expreſſed himſelf to me in the ſhop in this manner: "Ah mon pauvre Rode-"rique! you have more of de veracité dan of de pru-"dence—bot mine vife and dater be diablement ſage, "and Monſ. le capitaine un fanfaron, pardieu!" This eulogium on his wife and daughter, though ſpoken ironically by him, was nevertheleſs literally juſt; by eſpouſing the cauſe of Gawky, the one obliged a valuable lodger, and the other acquired a huſband at a juncture when one was abſolutely neceſſary; for the young lady finding the effects of her correſpondence with O'Donnell becoming plainer and plainer every day, inſinuated herſelf ſo artfully into the affection of this new lodger, that in leſs than a fortnight, on pretence of going to a play, they drove away together to the Fleet, where they were coupled: from thence removed to a bagnio, where the marriage was conſummated; and in the morning came home, where they aſked her father's and mother's bleſſing. The prudent parents, notwithſtanding the precipitation with which the match was carried on, did not think fit to refuſe their approbation; for the apothecary was not ill pleaſed to find his daughter married to a young man of a good proſpect, who had not mentioned one ſyllable on the article of her dowry; and his wife was rejoiced at being rid of a rival in her gallants, and a ſpy upon her pleaſures. Nor was I without ſelf-enjoyment at this event, when I reflected upon the revenge I had unwittingly taken upon the enemy, in making him a cuckold by anticipation. But I little dreamed what a ſtorm of miſchief was brewing againſt me whilſt I thus indulged myſelf. Whatever face Gawky put on the matter, my diſcovery of the adventure before related, and the reproaches I vented againſt him, had ſunk him to the ſoul, and cherished the ſeeds of enmity

ſo ſtrongly in his breaſt, that he (it ſeems) imparted his indignation to his wife, who being as deſirous as himſelf to compaſs the ruin of one that not only ſlighted her careſſes, but was able on any occaſion to diſcover particulars not at all advantageous to her character, readily joined in a conſpiracy againſt me, which (had it taken effect, as they expected) would infallibly have brought me to an ignominious death.

My maſter having ſeveral times miſſed large quantities of medicines of which I could give no account, at laſt loſt all patience, and in plain terms taxed me with having embezzled them for my own uſe. As I could only oppoſe my ſingle aſſeveration to his ſuſpicion, he told me one day, "By gar, your vord not be give me de ſatisfaction "—me find neceſſaire to chercher for my medicine, par-"donnez moy—il faut chercher—me demand le clef of "your coffre a cette heure." Then raiſing his voice to conceal the fright he was in, leſt I ſhould make any oppoſition, he went on, "Oui, foutre, I charge you rendez "le clef of your coffre—moi—ſi, moi qui vous parle."—I was fired with ſo much reſentment and diſdain at this accuſation, that I burſt into tears, which he took for a ſign of guilt; and pulling out my key, told him he might ſatisfy himſelf immediately, though he would not find it ſo eaſy to ſatisfy me for the injury my reputation had ſuffered from his unjuſt ſuſpicion. He took the key and mounted up to my chamber, attended by the whole family; ſaying, "He bien nous verrons—nous verrons." But what was my horror and amazement, when opening my cheſt he pulled out an handful of the very things that were miſſing, and pronounced, "Ah ha! vous etes bien "venus—mardie, Monſ. Roderique, you be fort inno-"cent!" I had not power to utter one word in my own vindication, but ſtood motionleſs and ſilent, while every body preſent made their reſpective remarks on what appeared againſt me. The ſervants ſaid they were ſorry for my misfortune, and went away repeating, "Who "would have thought it?" My miſtreſs took occaſion from this detection to rail againſt the practice of employing ſtrangers in general; and Miſs Gawky, after having obſerved that ſhe never had a good opinion of my fideli-

ty,

ty, propoſed to have me carried before the juſtice and committed to Newgate immediately. Her huſband was actually upon the ſtairs in his way for a conſtable, when Mr Lavement knowing the coſt and trouble of a proſecution to which he muſt bind himſelf, and at the ſame time dreading leſt ſome particulars of my confeſſion might affect his practice, called out "Reſtez, mon fils! reſtez, it "be veritablement one grand crime which dis pauvre "diable have committed—bot puetetre de good God give "him de penitence, and me vill not have upon mine "head de blood of one ſinner." The captain and his lady uſed all the chriſtian arguments their zeal could ſuggeſt, to prevail upon the apothecary to purſue me to deſtruction, and repreſented the injuſtice he did to the community of which he was a member, in letting a villain eſcape, who would not fail of doing more miſchief in the world when he ſhould reflect on his coming off ſo eaſily now: but their eloquence made no impreſſion on my maſter, who turning to me ſaid, "Go, miſerable, go "from mine houſe, quick, quick—and make reparation "for your mauvaiſe actions." By this time my indignation had rouſed me from the ſtupefaction in which I had hitherto remained, and I began in this manner: "Sir, "appearances I own condemn me; but you are impoſed "upon as much as I am abuſed—I have fallen a ſacrifice "to the rancour of that ſcoundrel (pointing to Gawky) "who has found means to convey your goods hither, "that the detection of them might blaſt my reputation, "and accompliſh my deſtruction. His hatred to me is "owing to a conſciouſneſs of his having wronged me in "my own country; for which injury he in a cowardly "manner refuſed me the ſatisfaction of a gentleman;—he "knows moreover, that I am no ſtranger to his daſtardly behaviour in this town, which I have recounted be"fore;—and he is unwilling that ſuch a teſtimony of his "ingratitude and puſillanimity ſhould live upon the earth; "for this reaſon he is guilty of the moſt infernal malice "to bring about my ruin. And I am afraid, madam, "(turning to Mrs Gawky,) you have too eaſily entered "into the ſentiments of your huſband.—I have often "found you my enemy; and am well acquainted with

" the occaſion of your being ſo, which I don't at preſent
" think proper to declare; but I would not adviſe you,
" for your own ſake, to drive me to extremity." This addreſs enraged her ſo much, that with a face as red as ſcarlet, and the eyes of a fury, ſhe ſtrutted up to me, and putting her hands in her ſides, ſpit in my face, ſaying, " I
" was a ſcandalous villain," but ſhe defied my malice: and that unleſs her pappa would proſecute me like a thief as I was, ſhe would not ſtay another night under his roof. At the ſame time, Gawky aſſuming a big look, told me, he ſcorned what lies I could invent againſt him; but that if I pretended to aſperſe his wife, he would put me to death, by G—d. To this threat I anſwered, " I wiſh
" to God I could meet with thee in a deſert, that I
" might have an opportunity of puniſhing thee for thy
" perfidy towards me, and rid the world of ſuch a raſcal.
" —What hinders me this moment, (ſaid I, ſeizing an
" old bottle that ſtood by) from doing myſelf that juſ-
" tice?" I had no ſooner armed myſelf in this manner, than Gawky and his father-in-law retired in ſuch a hurry, that the one overturned the other, and they rolled together down ſtairs; while my miſtreſs ſwooned away with fear; and her daughter aſked if I intended to murder her. I gave her to underſtand that nothing was farther from my intention, that I would leave her to the ſtings of her own conſcience; but was firmly reſolved to ſlit her huſband's noſe, whenever fortune ſhould offer a convenient opportunity. Then going down ſtairs, I met Lavement coming up trembling with the peſtle in his hand, and Gawky behind armed with his ſword puſhing him forward. I demanded a parley; and having aſſured him of my pacific diſpoſition, Gawky exclaimed, " Ah! villain! you
" have killed my dear wife!" And the apothecary cried, " Ah coquin! vere is my fhild?" " The lady, (ſaid I,)
" is above ſtairs, unhurt by me, and will a few months
" hence (I believe,) reward your concern." Here the called to them, and deſired they would let the wretch go, and trouble themſelves no further about him. To which request her father conſented, obſerving nevertheleſs, that my converſation was not myſtic enough. Finding it impoſſible to vindicate my innocence, I left the houſe immediate-
ly,

ly, and went to the ſchoolmaſter, with an intention of clearing myſelf to him, and aſking his advice with regard to my future conduct; but, to my inexpreſſible vexation, he was gone to the country, where he would ſtay two or three days. I returned with a deſign of conſulting ſome acquaintance I had acquired in the neighbourhood; but my ſtory had taken air, through the officiouſneſs of the ſervants, and not one of my friends would vouchſafe me a hearing. Thus I found myſelf, by the iniquity of mankind, in a much more deplorable condition than ever: for though I had been formerly as poor, my reputation was without blemiſh, and my health unimpaired till now;—but at preſent my good name was loſt, my money gone, my friends were alienated, my body was infected by a diſtemper contracted in the courſe of an amour; and my faithful Strap, who alone could yield me pity and aſſiſtance, abſent I knew not where.

The firſt reſolution I could take in this melancholy conjuncture was to remove my clothes to the houſe of the perſon with whom I had formerly lodged; where I remained two days in hopes of getting another place by the intereſt of Mr Concordance, to whom I made no doubt of being able to vindicate my character: but in this ſuppoſition I reckoned without my hoſt, for Lavement took care to be before hand with me; and when I attempted to explain the whole affair to the ſchoolmaſter, I found him ſo prepoſſeſſed againſt me, that he would ſcarce hear me to an end; but when I had finiſhed my juſtification, ſhook his head, and beginning with his uſual exclamation, "O C—ſt! ſaid, That won't go down "with me. I am very ſorry I ſhould have the miſfor-"tune of being concerned in the affair, but, however, "ſhall be more cautious for the future—I will trust no "man from henceforward—no, not my father who be-"gat me—nor the brother who lay with me in my mother's "womb—Should Daniel riſe from the dead, I would "think him an impoſtor; and were the genius of truth "to appear, would queſtion its veracity." I told him, that one day, it was poſſible he might be convinced of the injury I had ſuffered, and I repent of his premature condemnation. "That remains to be ſeen," anſwered he, "the proof

of my innocence would make his bowels vibrate with joy; "but till that ſhall happen (continued he) I muſt beg "to have no manner of connection with you—my repu- "tation is at ſtake.—O my good God! I ſhall be look- "ed upon as your accomplice and abettor—people will "ſay, Jonathan Wyld was but a type of me—boys will "hoot at me as I paſs along; and the cinder-wenches "belch forth reproaches wafted in a gale impregnated "with gin—I ſhall be notorious—the very butt of ſlan- "der, and cloaca of infamy." I was not in an humour to reliſh the climax of expreſſions upon which this gentleman valued himſelf in all his diſcourſes; but without any ceremony took my leave, curſed with every ſentiment of horror which my ſituation could ſuggeſt. I conſidered, however, in the intervals of my deſpondence, that I muſt in ſome ſhape ſuit my expence to my calamitous circumſtances, and with that view hired an apartment in a garret near St Giles's, at the rate of ninepence *per* week. In this place I reſolved to perform my own cure, having firſt pawned three ſhirts to purchaſe medicines and ſupport for the occaſion.

One day when I ſat in this ſolitary retreat, muſing upon the unhappineſs of my fate, I was alarmed by a groan that iſſued from a chamber contiguous to mine, into which I immediately ran, and found a woman ſtretched on a miſerable truckle bed, without any viſible ſigns of life. Having applied a ſmelling bottle to her noſe, the blood began to reviſit her cheeks, and ſhe opened her eyes; but, good heaven! what were the emotions of my ſoul, when I diſcovered her to be the ſame individual lady, who had triumphed over my heart, and to whoſe fate I had almoſt been inſeparably joined! Her deplorable ſituation filled my breaſt with compaſſion, and every tender idea reviving in my imagination, I flew into her embrace. She knew me immediately; and ſtraining me gently in her arms, ſhed a torrent of tears, which I could not help increaſing: At length, caſting a languiſhing look at me, ſhe pronounced with a feeble voice, "Dear "Mr Random, I do not deſerve this concern at your "hands.—I am a vile creature, who had a baſe deſign "upon your perſon—ſuffer me to expiate that and all

"my

Der Landwirth der sein Vieh mit Mühe und Sorgfalt pflegt, wird auch Freude daran haben.

" my other crimes by a miſerable death, which will not " fail to overtake me in a few hours." I encouraged her as much as I could, told her I forgave all her intentions with regard to me; and that although my circumſtances were extremely low, I would ſhare my laſt farthing with her. In the mean time, begged to know the immediate cauſe of that fit from which ſhe had juſt recovered, and ſaid I would endeavour by my ſkill to prevent any more ſuch attacks. She ſeemed very much affected with this expreſſion, took my hand and preſſed it to her lips, ſaying, " You are too generous! I wiſh I could live to ex- " preſs my gratitude—but alas! I periſh for want." Then ſhutting her eyes, ſhe relapſed into another ſwoon. Such extremity of diſtreſs muſt have waked the moſt obdurate heart to ſympathy and compaſſion:—What effect then muſt it have had on mine, that was naturally prone to every tender paſſion? I ran down ſtairs and ſent my landlady to a chymiſt's ſhop for ſome cinnamon water, while I returning to this unfortunate creature's chamber, uſed all the means in my power to bring her to herſelf: This aim with much difficulty I accompliſhed, and made her drink a glaſs of the cordial to recruit her ſpirits; then I prepared a little mulled red wine and a toaſt, which having taken, ſhe found herſelf thoroughly revived, and informed me, that ſhe had not taſted food for eight and forty hours before. As I was impatient to know the occaſion and nature of her calamity, ſhe gave me to underſtand that ſhe was a woman of the town by profeſſion;—that in the courſe of her adventures, ſhe found herſelf dangerouſly infected with a diſtemper to which all of her claſs are particularly ſubject;—that her malady gaining ground every day, ſhe became loathſome to herſelf, and offenſive to others; which ſhe reflected to retire to ſome obſcure corner, where ſhe might be cured with as little noiſe and expence as poſſible;—that ſhe had accordingly choſen this place of retreat, and put herſelf into the hands of an adventurer doctor, who having diſcovered her of all the money ſhe had, or could procure, left her three days ago in the wretched condition that I found her in;—that [illegible] her landlady, for [illegible] to [illegible]

ſatisfy that rapacious quack, and quiet the clamour of her landlady, who ſtill perſiſted in her threats to turn her out into the ſtreet. After having moralized upon theſe particulars, I propoſed that ſhe ſhould lodge in the ſame room with me, an expedient that would ſave ſome money; and aſſured her I would undertake her cure as well as my own, during which ſhe ſhould partake of all the conveniences that I could afford to myſelf. She embraced my offer with unfeigned acknowledgment, and I began to put it in practice immediately. I found in her not only an agreeable companion, whoſe converſation greatly alleviated my chagrin, but alſo a careful nurſe, who ſerved me with the utmoſt fidelity and affection. One day, while I teſtified my ſurpriſe that a woman of her beauty, good ſenſe, and education (for ſhe had a large portion of each) could be reduced to ſuch an infamous and miſerable way of life as that of a proſtitute; ſhe anſwered with a ſigh, "Theſe very advantages were the "cauſe of my undoing." This remarkable reply inflamed my curioſity to ſuch a degree, that I begged ſhe would favour me with the particulars of her ſtory, and ſhe complied in theſe words.

CHAP. XXII.

The Hiſtory of Miſs WILLIAMS.

MY father was an eminent merchant in the city, who having, in the courſe of trade, ſuffered very conſiderable loſſes, retired in his old age with his wife to a ſmall eſtate in the country, which he had purchaſed with the remains of his fortune. At that time I being but eight years of age, was left in town for the convenience of education, boarded with an aunt, who was a rigid preſbyterian, and who confined me ſo cloſely to what ſhe called the duties of religion, that in time I grew weary of her doctrines, and by degrees conceived an averſion for the good books ſhe daily recommended to my peruſal. As I increaſed in age, and appeared with a perſon not diſagreeable, I contracted a good deal of acquaintance among

among my own ſex; one of whom, after having lamented the reſtraint I was under from the narrowneſs of my aunt's ſentiments, told me, I muſt not throw off the prejudices of opinion imbibed under her influence and example, and learn to think for myſelf; for which purpoſe ſhe adviſed me to read Shaftſbury, Tindal, Hobbes, and all the books that are remarkable for their deviation from the old way of thinking, and by comparing one with the other, I ſhould ſoon be able to form a ſyſtem of my own. I followed her advice; and whether it was owing to my prepoſſeſſion againſt what I had formerly read, or the clearneſs of argument in theſe my new inſtructors, I know not; but I ſtudied them with pleaſure, and in a ſhort time became a profeſſed free-thinker. Proud of my new improvement, I argued in all companies, and that with ſuch ſucceſs, that I ſoon acquired the reputation of a philoſopher, and few people durſt undertake me in a diſpute. I grew vain upon my good fortune, and at length pretended to make my aunt a proſelyte to my opinion; but ſhe no ſooner perceived my drift, than taking the alarm, ſhe wrote to my father an account of my hereſy, and conjured him, as he tendered the good of my ſoul, to remove me immediately from the dangerous place where I had contracted ſuch ſinful principles: Accordingly, my father ordered me into the country, where I arrived in the fifteenth year of my age, and by his command gave him a detail of all the articles of my faith, which he did not find ſo unreaſonable as they had been repreſented. Finding myſelf ſuddenly deprived of the company and pleaſures of the town, I grew melancholy, and it was ſome time before I could reliſh my ſituation. But ſolitude became every day more and more familiar to me, and I conſoled myſelf in my retreat with the enjoyment of a good library, at ſuch times as were not employed in the management of the family (for my mother had been dead three years,) in viſiting, or ſome other party of rural diverſion. Having more imagination than judgment, I addicted myſelf too much to poetry and romance; and in ſhort, was looked upon as a very extraordinary perſon by every body in the country where I reſided. I had one evening ſtrayed, with a book

a book in my hand, into a wood that bordered on the high road, at a little diſtance from my father's houſe; when a certain drunken ſquire, riding by, perceived me, and crying, "Z——ds! there's a charming creature!" alighted in a moment, caught me in his arms, and treated me ſo rudely, that I ſhrieked as loud as I could, and in the mean time oppoſed his violence with all the ſtrength that rage and reſentment could inſpire. During this ſtruggle, another horſeman came up, who ſeeing a lady ſo unworthily uſed, diſmounted, and flew to my aſſiſtance. My raviſher, mad with diſappointment, or provoked with the reproaches of the other gentleman, quitted me, and running to his horſe, drew a piſtol from the ſaddle, and fired it at my protector, who happily receiving no damage, went up, and with the butt-end of his whip, laid him proſtrate on the ground before he could uſe the other, which his antagoniſt immediately ſeized, and clapping to the ſquire's breaſt, threatened to put him to death for his cowardice and treachery: in this dilemma I interpoſed and begged his life, which was granted to my requeſt, after he had aſked pardon, and ſwore his intention was only to obtain a kiſs. However, my defender thought proper to unload the other piſtol, and throw away the flints, before he gave him his liberty. This courteous ſtranger conducted me home, where my father having learned the ſignal ſervice he had done me, loaded him with careſſes, and inſiſted on his lodging that night at our houſe. If the obligation he had conferred upon me juſtly inſpired me with ſentiments of gratitude, his appearance and converſation ſeemed to intitle him to ſomewhat more. He was about the age of two and twenty, among the talleſt of the middle ſize; had cheſnut-coloured hair, which he wore tied up in a ribbon; a high poliſhed fore-head, a noſe inclining to the aquiline, lively blue eyes, red pouting lips, teeth as white as ſnow, and a certain openneſs of countenance—but what need I deſcribe any more particulars of his perſon? I hope you will do me the juſtice to believe I do not flatter, when I ſay, he was the exact reſemblance of you; and if I had not been well acquainted with his family and pedigree, I ſhould have made no ſcruple of concluding that you

was

was his brother. He spoke little, and seemed to have no reserve; for what he said was ingenious, sensible, and uncommon. In short (said she bursting into tears) he was formed for the ruin of our sex. His behaviour was modest and respectful, but his looks were so significant, that I could easily observe he secretly blessed the occasion that introduced him to my acquaintance. We learned from his discourse that he was the eldest son of a wealthy gentleman in the neighbourhood, to whose name we were no strangers; that he had been to visit an acquaintance in the country, from whose house he was returning home, when my shrieks brought him to my rescue. All night long my imagination formed a thousand ridiculous expectations: there was so much of knight-errantry in this gentleman's coming to the relief of a damsel in distress, with whom he immediately became enamoured, that all I had read of love and chivalry recurred to my fancy; and I looked upon myself as a princess in some region of romance, who being delivered from the power of a brutal giant, or satyr, by a generous Oroondates, was bound in gratitude, as well as led by inclination, to yield up my affections to him without reserve. In vain did I endeavour to chastise these foolish conceits by reflections more reasonable and severe: the amusing images took full possession of my mind, and my dreams represented my hero sighing at my feet, in the language of a despairing lover. Next morning after breakfast he took his leave, when my father begged the favour of further acquaintance with him; to which request he replied by a compliment to him, and a look to me so full of eloquence and tenderness, that my whole soul received the last impression. In a short time he repeated his visit; and as a recital of the particular steps he pursued to ruin me would be too tedious and impertinent, let it suffice to say, he made it his business to insinuate himself into my esteem, by convincing me of his own good sense, and at the same time flattering my understanding: This task he performed in the most artful manner, by seeming to commend me even through misapprehension, that I might have an opportunity of shewing myself, the more to my own honour. [illegible] received my good opi-

[illegible] ner,

nion, he began to give me some tokens of a particular passion founded on a veneration for the qualities of my mind, and as an accidental ornament, admired the beauties of my person; till at length, being fully persuaded of his conquest, he chose a proper season for the theme, and disclosed his love in terms so ardent and sincere, that it was impossible for me to disguise the sentiments of my heart, and he received my approbation with the most lively transport. After this mutual declaration, we contrived to meet more frequently in private interviews, where we enjoyed the conversation of one another, in all the elevation of fancy and impatience of hope that reciprocal adoration can inspire. He professed his honourable intentions, of which I made no question, lamented the avaritious disposition of his father, who had destined him for the arms of another, and vowed eternal fidelity with such an appearance of candour and devotion, that I became a dupe to his deceit, and in an evil hour crowned his eager desire with full possession. Cursed be the day on which I gave away my innocence and peace for a momentary gratification, which has entailed upon me such misery and horror! Cursed be my beauty that first attracted the attention of the seducer! Cursed be my education, that by refining my sentiments, made my heart the more susceptible! Cursed be my good sense, that fixed me to one object, and taught me the preference I enjoyed was but my due! Had I been ugly, nobody would have tempted me: had I been ignorant, the charms of my person would not have atoned for the coarseness of my conversation; had I been giddy, my vanity would have divided my inclinations, and my ideas would have been so diffused, that I should never have listened to the enchantments of one alone.

But to return to my unfortunate story; we gave a loose to guilty pleasure, which for some months banished every other concern. At last by degrees, his visits became less frequent, and his behaviour less warm: I perceived his coldness, my heart took the alarm, my tears reproached him, and I insisted upon the performance of his promise to espouse me, that, whatever should happen, my reputation might be safe: He seemed to acquiesce in my

propos-

propofal, and left me on pretence of finding a proper clergyman to unite us in the bands of wedlock. But, alas! the infultant had no intention to return: I waited a whole week with the utmoft impatience; fometimes doubting his honour, at other times inventing excufes for him, and condemning myfelf for harbouring the leaft fufpicion of his faith. At length, I underftood from a gentleman who dined at our houfe, that this perfidious wretch was on the point of fetting out for London with his bride, to buy clothes for their approaching nuptials. This information diftracted me! the more fo, as I found myfelf fome months gone with child, and reflected, that it would be impoffible to conceal my difgrace, which would not only ruin the character I had acquired in the country, but alfo bring the gray hairs of an indulgent parent with forrow to the grave. Rage took poffeffion of my foul; I denounced a thoufand imprecations, and formed as many fchemes of revenge againft the traitor who had undone me! Then my refentment would fubfide to filent forrow: I recalled the tranquillity I had loft, I wept over my infatuation, and fometimes a ray of hope would intervene, and for a moment cheer my drooping heart; I would revolve all the favourable circumftances of his character, repeat the vows he made, afcribe his abfence to the vigilance of a fufpicious father who compelled him to a match his foul abhorred, and comfort myfelf with the expectation of feeing him before the thing fhould be brought to any terms of agreement. But how vain was my imagination! The villain left me without remorfe, and in a few days the news of his marriage were fpread all over the country. My horror was then inconceivable! and had not the fcheme of revenge diverted the refolution, I fhould infallibly have put an end to my miferable life. My father obferved the fymptoms of my defpair; and though I have good reafon to believe he gueffed the caufe, was at a great deal of pains to feem ignorant of my affliction, while he endeavoured with paternal fondnefs to alleviate my diftrefs. I faw his concern, which increafed my anguifh, and ftrove by all means to conceal the author of my calamity to an implacable degree. Having furnifhed myfelf with a little money, I made an elope-

ment from this unhappy parent in the night-time, and about break of day arrived at a ſmall town, from whence a ſtage-coach ſet out for London, in which I embarked, and next day alighted in town; the ſpirit of revenge having ſupported me all the way againſt every other reflection. My firſt care was to hire a lodging, in which I kept myſelf very retired, having aſſumed a feigned name, that my character and ſituation might be the better concealed. It was not long before I found out the houſe of my raviſher, whither I immediately repaired in a tranſport of rage, determined to act ſome deſperate deed for the ſatisfaction of my deſpair, though the hurry of my ſpirits would not permit me to concert or reſolve upon a particular plan. When I demanded admiſſion to Lothario (ſo let me call him) I was deſired to ſend up my name and buſineſs; but this I refuſed, telling the porter I had buſineſs for his maſter's private ear: upon which I was conducted into a parlour until he ſhould be informed of my requeſt. There I remained about a quarter of an hour, when a ſervant entered, and told me his maſter was engaged with company, and begged to be excuſed at that time. My temper could hold out no longer: I pulled a poignard from my boſom where I had concealed it, and ruſhing out, flew up ſtairs like a fury, exclaiming "Where's this perfidious villain? could I once plunge "this dagger into his falſe heart, I ſhould then die ſatis-"fied." The noiſe I made alarmed not only the ſervants, but the company alſo, who hearing my threats, came forwards to the ſtair-caſe to ſee what was the matter. I was ſeized, diſarmed, and withheld by two footmen; and in this ſituation felt the moſt exquiſite torture, in beholding my undoer approach with his young wife. I could not endure the ſight, was deprived of my ſenſes, and fell into a ſevere fit, during which I know not how I was treated; but when I recovered the uſe of reflection, found myſelf on a bed in a paultry apartment, where I was attended by an old woman, who aſked a thouſand impertinent queſtions relating to my condition; and informed me that my behaviour had thrown the whole family into confuſion; that Lothario affirmed I was mad, and propoſed to have me ſent to Bedlam; but my lady perſuad-

ed herself there was more in my conduct than he cared ſhould be known, and had taken to her bed on bare ſuſpicion, having firſt ordered that I ſhould be narrowly looked to. I heard all ſhe ſaid without making any other reply, than deſiring ſhe would do me the favour to call a chair; but this ſhe told me could no; be done, without her maſter's conſent, which, however, was eaſily procured, and I was conveyed to my own lodgings in a ſtate of mind that baffles all deſcription. The agitation of my thoughts produced a fever, which brought on a miſcarriage; and I believe it is well for my conſcience that heaven thus diſpoſed of my burden; for, let me own to you with penitence and horror, if I had brought a living child into the world, my frenzy would have prompted me to ſacrifice the little innocent to my reſentment of the father's infidelity.

After this event my rage abated, and my hate became more deliberate and calm: when one day, my landlady informed me that there was a gentleman below who deſired to ſee me, he having ſomething of conſequence to impart which he was ſure would contribute to my peace of mind. I was exceedingly alarmed at this declaration, which I attempted to interpret a thouſand ways; and before I came to any determination he entered my room, with an apology for intruding upon me againſt my knowledge or conſent. I ſurveyed him ſome time, and not being able to recollect his face, demanded with a faultering accent, what his buſineſs was with me? Upon which he deſired I would give him a particular audience, and he did not doubt of communicating ſomething that would conduce to my ſatisfaction and repoſe. As I thought myſelf ſufficiently guarded againſt any violence, I granted his requeſt, and bid the woman withdraw. The ſtranger then advancing, gave me to underſtand that he was well acquainted with the particulars of my ſtory, having been informed of them from Lotharlo's own mouth—that from the time he knew my misfortunes, he had entertained a deteſtation for the author of them; which had of late been increaſed and animated to a deſire of revenge, by a piece of diſhonourable conduct towards him—that hearing of my melancholy ſituation, he had come with an

an intention of offering his assistance and comfort, and was ready to espouse my quarrel, and forthwith take vengeance on my seducer, provided I would grant him one consideration, which (he hoped) I should see no reason to refuse. Had all the artifice of hell been employed in composing a persuasive, it could not have had a more instantaneous or favourable effect than this discourse had upon me. I was transported with a delirium of gloomy joy; I hugged my companion in my arms, and vowed that if he would make good his promise, my fortune and body should be at his disposal. The contract was made; he devoted himself to my revenge, undertook to murder Lothario that very night, and to bring me an account of his death before morning. Accordingly, about two of the clock, he was introduced to my chamber, and assured me that my perfidious lover was no more; that although he was not intitled to such an honourable proceeding, he had fairly challenged him to the field, where he upbraided him with his treachery towards me, for whom (he told me) his sword was drawn, and after a few passes left him weltering in his blood. I was so ravaged by my wrongs, that I delighted in the recital of this adventure, made him repeat the particulars, fixed my eyes with the blood that remained on his clothes and sword, and yielded up my body as a recompence for the service he had done me. My imagination was so engrossed by these ideas, that in my sleep I dreamed Lothario appeared before me, pale, mangled, and bloody; blamed my rashness, protested his innocence, and pleaded his own cause so pathetically, that I was convinced of his fidelity, and waked in a fit of horror and remorse. My bed-fellow endeavoured to sooth, console, and persuade me that I had but barely done justice to myself. I dropt asleep again, and the same apparition returned to my fancy. In short, I passed the night in great misery, and looked upon my avenger with such abhorrence, that in the morning, perceiving my aversion, he intimated there was still a possibility of Lothario's recovery; it was true, he left him wounded on the ground, but not quite dead; and perhaps his hurt might not be mortal. At these words I started up, and hastily for intelligence, and if he could not

not bring me tidings of Lothario's ſafety, at leaſt conſult his own, and never return; for I was reſolved to ſurrender myſelf to juſtice, and declare all that I knew of the affair, that, if poſſible, I might expiate my own guilt, by incurring the rigours of a ſincere repentance and ignominious death. He very coolly repreſented the unreaſonableneſs of my prejudice againſt him, who had done nothing but what his love of me inſpired, and honour juſtified; —that now he had, at the riſk of his life, been inſtrumental to my revenge, I was about to diſcard him as an infamous agent, occaſionally neceſſary: and that even if he ſhould be ſo lucky as to bring news of Lothario's ſafety, it was probable my former reſentment might revive, and I would upbraid him with having failed in his undertaking. I aſſured him, that, on the contrary, he ſhould be dearer to me than ever, as I then ſhould be convinced he acted more on the principles of a man of honour, than on thoſe of a mercenary aſſaſſin, and ſcorned to take away the life of an adverſary (how inveterate ſoever) which fortune had put in his power. "Well "then, madam, (ſaid he) whatever may have happened, "I ſhall find it no difficult matter to acquit myſelf in "point of honour;"—and took his leave in order to inquire into the conſequences of his duel. I was now more ſenſible than ever of the degrees of guilt and miſery; all the affliction I had ſuffered hitherto was owing to my own credulity and weakneſs, and my conſcience could only accuſe me of venial crimes; but now that I looked upon myſelf as a murderer, it is impoſſible to expreſs the terrors of my imagination, which was inceſſantly haunted by the image of the deceaſed, and my boſom ſtung with the moſt exquiſite agonies, of which I ſaw no end. At length, Horatio (for ſo I ſhall call my keeper) returned, and telling me I had nothing to fear, delivered into my hands a billet, containing theſe words:

"MADAM,

"AS I underſtand it is of conſequence to your peace, "I take this liberty to inform you, that the wounds "I received from Horatio are not mortal. This ſatisfac-

"tion

" tion my humanity could not deny, even to a perſon
" who has endeavoured to diſturb the repoſe, as well as
" deſtroy the life of

LOTHARIO."

Being well acquainted with his hand, I had no reaſon to ſuſpect an impoſition in this letter, which I read over and over with a tranſport of joy, and careſſed Horatio ſo much that he appeared the happieſt man alive. Thus was I won from deſpair by the menaces of a greater misfortune than that which depreſſed me. Griefs are like uſurpers, the moſt powerful depoſes all the reſt.—But my raptures were not laſting—that very letter which in a manner re-eſtabliſhed my tranquillity, in a little time baniſhed my peace. His unjuſt reproaches, while they waked my reſentment, recalled my former happineſs, and filled my ſoul with rage and ſorrow. Horatio perceiving the ſituation of my mind, endeavoured to divert my chagrin, by treating me with all the amuſements and entertainments of the town. I was gratified with every indulgence I could deſire; introduced into the company of other kept miſtreſſes, by whom an uncommon deference was paid to me; and I began to loſe all remembrance of my former condition, when an accident brought it back to my view with all its intereſting circumſtances. Diverting myſelf one day with ſome news papers, which I had not before peruſed, the following advertiſement attracted my attention:

" Whereas a young gentlewoman diſappeared from her
" father's houſe, in the county of ———, about the
" end of September, on account (as is ſuppoſed) of ſome
" uneaſineſs of mind, and has not been as yet heard of,—
" Whoever will give any information about her to Mr
" —— — of Gray's-Inn, ſhall be handſomely rewarded;
" or if ſhe will return to the arms of her diſconſolate
" parent, ſhe will be received with the utmoſt tender-
" neſs, whatever reaſon ſhe may have to think other-
" wiſe, and may be the means of prolonging the life of
" a father already weighed down almoſt to the grave
" with age and ſorrow."

THIS

This pathetic remonſtrance had ſuch an effect on me, that I was fully reſolved to return, like the prodigal ſon, and implore the forgiveneſs of him who gave me life; but, alas! upon inquiry, I found he had paid his debt to nature a month before, lamenting my abſence to his laſt hour, having left his fortune to a ſtranger as a mark of his reſentment of my unkind and undutiful behaviour. Penetrated with remorſe on this occaſion, I ſunk into the moſt profound melancholy, and conſidered myſelf as the immediate cauſe of his death. I loſt all reliſh for company, and indeed moſt of my acquaintances no ſooner perceived my change of temper, than they abandoned me. Horatio, diſguſted at my inſenſibility, or (which is more probable) cloyed with poſſeſſion, became colder and colder every day, till at laſt he left me altogether, without making any apology for his conduct, or ſecuring me againſt the miſeries of want, as a man of honour ought to have done, conſidering the ſhare he had in my ruin; for I afterwards learned, that the quarrel between Lothario and him was a ſtory trumped up to rid the one of my importunities, and give the other the enjoyment of my perſon, which, it ſeems, he luſted after, upon ſeeing me at the houſe of my ſeducer. Reduced to this extremity, I curſed my own ſimplicity, uttered horrid imprecations againſt the treachery of Horatio; and as I became every day more and more familiarized to the loſs of innocence, reſolved to be revenged on the ſex in general, by practiſing their own arts upon themſelves:—Nor was an opportunity long wanting: an old gentlewoman, under pretence of ſympathizing, viſited me, and after having condoled me on my misfortunes, and profeſſed a diſintereſted friendſhip, began to diſplay the art of her occupation, in encomiums on my beauty, and invectives againſt the wretch who had forſaken me; inſinuating withal that it would be my own fault if I did not ſtill make my fortune by the extraordinary qualifications with which nature had endowed me. I ſoon underſtood her drift, and gave her ſuch encouragement to explain herſelf, that we came to an agreement immediately to divide the profits of my proſtitution, reſerving to myſelf the ſole diſpoſal of my own perſon.

ſimulation was practiſed upon a certain J—dge, to whom I was recommended by this matron, as an innocent creature juſt arrived from the country. He was ſo tranſported with my appearance and feigned ſimplicity, that he paid a hundred guineas for the poſſeſſion of me for one night only, during which I behaved in ſuch a manner, as to make him perfectly well pleaſed with his purchaſe.

CHAP. XXIII.

She is interrupted by a bailiff, who arreſts, and carries her to the Marſhalſea—I accompany her—bring witneſſes to prove ſhe is not the perſon named in the writ—the bailiff is fain to give her a preſent and diſcharge her—we ſhift our lodging—ſhe reſumes her ſtory, and ends it—my reflections thereupon—ſhe makes me acquainted with the progreſs of a common woman of the town—reſolves to quit that way of life.

HER ſtory was here interrupted by a rap at the door, which I no ſooner opened, than three or four terrible fellows ruſhed in, one of whom accoſted my fellow-lodger thus: "Madam, your ſervant—you muſt do me "the favour to come along with me—I have got a writ "againſt you." While the bailiff (for ſo he was) ſpoke thus, his followers ſurrounded the priſoner, and began to handle her very roughly. This treatment incenſed me ſo much, that I ſnatched up the poker, and would certainly have uſed it in defence of the lady, without any regard to the ſtrengh and number of her adverſaries, had ſhe not begged me, with a compoſure of countenance for which I could not account, to uſe no violence in her behalf, which could be of no ſervice to her, but might be very detrimental to myſelf. Then turning to the leader of this formidable troop, ſhe deſired to ſee the writ, and having peruſed it, ſaid with a faultering voice, "I am not the perſon whoſe name is here mentioned; arreſt me at your peril." "Ay, ay, Madam, (replied the catchpole,) "we ſhall prove your identity.—In the mean time,

"whether

"whether will you be pleaſed to be carried to my houſe "or to jail?"—"If I muſt be confined, (ſaid ſhe,) I "would rather be in your houſe than in a common jail." "Well, well, (anſwered he,) if you have money enough "in your pocket, you ſhall be entertained like a princeſs." But when ſhe acquainted him with her poverty, he ſwore he never gave credit, and ordered one of his myrmidons to call a coach to carry her to the Marſhalſea at once. While they waited for the convenience, ſhe took me aſide, and bad me be under no concern on her account, for ſhe knew how to extricate herſelf from this difficulty very ſoon, and perhaps gain ſomething by the occaſion. Although her diſcourſe was a myſtery to me, I was very well pleaſed with her aſſurance, and when the coach came to the door, offered to accompany her to priſon, to which propoſal, after much intreaty, ſhe conſented. When we arrived at the gate of the Marſhalſea, our conductor alighted, and having demanded entrance, preſented the writ to the turnkey, who no ſooner perceived the name of Elizabeth Cary, than he cried, "Ah, ha! my "old acquaintance Bett! I'm glad to ſee thee with all "my heart." So ſaying, he opened the coach door, and helped her to diſmount; but when he obſerved her face, he ſtarted back, ſaying, "Z——ds! who have we got "here!"—The bailiff, alarmed at this interrogation, cried with ſome emotion, "Who the devil ſhould it be, but "the priſoner Elizabeth Cary?" The turnkey replied, "That Elizabeth Cary!—I'll be damned if that's Eliza-"beth Cary, more than my grandmother.—D—n my "blood, I know Bett Cary as well as if I had made her." Here the lady thought fit to interpoſe, and tell the catchpole, if he had taken her word for it at firſt, he might have ſaved himſelf and her a great deal of trouble. "It "may be ſo, (anſwered he,) but by G—d, I'll have fur-"ther evidence, that you are not the perſon, before you "and I part."—"Yes, yes, (ſaid ſhe,) you ſhall have "further evidence to your coſt." Then we adjourned into the lodge, and called for a bottle of wine, where my companion wrote a direction to two of her acquaintance, and begged the favour of me to go to their lodgings, and request them to come to her immediately. I found them

together at a houſe in Bridges-ſtreet, Drury Lane, and as they were luckily unengaged, they ſet out with me in a hackney-coach without heſitation, after I had related the circumſtances of the affair, which flattered them with hopes of ſeeing a bailiff trounced; for there is an antipathy as natural between the whores and bailiffs, as that ſubſiſting between mice and cats. Accordingly, when they entered the lodge, they embraced the priſoner very affectionately by the name of Nancy Williams, and aſked how long ſhe had been nabb'd, and for what?—On hearing the particulars of her adventure repeated, they offered to ſwear before a juſtice of peace, that ſhe was not the perſon mentioned in the writ, whom, it ſeems, they all knew; but the bailiff, who was by this time convinced of his miſtake, told them he would not put them to that trouble. "Ladies (ſaid he) there's no harm done "—you ſhall give me leave to treat you with another "bottle, and then we'll part friends." This propoſal was not at all reliſhed by the ſiſterhood; and Miſs Williams told him, Sure he did not imagine her ſuch a fool as to be ſatisfied with a paultry glaſs of four wine? Here the turnkey interrupted her, by affirming with an oath, that the wine was as good as ever was tipped over tongue. "Well (continued ſhe) that may be—but was it the beſt "of champaign, it is no recompence for the damage I "have ſuffered both in character and health, by being "wrongfully dragged to jail:—At this rate no inno-"cent perſon is ſafe, ſince an officer of juſtice, out of "malice, private pique, or miſtake, may injure and op-"preſs the ſubject with impunity—but, thank heaven, I "live under the protection of laws that will not ſuffer "ſuch inſults to paſs unpuniſhed, and I know very well "how to procure redreſs." Mr Vulture (for that was the bailiff's name) finding he had to deal with one who would not be impoſed upon, began to look very ſullen and perplexed, and leaning his forehead on his hand, entered into a deliberation with himſelf, which laſted a few minutes, and then broke out in a volley of dreadful curſes againſt the old b—ch our landlady (as he called her) for having miſinformed him. After much wrangling and ſwearing, the matter was referred to the deciſion of the

turnkey,

turnkey, who calling for the other bottle, mulcted the bailiff in all the liquor that had been drank, coach hire, and a couple of guineas for the use of the plaintiff. The money was immediately deposited; Miss Williams gratified the two evidences with one half, and putting the other in her pocket drove home with me, leaving the catchpole grumbling over his loss, yet pleased in the main, for having so cheaply got clear of a business that might have cost him ten times the sum, and his place to boot. This guinea was a very seasonable relief to us, who were reduced to great necessity, six of my shirts, and almost all my clothes, except those on my back, having been either pawned or sold for our maintenance before this happened. As we resented the behaviour of our landlady, our first care was to provide ourselves with another lodging, whither we removed next day, with an intention to keep ourselves as retired as possible, until our cure should be compleated. When we were fixed in our new habitation, I intreated her to finish the story of her life, which she pursued in this manner:

The success of our experiment on the J—ge encouraged us to practise the same deceit on others, and my virginity was five times sold to good purpose; but this harvest lasted not long, my character taking air, and my directress deserting me for some new game. Then I took lodgings near Charing-cross, at two guineas *per* week, and began to entertain company in a public manner:—But my income being too small to defray my expence, I was obliged to retrench, and enter into articles with the porters of certain taverns, who undertook to find employment enough for me, provided I would share my profits with them. Accordingly, I was almost every night engaged with company, among whom I was exposed to every mortification, danger, and abuse, that flow from drunkenness, brutality, and disease. How miserable is the condition of a courtezan, whose business it is to sooth, suffer, and obey the dictates of rage, insolence, and lust! As my spirit was not sufficiently humbled to the will, nor my temper calculated for the conversation of my gallants, it was impossible for me to overcome an aversion I felt for

for my profeſſion, which manifeſted itſelf in a ſettled gloom on my countenance, and diſguſted thoſe ſons of mirth and riot ſo much, that I was frequently uſed in a ſhocking manner, and kicked down ſtairs with diſgrace. The meſſengers ſeeing me diſagreeable to their benefactors and employers, ſeldom troubled me with a call, and I began to find myſelf almoſt totally neglected. To contribute towards my ſupport, I was fain to ſell my watch, rings, trinkets, with the beſt part of my clothes; and I was one evening muſing by myſelf on the miſery before me, when I received a meſſage from a bagnio, whither I repaired in a chair, and was introduced to a gentleman dreſſed like an officer, with whom I ſupped in a ſumptuous manner, and after drinking a hearty glaſs of champaign, went to bed. In the morning when I awoke, I found my gallant had got up, and drawing aſide the curtain, could not perceive him in the room. This circumſtance gave me ſome uneaſineſs, but as he might have retired on ſome neceſſary occaſion, I waited a full hour for his return; and then in the greateſt perplexity roſe up and rung the bell. When the waiter came to the door, he found it locked, and deſired admittance, which I granted, after obſerving with great ſurpriſe, that the key remained on the inſide, as when we went to bed. I no ſooner inquired for the captain, than the fellow ſtaring with a diſtracted look, cried, "How, madam! is he not "a bed?" And when he was ſatisfied as to that particular, ran into a cloſet adjoining to the chamber, the window of which he found open. Through this the adventurer had got upon a wall, from whence he dropped down into a court and eſcaped; leaving me to be anſwerable, not only for the reckoning, but alſo for a large ſilver tankard and poſſet bowl, which he had carried off with him. It is impoſſible to deſcribe the conſternation I was under, when I ſaw myſelf detained as a thief's accomplice; for I was looked upon in that light, and carried before a juſtice, who miſtaking my confuſion for a ſign of guilt, committed me after a ſhort examination to Bridewell. Having adviſed me, as the only means to ſave my life, to turn evidence, and impeach my confederate I now concluded the vengeance of heaven had overta-

ken

ken me, and that I muſt ſoon finiſh my career by an ignominious death. This reflection ſunk ſo deep into my ſoul, that I was for ſome days deprived of my reaſon, and actually believed myſelf in hell tormented by fiends: Indeed there needs not a very extravagant imagination to form that idea; for of all the ſcenes on earth, that of Bridewell approaches neareſt the notion I had always entertained of the infernal regions. Here I ſaw nothing, but rage, anguiſh, and impiety; and heard nothing but groans, curſes, and blaſphemy. In the midſt of this helliſh crew, I was ſubjected to the tyranny of a barbarian, who impoſed upon me taſks that I could not poſſibly perform, and then puniſhed my incapacity with the utmoſt rigour and inhumanity, I was often whipt into a ſwoon, and laſhed out of it, during which miſerable intervals, I was robbed by my fellow-priſoners of every thing about me, even to my cap, ſhoes, and ſtockings: I was not only deſtitute of neceſſaries, but even of food, ſo that my wretchedneſs was extreme. Not one of my acquaintance to whom I imparted my ſituation would grant me the leaſt ſuccour or regard, on pretence of my being committed for theft; and my landlord refuſed to part with ſome of my own clothes which I ſent for, becauſe I was indebted to him for a week's lodging. Overwhelmed with calamity, I grew deſperate, and reſolved to put an end to my grievances and life together; for this purpoſe I got up in the middle of the night, when I thought every body round me aſleep, and fixing one end of my handkerchief to a large hook in the cieling, that ſupported the ſcales on which the hemp is weighed, I ſtood upon a chair, and making a nooſe on the other end, put my neck into it, with an intention to hang myſelf; but before I could adjuſt the knot, I was ſurpriſed and prevented by two women, who had been awake all the while, and ſuſpected my deſign. In the morning my attempt was publiſhed among the priſoners, and puniſhed with thirty ſtripes, the pain of which co-operating with my diſappointment and diſgrace, bereft me of my ſenſes, and threw me into an ecſtacy of madneſs, during which I tore the fleſh from my bones with my teeth, and daſhed my head againſt the pavement; ſo that they were

obliged

obliged to ſet a watch over me, to reſtrain me from doing further miſchief to myſelf and others. This fit of phrenzy continued three days, at the end of which I grew calm and ſullen; but as the deſire of making away with myſelf ſtill remained, I came to a determination of ſtarving myſelf to death, and with that view refuſed all ſuſtenance. Whether it was owing to the want of oppoſition, or to the weakneſs of nature, I know not; but on the ſecond day of my faſt, I found my reſolution conſiderably impaired, and the calls of hunger almoſt inſupportable. At this critical conjuncture a lady was brought into the priſon with whom I had contracted an acquaintance while I lived with Horatio; ſhe was then on the ſame footing as I was, but afterwards quarrelling with her gallant, and not finding another to her mind, altered her ſcheme of life, and ſet up a coffeehouſe among the hundreds of Drury, where ſhe entertained gentlemen with claret, arrack, and the choice of half a dozen of damſels, who lived in her houſe. This ſerviceable matron having neglected to gratify a certain j—ee for the connivance ſhe enjoyed, was indicted at the quarter-ſeſſions, in conſequence of which her bevy was diſperſed, and herſelf committed to Bridewell. She had not been long there, before ſhe learned my diſaſter, and coming up to me, after a compliment of condolence, inquired into the particulars of my fate. While we were engaged in diſcourſe together, the maſter came and told me that the fellow on whoſe account I had ſuffered was taken, that he had confeſſed the theft, and cleared me of any concern in the affair; for which reaſon, he, the maſter, had orders to diſcharge me, and that I was from that moment free. This piece of news ſoon baniſhed all thoughts of death, and had ſuch an inſtantaneous effect on my countenance, that Mrs Coupler (the lady then preſent) hoping to find her account in me, very generouſly offered to furniſh me with what neceſſaries I wanted, and take me into her own houſe, as ſoon as ſhe could compromiſe matters with the j—ees. The conditions of her offer were, that I ſhould pay three guineas weekly for my board, and a reaſonable conſideration beſides for the uſe of ſuch clothes and ornaments as ſhe ſhould ſupply me with,

with, to be deducted from the firſt profits of my embraces. Theſe were hard terms; but not to be rejected by one who was turned out helpleſs and naked into the wide world, without a friend to pity or aſſiſt her. I therefore embraced her propoſal, and ſhe being bailed in a few hours, took me home with her in a coach. As I was by this time conſcious of having formerly diſguſted my admirers by my reſerved and haughty behaviour, I now endeavoured to conquer that diſpoſition, and the ſudden change of my fortune giving me a flow of ſpirits, I appeared in the moſt winning and gay manner I could aſſume. Having the advantage of a good voice and education, I exerted my talents to the uttermoſt, and ſoon became the favourite with all company. This ſucceſs alarmed the pride and jealouſy of Mrs Coupler, who could not bear the thoughts of being eclipſed: She therefore made a merit of her envy, and whiſpered among the cuſtomers that I was unſound. There needed no more to ruin my reputation and blaſt my proſperity; every body ſhunned me with marks of averſion and diſdain, and in a very ſhort time I was as ſolitary as ever. Want of gallants was attended with want of money to ſatisfy my malicious landlady, who having purpoſely given me credit to the amount of eleven pounds, took out a writ againſt me, and I was arreſted in her own houſe. Though the room was crouded with people when the bailiff entered, not one of them had compaſſion enough to mollify my proſecutrix, far leſs to pay the debt; they even laughed at my tears; and one of them bade me be of good cheer, for I ſhould not want admirers in Newgate. At that inſtant, a ſea-lieutenant came in, and ſeeing my plight, began to inquire into the circumſtances of my misfortune, when this wit adviſed him to keep clear of me for I was a fire-ſhip—"A fire-ſhip! (replied the ſailor) more "like a poor galley in diſtreſs, that has been boarded by "ſuch a fire-ſhip as you; if ſo be, as that is the caſe, ſhe "ſtands in more need of aſſiſtance.—Harkee, my girl, "how far have you over-run the conſtable?"—I told him that the debt amounted to eleven pounds, beſides the expence of the writ—"An 'that be all (ſaid he) you ſhan't "go to the bilboes this bout." And taking out his purſe,

paid the money, discharged the bailiff, and telling me I had got into the wrong port, advised me to seek out a more convenient harbour, where I could be safely hove down; for which purpose he made me a present of five guineas more. I was so touched with this singular piece of generosity, that for some time I had not power to thank him. However, as soon as I had recollected myself, I begged the favour of him to go with me to the next tavern, where I explained the nature of my disaster, and convinced him of the falsehood of what was reported to my prejudice so effectually, that he from that moment attached himself to me, and we lived in great harmony together, until he was obliged to go to sea, where he perished in a storm.

Having left my benefactor, and almost consumed the remains of his bounty, I saw myself in danger of relapsing into my former necessity, and began to be very uneasy at the prospect of bailiffs and jails; when one of the sisterhood, a little stale, advised me to take lodgings in a part of the town where I was unknown, and pass for an heiress, by which artifice I might entrap some body to be my husband, who would possibly be able to allow me an handsome maintenance, or at worst screen me from the dread and danger of a prison, by becoming liable for whatever debts I should contract. I approved of this scheme; towards the execution of which my companion clubbed her wardrobe, and undertook to live with me in quality of my maid; with the proviso, that she should be reimbursed, and handsomely considered out of the profits of my success. She was immediately detached to look out for a convenient place, and that very day hired a genteel apartment in Park-street, whither I moved in a coach loaded with her baggage and my own. I made my first appearance in a blue riding habit trimmed with silver; and my maid acted her part so artfully, that in a day or two my fame was spread all over the neighbourhood, and I was said to be a rich heiress just arrived from the country. This report brought a swarm of gay young fellows about me; but I soon found them out to be all indigent adventurers like myself, who crowded to me like crows to a carrion, with a view of preying upon my fortune.

I main

I maintained, however, the appearance of wealth as long as poſſible, in hopes of gaining ſome admirer more for my purpoſe; and at length attracted the regard of one who would have ſatisfied my wiſhes, and managed matters ſo well that a day was actually fixed for our nuptials. In the interim, he begged leave to introduce an intimate friend to me, which requeſt, as I could not refuſe, I had the extreme mortification and ſurpriſe to ſee, next night, in that friend, my old keeper Horatio, who no ſooner beheld me than he changed colour; but had preſence of mind to advance and ſalute me, bidding me (with a low voice) be under no apprehenſion, for he would not expoſe me. In ſpite of his aſſurance, I could not recover myſelf ſo far as to entertain them, but withdrew to my chamber on pretence of a ſevere head-ach, to the no ſmall concern of my adorer, who took his leave in the tendereſt manner, and went off with his friend.

Having imparted my ſituation to my companion, ſhe found it high time for us to decamp, and that without any noiſe, becauſe we were not only indebted to our landlady, but alſo to ſeveral tradeſmen in the neighbourhood. Our retreat (therefore) was concerted and executed in this manner: Having packed up all our clothes and moveables in ſmall parcels, ſhe (on pretence of fetching cordials for me) carried them at ſeveral times, to the houſe of an acquaintance, where ſhe likewiſe procured a lodging, to which we retired in the middle of the night, when every other body in the houſe was aſleep. I was now obliged to aim at lower game, and accordingly ſpread my nets among trades people; but found them all too phlegmatic or cautious for my art and attractions; till at laſt I became acquainted with you, on whom I practiſed all my dexterity: not that I believed you had any fortune or expectation of one, but that I might tranſfer the burthen of ſuch debts as I had incurred or ſhould contract, from myſelf to another; and at the ſame time avenge myſelf of your ſex, by rendering miſerable one who bore ſuch reſemblance to the wretch who ruined me;—but heaven preſerved you from my ſnares, by the diſcovery you made, which was owing to the negligence of my maid in leaving

the chamber-door unlocked when ſhe went to buy ſugar for breakfaſt. The perſon in bed with me, was a gentleman whom I had allured the night before, as he walked homeward pretty much elevated with liquor; for by this time my condition was ſo low, that I was forced to turn out in the twilight to the ſtreets in hopes of prey. When I found myſelf detected and forſaken by you, I was fain to move my lodging, and dwell two pair of ſtairs higher than before: My companion being diſappointed in her expectations, left me, to trade upon her own bottom; and I had no other reſource than to venture forth, like the owls in the dark, to pick up a precarious and uncomfortable ſubſiſtence. I have often ſauntered between Ludgate-hill and Charing-croſs, a whole winter night, expoſed not only to the inclemency of the weather, but likewiſe to the rage of hunger and thirſt, without being ſo happy as to meet with one cully; then creep up to my garret, in a deplorable, draggled condition, ſneak to bed, and try to bury my appetite and ſorrows in ſleep. When I lighted on ſome rake or tradeſman reeling home drunk, I frequently ſuffered the moſt brutal treatment, in ſpite of which I was obliged to affect gaiety and good humour, though my ſoul was ſtung with reſentment and diſdain, and my heart loaded with grief and affliction. In the courſe of theſe nocturnal adventures, I was infected with the diſeaſe, that in a ſhort time rendered me the object of my own abhorrence, and drove me to the retreat where your benevolence reſcued me from the jaws of death.

So much candour and good ſenſe appeared in this lady's narration, that I made no ſcruple of believing every ſyllable of what ſhe ſaid; and expreſſed my aſtoniſhment at the variety of miſeries ſhe had undergone in ſo little time; for all her misfortunes had happened within the compaſs of two years—I compared her ſituation with my own, and found it a thouſand times more wretched. I had endured hardſhips, 'tis true; my whole life had been a ſeries of ſuch; and when I looked forward, the proſpect was not much bettered,—but then they were become habitual to me, and conſequently I could bear them with leſs

leſs difficulty. If one ſcheme of life ſhould not ſucceed, I could have recourſe to another, and ſo to a third, veering about to a thouſand different ſhifts, according to the emergencies of my fate, without forfeiting the dignity of my character beyond a power of retrieving it, or ſubjecting myſelf wholly to the caprice and barbarity of the world. On the other hand, ſhe had known and reliſhed the ſweets of proſperity, ſhe had been brought up under the wings of an indulgent parent, in all the delicacies to which her ſex and rank intitled her; and without any extravagance of hope, entertained herſelf with the view of uninterrupted happineſs through the whole ſcene of life. How fatal then, how tormenting, how intolerable muſt her reverſe of fortune be! a reverſe, that not only robs her of theſe external comforts, and plunges her into all the miſeries of want, but alſo murders her peace of mind, and entails upon her the curſe of eternal infamy? Of all profeſſions I pronounced that of a courtezan the moſt deplorable, and her of all courtezans the moſt unhappy. She allowed my obſervation to be juſt in the main, but at the ſame time affirmed, that notwithſtanding the diſgraces which had fallen to her ſhare, ſhe had not been ſo unlucky in the condition of a proſtitute as many others of the ſame community.—"I have often "ſeen, (ſaid ſhe,) while I ſtrolled about the ſtreets at "midnight, a number of naked wretches reduced to "rags and filth, huddled together like ſwine, in the cor-"ner of a dark alley; ſome of whom, but eighteen "months before, I had known the favourites of the "town, rolling in affluence, and glittering in all the "pomp of equipage and dreſs." And indeed the gradation is eaſily conceived; the moſt faſhionable woman of the town is as liable to contagion as one in a much humbler ſphere; ſhe infects her admirers; her ſituation is public; ſhe is avoided, neglected, unable to ſupport her uſual appearance, which however ſhe ſtrives to maintain as long as poſſible; her credit fails, ſhe is obliged to retrench and become a night-walker, her malady gains ground, ſhe tampers with her conſtitution, and ruins it; her complexion fades, ſhe grows naufeous to every body, finds herſelf reduced to a ſtarving condition, is tempted

to

to pickpockets, is detected, committed to Newgate, where ſhe remains in a miſerable condition, 'till ſhe is diſcharged becauſe the plaintiff will not appear to proſecute her. Nobody will afford her lodging, the ſymptoms of her diſtemper are grown outrageous, ſhe ſues to be admitted into an hoſpital, where ſhe is cured at the expence of her noſe; ſhe is turned out naked into the ſtreets, depends upon the addreſſes of the loweſt claſs, is fain to allay the rage of hunger and cold with gin, degenerates into a brutal inſenſibility, rots, and dies upon a dung-hill. Miſerable wretch that I am! perhaps the ſame horrors are decreed for me!—"No, (cried ſhe after "ſome pauſe) I ſhall never live to ſuch extremity of "diſtreſs! my own hand ſhall open a way for my deli-"verance, before I arrive at that forlorn period!" Her condition filled me with ſympathy and compaſſion; I revered her qualifications, looked upon her as unfortunate, not criminal; and attended her with ſuch care and ſucceſs, that in leſs than two months, her health, as well as my own, was perfectly re-eſtabliſhed. As we often conferred upon our mutual affairs, and interchanged advice, a thouſand different projects were formed, which upon farther canvaſſing appeared impracticable. We would have gladly gone to ſervice; but who would take us in without recommendation? At length an expedient occurred to her, of which ſhe intended to lay hold; and this was, to procure with the firſt money ſhe ſhould earn, the homely garb of a country wench, go to ſome village at a good diſtance from town, and come up in a waggon, as a freſh girl for ſervice: by which means, ſhe might be provided for, in a manner much more ſuitable to her inclination, than her preſent way of life.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

I am reduced to great misery—assaulted on Towerhill *by a press-gang, who put me on board a tender—my usage there—my arrival on board of the Thunder man of war, where I am put in irons, and afterwards released by the good offices of Mr* Thompson, *who recommends me as assistant to the surgeon—he relates his own story, and makes me acquainted with the characters of the captain, surgeon and first mate.*

I Applauded the resolution of Miss Williams, who, a few days after, was hired in quality of bar-keeper, by one of the ladies who had witnessed in her behalf at the Marshalsea; and who since that time had got credit with a wine-merchant, whose favourite she was, to set up a convenient house of her own. Thither my fellow-lodger repaired, after having taken leave of me, with a torrent of tears, and a thousand protestations of eternal gratitude; assuring me, she would remain in this situation no longer than she should pick up money sufficient to put her other design in execution.

As for my own part, I saw no resource but the army or navy, between which I hesitated so long, that I found myself reduced to a starving condition. My spirit began to accommodate itself to my beggarly fate, and I became so mean as to go down towards Wapping, with an intention to enquire for an old school fellow, who (I understood) had got the command of a small coasting vessel, then in the river, and implore his assistance. But my delicacy prevented this abject piece of behaviour; for as I strolled Tower-ward, a tipsy tawny fellow with a long queue by his side, and a cudgel in his hand, came up to me, calling, "Yo ho! brother, you must come along with me." As I did not like his appearance, instead of answering his salutation, I quickened my pace, in hopes of reaching my friend's chambers; upon which he whistled aloud, and immediately another tawny appeared before me, who laid hold of me by the collar, and began [illegible] of a number of [illegible]

treatment, I diſengaged myſelf of the aſſailant, and with one blow of my cudgel laid him motionleſs on the ground; and perceiving myſelf ſurrounded in a trice by ten or a dozen more, exerted myſelf with ſuch dexterity and ſucceſs, that ſome of my opponents were fain to attack me with drawn cutlaſſes; and after an obſtinate engagement, in which I received a large wound on my head, and another on my left cheek, I was diſarmed, taken priſoner, and carried on board a preſſing tender; where, after being pinioned like a malefactor, I was thruſt down into the hold, among a parcel of miſerable wretches, the ſight of whom well nigh diſtracted me. As the commanding officer had not humanity enough to order my wounds to be dreſſed, and I could not uſe my own hands, I deſired one of my fellow-captives who was unfettered, to take a handkerchief out of my pocket and tie it round my head, to ſtop the bleeding. He pulled out my handkerchief ('tis true) but inſtead of applying it to the uſe for which I deſigned it, went to the grating of the hatch-way, and, with aſtoniſhing compoſure, ſold it before my face to a bum-boat-woman *, then on board, for a quart of gin, with which he treated his companions, regardleſs of my circumſtances and entreaties.

I complained bitterly of this robbery to the midſhipman on deck, telling him at the ſame time, that unleſs my hurts were dreſſed, I ſhould bleed to death. But compaſſion was a weakneſs of which no man could juſtly accuſe this perſon, who ſquirting a mouthful of diſſolved tobacco upon me through the gratings, told me, "I was a mutinous dog, and that I might die and be "damned." Finding there was no other remedy, I appealed to patience, and laid up this uſage in my memory, to be recalled at a fitter ſeaſon. In the mean time, loſs of blood, vexation, and want of food, contributed, with the noiſome ſtench of the place, to throw me into a ſwoon; out of which I was recovered by a tweak of the noſe, adminiſtred by the tar who ſtood centinel over us, who

* A bum-boat-woman, is one who ſells bread, cheeſe, greens, liquor, and freſh proviſion to the ſailors, in a ſmall boat that lies along-ſide of the ſhip.

who at the ſame time regaled me with a draught of flip, and comforted me with the hopes of being put on board of the Thunder next day, where I ſhould be freed of my handcuffs, and cured of my wounds by the doctor. I no ſooner heard him name the Thunder, than I aſked, if he had belonged to that ſhip long; and he giving me to underſtand he had belonged to her five years, I inquired if he knew Lieutenant Bowling? "Know Lieutenant Bowling, (ſaid he)—odds my life! and that I do; and a good ſeaman he is, as ever ſtept upon forecaſtle—and a brave fellow as ever crackt biſket;—none of your Guinea pigs,—nor your freſh water, wiſhy waſhy, fair-weather fowls. Many a taught gale of wind has honeſt Tom Bowling and I weathered together.—Here's his health with all my heart, wherever he is, a-loft or a-low—in heaven or in hell—all's one for that—he needs not be aſhamed to ſhow himſelf." I was ſo much affected with this eulogium, that I could not refrain telling him that I was Lieutenant Bowling's kinſman; in conſequence of which connection, he expreſſed an inclination to ſerve me, and when he was relieved, brought ſome cold boiled beef in a platter, and biſcuit, on which we ſupped plentifully, and afterwards drank another can of flip together. While we were thus engaged, he recounted a great many exploits of my uncle, who (I found) was very much beloved by the ſhip's company, and pitied for the misfortune that happened to him in Hiſpaniola, which I was very glad to be informed was not ſo great as I imagined; for, Captain Oakhum had recovered of his wounds, and actually at that time commanded the ſhip. Having by accident, in my pocket, my uncle's letter written from Port Louis, I gave it my benefactor (whoſe name was Jack Rattlin) for his peruſal; but honeſt Jack told me frankly he could not read, and deſired to know the contents, which I immediately communicated. When he heard that part of it, in which, he ſays, he had writ to his landlord in Deal, he cried, "Body o' me! that was "old Ben Block,—he was dead before the letter came "to hand.—Ey, ey, had Ben been alive, Lieutenant "Bowling would have had no occaſion to ſculk ſo long.

" Honeſt Ben was the firſt man that taught him to " hand, reef, and ſteer—Well, well, we muſt all die, " that's certain.—we muſt all come to port ſooner or " later,—at ſea or on ſhore ;—we muſt be faſt moored " one day,—death's like the beſt bower anchor, as the " ſaying is, it will bring us all up." I could not but ſignify my approbation of the juſtneſs of Jack's reflections ; and inquired into the occaſion of the quarrel between Captain Oakhum and my uncle, which he explained in this manner : " Captain Oakhum, to beſure, is a " good man enough,—beſides he's my commander ;— " but what's that to me ?—I do my duty, and value no " man's anger of a rope's end.—Now the report goes, as " how he's a lord's or baron knight's brother, whereby " (d'ye ſee me) he carries a ſtrait arm, and keeps aloof " from his officers, thof, may-hap, they may be as good " men in the main as he. Now we lying at anchor in " Tuberoon bay, Lieutenant Bowling had the middle " watch, and as he always kept a good look out, he " made (d'ye ſee) three lights in the offing, whereby he " ran down to the great cabin for orders, and found the " captain aſleep ;—whereupon he waked him, which put " him in a main high paſſion, and he ſwore woundily at " the lieutenant, and called him louſy Scotch ſon of a " whore, (for I being then centinel in the ſteerage, heard " all,) and ſwab and lubber ; whereby the lieutenant re- " turned the ſalute, and they jawed together fore and " aft a good ſpell, till at laſt the captain turned out, and " laying hold of a rattan, came athwart Mr Bowling's " quarter ; whereby he told the captain, that if he was " not his commander he would heave him over-board, " and demanded ſatisfaction a-ſhore ; whereby, in the " morning watch, the captain went a-ſhore in the pin- " nace, and afterwards the lieutenant carried the cutter " a ſhore ; and ſo they, leaving the boats crews on their " oars, went away together ; and ſo (d'ye ſee) in leſs " than a quarter of an hour we heard firing, whereby " we made for the place, and found the captain lying " wounded on the beach, and ſo brought him on board " to the doctor, who cured him in leſs than ſix weeks. " But the lieutenant clapt on all the ſail he could bear,

" and

" and had got far enough a-head before we knew any " thing of the matter, ſo that we could never after get " ſight of him; for which we were not ſorry, becauſe " the captain was mainly wroth, and would certainly " have done him a miſchief;—for he afterwards cauſed " him to be run on the ſhip's books, whereby he loſt all " his pay, and if he ſhould be taken, would be tried as " a deſerter."

This account of the captain's behaviour gave me no advantageous idea of his character; and I could not help lamenting my own fate, that had ſubjected me to ſuch a commander. However, making a virtue of neceſſity, I put a good face on the matter, and next day was with the other preſſed men put on board of the Thunder, lying at the Nore. When we came along ſide, the mate who guarded us thither, ordered my handcuffs to be taken off, that I might get on board the eaſier; this circumſtance being perceived by ſome of the company who ſtood upon the gangboards to ſee us enter, one of them called to Jack Rattlin, who was buſied in doing this friendly office for me; " Hey, Jack, what Newgate gal- " ley have you boarded on the river as you came along? " Have we not got thieves enough among us already?" Another obſerving my wounds, which remained expoſed to the air, told me my ſeams were uncaulked, and that I muſt be new payed:—a third, ſeeing my hair clotted together with blood, as it were, into diſtinct cords, took notice, that my bows were manned with the red ropes, inſtead of my ſide:—a fourth aſked me if I could not keep my yards ſquare without iron braces? And in ſhort, a thouſand witticiſms of the ſame nature were paſſed upon me before I could get up the ſhip's ſide. After we had been all entered upon the ſhip's books, I inquired of one of my ſhipmates where the ſurgeon was, that I might have my wounds dreſſed, and had actually got as far as the middle deck (for our ſhip carried eighty guns) in my way to the cockpit, when I was met by the ſame midſhipman who had uſed me ſo barbarouſly in the tender: he ſeeing me free from my chains, aſked with an inſolent air, who had releaſed me? To this queſtion I fooliſhly anſwered, with a countenance that

too plainly declared the ſtate of my thoughts, "Whoever "did it, I am perſuaded did not conſult you in the af- "fair." I had no ſooner uttered theſe words, than he cried, "Damn you, you ſaucy ſon of a bitch, I'll teach "you to talk ſo to your officer." So ſaying, he beſtowed on me ſeveral ſevere ſtripes with a ſupple Jack he had in his hand; and going to the commanding officer, made ſuch a report of me that I was immediately put in irons by the maſter at arms, and a centinel placed over me. Honeſt Rattlin, as ſoon as he heard of my condition, came to me, and adminiſtred all the conſolation he could, and then went to the ſurgeon in my behalf, who ſent one of his mates to dreſs my wounds. This mate was no other than my old friend Thomſon, with whom I became acquainted at the Navy-office, as before mentioned. If I knew him at firſt ſight, it was not eaſy for him to recognize me, disfigured with blood and dirt, and altered by the miſery I had undergone. Unknown as I was to him, he ſurveyed me with looks of compaſſion, and handled my ſores with great tenderneſs. When he had applied what he thought proper, and was about to leave me, I aſked him if my misfortunes had diſguiſed me ſo much that he could not recollect my face? Upon this addreſs he obſerved me with great earneſtneſs for ſome time, and at length, proteſted he could not recollect one feature of my countenance. To keep him no longer in ſuſpence, I told him my name; which when he heard, he embraced me with affection, and profeſſed his ſorrow in ſeeing me in ſuch a diſagreeable ſituation. I made him acquainted with my ſtory, and when he heard how inhumanely I had been uſed in the tender, he left me abruptly, aſſuring me I ſhould ſee him again ſoon. I had ſcarce time to wonder at his ſudden departure when the maſter at arms came to the place of my confinement, and bade me follow him to the quarter-deck, where I was examined by the firſt lieutenant, who commanded the ſhip in the abſence of the captain, touching the treatment I had received in the tender from my friend the midſhipman, who was preſent to confront me. I recounted the particulars of his behaviour to me, not only in the tender, but ſince my being on board the ſhip, part

of

of which being proved by the evidence of Jack Rattlin and others, who had no great devotion for my oppreſſor, I was diſcharged from confinement to make way for him, who was delivered to the maſter at arms to take his turn in the bilboes. And this was not the only ſatisfaction I enjoyed; for I was, at the requeſt of the ſurgeon, exempted from all other duty than that of aſſiſting his mates in making and adminiſtring medicines to the ſick. This good office I owed to the friendſhip of Mr Thomſon, who had repreſented me in ſuch a favourable light to the ſurgeon, that he demanded me of the lieutenant to ſupply the place of his third mate, who was lately dead. When I had obtained this favour, my friend Thomſon carried me down to the cockpit, which is the place allotted for the habitation of the ſurgeon's mates: and when he had ſhewn me their birth, (as he called it,) I was filled with aſtoniſhment and horror. We deſcended by divers ladders to a ſpace as dark as a dungeon, which I underſtood was immerſed ſeveral feet under water, being immediately above the hold: I had no ſooner approached this diſmal gulf, than my noſe was ſaluted with an intolerable ſtench of putrified cheeſe and rancid butter, that iſſued from an apartment at the foot of the ladder, reſembling a chandler's ſhop, where, by the faint glimmering of a candle, I could perceive a man with a pale meagre countenance, ſitting behind a kind of deſk, having ſpectacles on his noſe and a pen in his hand. This (I learned of Mr Thomſon) was the ſhip's ſteward, who ſat there to diſtribute proviſions to the ſeveral meſſes, and to mark what each received. He therefore preſented my name to him, and deſired I might be entered in his mess; then taking a light in his hand, conducted me to the place of his reſidence, which was a ſquare of about ſix feet, ſurrounded with the medicine cheſt, that of the firſt mate, his own, and a board by way of table faſtened to the after-powder room; it was alſo incloſed with canvas nailed round to the beams of the ſhip, to ſcreen us from the cold, as well as from the view of the midſhipmen and quarter-maſters, who lodged within the cable tiers on each ſide of us. In this gloomy mantion he entertained me with ſome cold ſalt pork, which he brought from a ſort of locker,

fixed above the table; and calling for the boy of the mefs, ſent for a can of beer, of which he made excellent flip to crown the banquet. By this time I began to recover my ſpirits, which had been exceedingly depreſſed with the appearance of every thing about me, and could no longer refrain from aſking the particulars of Mr Thomſon's fortune ſince I had ſeen him in London. He told me, that being diſappointed in his expectations of borrowing money to gratify the rapacious ſ—t—y at the Navy-office, he found himſelf utterly unable to ſubſiſt any longer in town, and had actually offered his ſervice in quality of mate, to the ſurgeon of a merchant's ſhip bound to Guinea on the ſlaving trade; when one morning a young fellow, of whom he had ſome acquaintance, came to his lodgings, and informed him that he had ſeen a warrant made out in his name at the navy-office, for ſurgeon's ſecond mate of a third rate: this unexpected piece of good news he could ſcarcely believe to be true; more eſpecially, as he had been found qualified at Surgeon's Hall for third mate only; but that he might not be wanting to himſelf, he went thither to be aſſured, and actually found it ſo: whereupon, demanding his warrant, it was delivered to him, and the oaths adminiſtred immediately. That very afternoon he went to Graveſend in the tilt boat, from whence he took a place in the tide coach for Rocheſter; next morning got on board the Thunder, for which he was appointed, then lying in the harbour at Chatham; and the ſame day was muſtered by the clerk of the cheque:—and well it was for him that ſuch expedition was uſed; for in leſs than twelve hours after his arrival, another William Thomſon came on board, affirming that he was the perſon for whom the warrant was expedited, and that the other was an impoſtor. My friend was grievouſly alarmed at this accident, the more ſo, as his namefake had very much the advantage over him, both in aſſurance and dreſs. However, to acquit himſelf of the ſuſpicion of impoſture, he produced ſeveral letters written from Scotland to him in that name, and recollecting that his indentures were in a box on board, he brought them up, and convinced all preſent that he had not aſſumed a name which did not belong

belong to him. His competitor, enraged that they ſhould heſitate in doing him juſtice, (for to be ſure the warrant had been deſigned for him), behaved with ſo much indecent heat, that the commanding officer (who was the ſame gentleman I had ſeen) and the ſurgeon were offended at his preſumption, and making a point of it with their friends in town, in leſs than a week got the firſt confirmed in his ſtation.—"I have been on board (ſaid "he) ever ſince, and as this way of life is become familiar to me, have no cauſe to complain of my ſituation. "The ſurgeon is a good natured indolent man; the firſt "mate (who is now on ſhore on duty) is indeed a little "proud and choleric, as all Welchmen are, but in the "main, a friendly honeſt fellow. The lieutenants I "have no concern with; and as for the captain, he is "too much of a gentleman to know a ſurgeon's mate "even by ſight."

CHAP. XXV.

The behaviour of Mr Morgan*—his pride, diſpleaſure, and generoſity—the œconomy of our meſs deſcribed—*Thomſon's *further friendſhip—the nature of my duty explained—the ſituation of the ſick.*

WHILE he was thus diſcourſing to me, we heard a voice on the cockpit-ladder, pronounce with great vehemence, in a ſtrange dialect, "The devil and "his dam blow me from the top of Mounchdenny, if I "go to him before there is ſomething in my pelly;—let "his noſe be as yellow as ſaffron, or as plum as a pell "(look you) or green as a leek, 'tis all one." To this declaration ſomebody anſwered, "So it ſeems my poor "meſs-mate muſt part his cable for want of a little aſ-"ſiſtance:—His fore top-ſail is looſe already; and be-"ſides the doctor ordered you to cover him;—but "I ſee you don't mind what your maſter ſays." Here he was interrupted with, "Splutter and oons! you louſy "tog, who do you call my maſter? get you gone to the "doctor, and tell him my birth, and education, and my "abilities,

" abilities, and moreover, my behaviour is as good as " his, or any ſhentleman's (no diſparagement to him) " in the whole world—Got pleſs my ſoul? does he think, " or conceive, or imagine, that I am an horſe, or an aſs, " or a goat, to trudge backwards and forwards, and up- " wards and downwards, and by ſea, and by land, at his " will and pleaſure?—Go your ways, you rapſcallion, " and tell Doctor Atkins, that I deſire and requeſt, that " he will give a look upon the tying man, and order " ſomething for him if he be dead or alive, and I will " ſee him take it by and by, when my craving ſtomach " is ſatisfied, look you." At this the other went away, ſaying, that if they would ſerve him ſo when he was dying, by God, he would be ſoul of them in the other world. Here Mr Thomſon let me know that the perſon we heard was Mr Morgan the firſt mate, who was juſt come on board from the hoſpital, whither he had attended ſome of the ſick in the morning. At the ſame time I ſaw him come into the birth. He was a ſhort thick man, with a face garniſhed with pimples, a ſnub noſe turned up at the end, and exceſſive wide mouth, and little fiery eyes, ſurrounded with ſkin puckered up in innumerable wrinkles. My friend immediately made him acquainted with my caſe; when he regarded me with a very lofty look, but without ſpeaking, ſet down a bundle he had in his hand, and approached the cupboard, which when he had opened, he exclaimed in a great paſſion, " Got is my life! all the pork is gone, as I am a " Chriſtian!" Thomſon then gave him to underſtand, that as I had been brought on board half famiſhed, he could do no leſs than entertain me with what was in the locker; and the rather as he had bid the ſteward enter me in the meſs. Whether this diſappointment made Mr Morgan more peeviſh than uſual, or he really thought himſelf too little regarded by his fellow-mate, I know not; but after ſome pauſe, he went on in this manner. " Mr Thomſon, perhaps you do not uſe me with all the " good manners and complaiſance, and reſpect, (look " you), that becomes you, becauſe you have not found- " fal to advance with me in this affair. I have, in my " time (look you), been a man of ſome weight and re-

" putation

" ſtance, and conſideration, and have kept houſe and " home, and paid ſcot and lot, and the king's taxes; ay, " and maintained a family to boot. And moreover, al- " ſo, I am your ſenior, and your elder, and your petter, " Mr Thomſon."—" My elder, I'll allow you to be, " but not my better," (cried Thomſon with ſome heat.) " Got is my ſaviour, and witneſs too (ſaid Morgan, with " great vehemence) that I am more elder, and therefore " more petter by many years than you." Fearing this diſpute might be attended with ſome bad conſequence, I interpoſed, and told Mr Morgan, I was very ſorry for having been the occaſion of any difference between him and the ſecond mate; and that rather than cauſe the leaſt breach in their good underſtanding, I would eat my allowance by myſelf, or ſeek admiſſion into ſome other company. But Thomſon, with more ſpirit than diſcretion (as I thought) inſiſted upon my remaining where he had appointed me; and obſerved, that no man poſſeſſed of generoſity and compaſſion, would have any objection to it, conſidering my birth and talents, and the misfortunes I had of late ſo unjuſtly undergone. This was touching Mr Morgan on the right key, who proteſted with great earneſtneſs, that he had no objection to my being received into the meſs; but only complained, that the ceremony of aſking his conſent was not obſerved. " As for a ſhentleman in diſtreſs, (ſaid he, ſhaking me " by the hand), I loſe him as I loſe my own bowels: For " Got help me! I have had vexations enough upon my " own pack." And as I afterwards learned, in ſo ſaying, he ſpoke no more than what was true; for he had been once ſettled in a very good ſituation in Glamorganſhire, and was ruined by being ſecurity for an acquaintance. All differences being compoſed, he untied his bundle, which conſiſted of three bunches of onions, and a great lump of Cheſhire cheeſe wrapt up in a handkerchief; and taking ſome biſcuit from the cupboard, fell to with a keen appetite, inviting us to a ſhare of the repaſt. When he had fed heartily on his homely fare, he filled a large cup made of a cocoa nut ſhell, with brandy, and drinking it off, told us, " Prandy was the peſt men- " ſtruum for onion and ſheeſe." His hunger being ap-

peaſed, he began to be in better humour; and being inquiſitive about my birth, no ſooner underſtood that I was deſcended of a good family, than he diſcovered a particular good will to me on that account, deducing his own pedigree in a direct line from the famous Caractacus king of the Britons, who was firſt the priſoner and afterwards the friend of Claudius Cæſar. Perceiving how much I was reduced in point of linen, he made me a preſent of two good ruffled ſhirts, which with two more of check which I received from Mr Thomſon, enabled me to appear with decency. Meanwhile the ſailor, whom Mr Morgan had ſent to the doctor, brought a preſcription for his meſs-mate, which, when the Welſhman had read, he got up to prepare it, and aſked, if the man was "dead "or alive." "Dead! (replied Jack,) if he was dead he "would have no occaſion for doctor's ſtuff. No, thank "God, death han't as yet boarded him, but they have "been yard-arm and yard-arm theſe three glaſſes" "Are "his eyes open?" (continued the mate)—"his ſtarboard "eye (ſaid the ſailor) is open, but ſait jamm'd in his head; "and the haulyards of his under jaw have given way." "Paſſion of my heart! (cried Morgan) the man is as "pad as one would deſire to be!—Did you feel his pul"ſes?" To this the other replied with "Anan?" Upon which this Cambro-Briton, with great earneſtneſs and humanity, ordered the tar to run to his meſs-mate and keep him alive till he ſhould come with the medicine, "and then (ſaid he) you ſhall peradventure behold what "you ſhall ſee." The poor fellow with great ſimplicity ran to the place where the ſick man lay, but in leſs than a minute returned with a woful countenance, and told us his comrade had ſtruck. Morgan hearing this exclaimed, "Mercy upon my ſalvation! why did you not ſtop him "till I came?"—"Stop him (ſaid the other) I hailed him "ſeveral times, but he was too far on his way, and the "enemy had got poſſeſſion of his cloſe quarters; ſo that "he did not mind me." "Well, well, (ſaid he), we all "owe Nature a death. Go your ways, you raggamuffin, "and take an example and a warning, look you, and repent of your miſdeeds." So ſaying, he puſhed the ſeaman out of the birth.

While

While he entertained us with reflections suitable to this event, we heard the boatswain pipe to dinner; and immediately the boy belonging to our mess ran to the locker, from whence he carried off a large wooden platter, and in a few minutes returned with it full of boiled peafe, crying, "Scaldings," all the way as he came. The cloth, conſiſting of a piece of an old ſail, was inſtantly laid, covered with three plates, which by the colour I could with difficulty diſcern to be metal, and as many ſpoons of the ſame compoſition, two of which were curtailed in the handles, and the other abridged in the lip. Mr Morgan himſelf enriched this meſs with a lump of ſalt butter, ſcooped from an old gallipot, and a handful of onions ſhorn, with ſome pounded pepper. I was not very much tempted with the appearance of this diſh, of which, nevertheleſs, my meſs-mates ate heartily, adviſing me to follow their example, as it was banyan-day, and we could have no meat till next noon. But I had already laid in ſufficient for the occaſion; and therefore deſired to be excuſed; expreſſing a curioſity to know the meaning of banyan-day. They told me, that on Mondays, Wedneſdays, and Fridays, the ſhip's company had no allowance for meat, and that theſe meagre days were called banyan-days, the reaſon of which they did not know; but I have ſince learned they take their denomination from a ſect of devotees in ſome parts of the Eaſt Indies, who never taſte fleſh.

After dinner, Thomſon led me round the ſhip, ſhewed me the different parts, deſcribed their uſes, and, as far as he could, made me acquainted with the particulars of the diſcipline and œconomy practiſed on board. He then demanded of the boatſwain an hammock for me, which was ſtung in a very neat manner by my friend Jack Rattlin; and as I had no bedclothes, procured credit for two, both the perſon for a mattraſs and two blankets. At [illegible] in the evening [illegible] tick, and having ordered [illegible] Thomſon in making up his [illegible]

any ſick perſon ſhould recover. Here I ſaw about fifty miſerable diſtempered wretches ſuſpended in rows, ſo huddled one upon another, that not more than fourteen inches ſpace was allotted for each with his bed and bedding; and deprived of the light of the day, as well as of freſh air; breathing nothing but a noiſome atmoſphere of the morbid ſteams exhaling from their own excrements and diſeaſed bodies, devoured with vermin hatched in the filth that ſurrounded them, and deſtitute of every convenience neceſſary for people in that helpleſs condition.

CHAP. XXVI.

A diſagreeable accident happens to me in the diſcharge of my office—Morgan's *noſe is offended*—*a dialogue between him and the ſhip's ſteward*—*upon examination, I find more cauſes of complaint than one*—*my hair is cut off*—Morgan's *cookery*—*the manner of ſleeping on board*—*I am waked in the night by a dreadful noiſe.*

I Could not comprehend how it was poſſible for the attendants to come near thoſe who hung on the inſide towards the ſides of the ſhip, in order to aſſiſt them, as they ſeemed barricadoed by thoſe who lay on the outſide, and entirely out of the reach of all viſitation. Much leſs could I conceive how my friend Thomſon would be able to adminiſter clyſters, that were ordered for ſome in that ſituation; when I ſaw him thruſt his wig in his pocket, and ſtrip himſelf to his waiſtcoat in a moment, then creep on all four, under the hammocks of the ſick, and forcing up his bare pate between two, keep them aſunder with one ſhoulder until he had done his duty. Eager to learn the ſervice, I deſired he would give me leave to perform the next operation of that kind; and he conſenting, I undreſſed myſelf after his example, and crawling along, the ſhip happened to roll; this motion alarming me, I laid hold of the firſt thing that came within my graſp, with ſuch violence, that I overturned it, and ſoon found, by the ſmell that iſſued upon me, I had not unlocked

unlocked a box of the moſt delicious perfume; it was well for me that my noſe was none of the moſt delicate, elſe I know not how I might have been affected by this vapour, which diffuſed itſelf all over the ſhip, to the utter diſcompoſure of every body who tarried on the ſame deck;—neither was the conſequence of this diſgrace confined to my ſenſe of ſmelling only; for I felt my misfortune more ways than one. That I might not, however, appear altogether diſconcerted in this my firſt eſſay, I got up, and puſhing my head with great force between two hammocks, towards the middle, where the greateſt reſiſtance was, I made an opening indeed, but not underſtanding the knack of dexterouſly turning my ſhoulder to maintain my advantage, had the mortification to find myſelf ſtuck up as it were on a pillory, and the weight of three or four people bearing on each ſide of my neck; ſo that I was in danger of ſtrangulation. While I remained in this defenceleſs poſture, one of the ſick men, rendered peeviſh by his diſtemper, was ſo enraged at the ſmell I had occaſioned, and the rude ſhock he had received from me in my elevation, that with many bitter reproaches, he ſeized me by the noſe, which he tweaked ſo unmercifully that I roared with anguiſh. Thomſon perceiving my condition, ordered one of the waiters to my aſſiſtance, who with much difficulty diſengaged me from this ſituation, and hindered me from taking vengeance on the ſick man, whoſe indiſpoſition would not have ſcreened him from the effects of my indignation.

After having made an end of our miniſtry for that time we deſcended to the cockpit, my friend comforted me for what had happened with a homely proverb, which I do not chuſe to repeat. When we had deſcended half way down the ladder, Mr Morgan, before he ſaw us, having intelligence by his noſe of the approach of ſomething extraordinary, cried, "Got have mercy "upon my ſenſes! I believe the enemy has poarded us "in a ſtink-pot!" Then directing his diſcourſe to the ſteward, from whom he imagined the odour proceeded, he reprimanded him ſeverely for the freedoms he took among gentlemen of birth, and threatened to ſmoak him like a badger with tobacco, if he ever ſhould preſume to offend

offend his neighbours with ſuch ſmells for the future. The ſteward, conſcious of his own innocence, replied with ſome warmth, "I know of no ſmells but thoſe of "your own making." This repartee introduced a ſmart dialogue, in which the Welſhman undertook to prove, that though the ſtench he complained of did not flow from the ſteward's own body, he was nevertheleſs the author of it, by ſerving out damaged proviſions to the ſhip's company; and in particular, putrified cheeſe, from the uſe of which only, he affirmed, ſuch unſavoury ſteams could ariſe. Then he launched out into the praiſe of good cheeſe, of which he gave the analyſis; he explained the different kinds of that commodity, with the methods practiſed to make and preſerve it; and concluded with obſerving, that in yielding good cheeſe, the county of Glamorgan might vie with Cheſhire itſelf, and was much ſuperior to it in the produce of goats and butter. I gathered from this converſation, that if I entered in my preſent pickle, I ſhould be no welcome gueſt, and therefore deſired Mr Thomſon to go before and repreſent my calamity; at which the firſt mate expreſſing ſome concern, went upon deck immediately, taking his way through the cable tire and by the main hatchway, to avoid encountering me; deſiring me to clean myſelf as ſoon as poſſible; for he intended to regale himſelf with a diſh of ſalmagundy and a pipe. Accordingly I ſet about this diſagreeable buſineſs, and ſoon found I had more cauſes of complaint than I at firſt imagined; for I perceived ſome gueſts had honoured me with their company, whoſe viſit I did not at all think ſeaſonable; neither did they ſeem inclined to leave me in a hurry, for, they were in poſſeſſion of my chief quarters, where they fed without reſerve at the expence of my blood. But conſidering it would be much eaſier to extirpate this ferocious colony in the infancy of their ſettlement, than after they ſhould be multiplied and naturalized to the ſoil, I took the advice of my friend, who, to prevent ſuch misfortunes, went always cloſe ſhaved, and made the boy of our mate cut off my hair, which had been growing ſince I left the ſervice of Lavement; and the ſecond mate lent me an old bob-wig to ſmoak the lois of that cover-

[illegible]

affair being ended, and every thing adjusted in the best manner my circumstances would permit, the descendant of Caractacus returned, and ordering the boy to bring a piece of salt beef from the brine, cut off a slice, and mixed it with an equal quantity of onions, which seasoning with a moderate proportion of pepper and salt, he brought it into a consistence with oil and vinegar. Then tasting the dish, assured us, it was the best salmagundy that ever he made, and recommended it to our palate with such heartiness, that I could not help doing honour to his preparation. But I had no sooner swallowed a mouthful, than I thought my entrails were scorched, and endeavoured, with a deluge of small beer, to allay the heat it occasioned. Supper being over, Mr Morgan having smoaked a couple of pipes, and supplied the moisture he had expended with as many cans of flip, of which we all partook, a certain yawning began to admonish me, that it was high time to repair by sleep the injury I had suffered from want of rest the preceding night; which being perceived by my companions, whose time of repose was now arrived, they proposed we should turn in, or, in other words, go to bed. Our hammocks, which hung parallel to one another, on the outside of the birth, were immediately unlashed, and I beheld my mess-mates spring with great agility into their respective nests, where they seemed to lie concealed very much at their ease. But it was sometime before I could prevail upon myself to trust my carcase at such a distance from the ground, in a narrow bag, out of which I imagined I should be apt, on the least motion in my sleep, to tumble down at the hazard of breaking my bones. I suffered myself, however, to be persuaded, and taking a leap to get in, threw myself quite over with such violence, that had I not luckily got hold of Thomson's hammock, I should have pitched upon my head on the other side, and in all likelihood fractured my skull. After some fruitless efforts, I succeeded at last, but the apprehension of the jeopardy in which I believed myself without all the attacks of sleep till towards the morning-watch, when, in spite of my force, I was overpowered with slumber: though I did not long enjoy this comfortable intuition, being aroused with a noise

a noiſe ſo loud and ſo ſhrill, that I thought the drums of my ears were burſt by it; this was followed by a dreadful ſummons pronounced by a hoarſe voice, which I could not underſtand. While I was debating with myſelf whether or not I ſhould wake my companion and inquire into the occaſion of this diſturbance, I was informed by one of the quarter-maſters, who paſſed by me with a lanthorn in his hand, that the noiſe which alarmed me was occaſioned by the boatſwain's mates who called up the larboard watch, and that I muſt lay my account with ſuch interruption every morning at the ſame hour. Being now more aſſured of my ſafety, I addreſſed myſelf again to reſt, and ſlept till eight o'clock, when riſing, and breakfaſting with my comrades on biſcuit and brandy, the ſick were viſited and aſſiſted as before; after which viſitation my good friend Thomſon explained and performed another piece of duty, to which I was a ſtranger. At a certain hour in the morning, the boy of the meſs went round all the decks, ringing a ſmall hand-bell, and in rhimes compoſed for the occaſion, invited all thoſe who had ſores to repair before the maſt, where one of the doctor's mates attended, with applications to dreſs them.

CHAP. XXVII.

I acquire the friendſhip of the ſurgeon, who procures a warrant for me, and makes me a preſent of clothes—a battle between a midſhipman and me—the ſurgeon leaves the ſhip—the captain comes on board with another ſurgeon—a dialogue between the captain and Morgan *—the ſick are ordered to be brought upon the quarter-deck and examined—the conſequences of that order—a madman accuſes* Morgan, *and is ſet at liberty by command of the captain, whom he inſtantly attacks and pummels without mercy.*

WHILE I was buſied with my friend in this practice the doctor chanced to paſs by the place where we were, and coming to obſerve me, appeared very well ſatisfied with my method of application: and afterwards ſent for me to his cabin, where, having examined

amined me touching my skill in surgery, and the particulars of my fortune, he interested himself so far in my behalf, as to promise his assistance in procuring a warrant for me, seeing I had been already found qualified at Surgeons-Hall for the station I filled on board; and this good office he the more cordially engaged in, when he understood I was nephew to Lieutenant Bowling, for whom he expressed a particular regard. In the mean time, I could learn from his discourse, that he did not intend to go to sea again with Captain Oakham, having, as he thought, been indifferently used by him during the last voyage.

While I lived tolerably easy, in expectation of preferment, I was not altogether without mortifications, which I not only suffered from the rude insults of the sailors and petty officers, among whom I was known by the name of *Lubbally Boy*; but also from the disposition of Morgan, who though friendly in the main, was often very troublesome with his pride, which expected a good deal of submission from me, and delighted in recapitulating the favours I had received at his hands.

About six weeks after my arrival on board, the surgeon bidding me follow him into his cabin, presented a warrant to me, by which I was appointed surgeon's third mate on board the Thunder. This he had procured by his interest at the Navy-office; as also another for himself, by virtue of which he was removed into a second rate. I acknowledged his kindness in the strongest terms my gratitude could suggest, and professed my sorrow at the prospect of losing so valuable a friend, to whom I hoped to have recommended myself still further, by my respectful and diligent behaviour. But his promotion would not have; for before he left the ship, he [illegible] a present of a chest and some chamber, that could [illegible] support the rank to which he had raised me. I found [illegible] with my good friends; and now I was [illegible] to [illegible] dignity of my station [illegible] Thames; [illegible] being [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

ken all opportunities of reviling and ridiculing me, when I was not entitled to retort his bad uſage. And even after I had been rated on the books, and muſtered as ſurgeon's mate, did not think fit to reſtrain his inſolence: In particular, being one day preſent while I dreſſed a wound in a ſailor's leg, he began to ſing a ſong which I thought highly injurious to the honour of my country; and therefore ſignified my reſentment, by obſerving, that the Scots always laid their account with finding enemies among the ignorant, inſignificant, and malicious. This unexpected piece of aſſurance enraged him to ſuch a degree, that he lent me a blow on the face, which I verily thought had demoliſhed my cheek-bone; I was not ſlow in returning the obligation, and the affair began to be very ſerious; when by accident Mr Morgan, and one of the maſter's mates, coming that way, interpoſed, and inquiring into the cauſe, endeavoured to promote a reconciliation; but finding us both exaſperated to the uttermoſt, and bent againſt accommodation, they adviſed us, either to leave our difference undecided till we ſhould have an opportunity of terminating it on ſhore, like gentlemen, or elſe chuſe a proper place on board, and bring it to an iſſue by boxing. This laſt expedient was greedily embraced by us both; and being forthwith conducted to the ground propoſed, we ſtript in a moment, and began a very furious conteſt, in which I ſoon found myſelf inferior to my antagoniſt, not ſo much in ſtrength and agility, as in ſkill, which he acquired in the ſchool of Hockley in the Hole and Tottenham Court. Many croſs-buttocks did I ſuſtain, and pegs on the ſtomach without number, till at laſt, my breath being quite gone, as well as my vigour waſted, I grew deſperate, and collecting all my ſtrength in one effort, threw in at once, head, hands, and feet, with ſuch violence, that I drove my antagoniſt three paces backward into the main hatchway, down which he fell, and pitching upon his head and right ſhoulder, remained without ſenſe and motion. Morgan looking down, and ſeeing him lie in that condition cried, "Upon my conſcience, as I am a Chriſtian "finner (look you) I believe his pattles are all ofer; but "I take you all to witneſs that there was no treachery

"in

T. Rowlandson del. et fec.

Battle between Lord Nelson and the Hulks Inhabitants

" in the caſe, and that he has ſuffered by the chance of " war." So ſaying, he deſcended to the deck below, to examine into the ſituation of my adverſary; and left me very little pleaſed with my victory, as I found myſelf not only terribly bruiſed, but likewiſe in danger of being called to account for the death of Crampley: but this fear vaniſhed, when my fellow mate, having by bleeding him in the jugular brought him to himſelf, and inquiring into the ſtate of his body, called up to me to be under no concern, for the midſhipman had received no other damage than as pretty a luxation of the *os humeri* as one would deſire to ſee on a ſummer's day. Upon this information, I crawled down to the cockpit, and acquainted Thomſon with the affair, who, providing himſelf with bandages, &c. neceſſary for the occaſion, went up to aſſiſt Mr Morgan in the reduction of the diſlocation. When this was ſucceſsfully performed, they wiſhed me joy of the event of the combat: and the Welchman, after obſerving, that in all likelihood the ancient Scots and Britons were the ſame people, bade me " praiſe Got for putting mettle in my pelly, and ſtrength " in my limbs to ſupport it." I acquired ſuch reputation by this rencounter (which laſted twenty minutes) that every body became more cautious in behaviour towards me; though Crampley, with his arm in a ſling, talked very high, and threatened to ſeize the firſt opportunity of retrieving on ſhore the honour he had loſt by an accident, from which I could juſtly claim no merit.

About this time, Captain Oakhum, having received ſailing orders, came on board, and brought along with him a ſurgeon of his own country, who ſoon made us ſenſible of the loſs we ſuffered in the departure of Doctor Atkins; for, he was grofsly ignorant, and intolerably aſſuming, falſe, vindictive, and unforgiving; a mercileſs tyrant to his inferiors, an abject ſycophant to thoſe above him. In the morning after the captain came on board, our firſt mate, according to cuſtom, went to wait on him with a ſick liſt, which when this grim commander had peruſed, he cried with a ſtern countenance, " Blood and " oons! ſixty-one ſick people on board of my ſhip!—

" Harkee you, Sir, I'll have no ſick in my ſhip, by G—d." The Welchman replied, he ſhould be very glad to find no ſick people on board; but while it was otherwiſe, he did no more than his duty in preſenting him with a liſt. " You and your liſt may be d—n'd, (ſaid the captain, " throwing it at him,) I ſay there ſhall be no ſick in my " ſhip while I have the command of her." Mr Morgan being nettled at this treatment, told him, his indignation ought to be directed to God Almighty, who viſited his people with diſtemper, and not to him who contributed all in his power towards their cure. The bathaw not being uſed to ſuch behaviour in any of his officers, was enraged to fury at this friendly information, and, ſtamping with his foot, called him an impudent Welch dog, threatening to have him ſeized to the maſt, if he ſhould preſume to utter another ſyllable. But the ſpeech of Crowdero being thoroughly heard, diſcretion no longer reſtricted by ſuch a command, and began to exhibit itſelf in, " Captain " Oagum, I am a gentleman of birth and parentage " (look you) and peradventure I can diſcover ——" Here his harangue was broke off by the captain's ſteward, who being Morgan's countryman, hurried him out of the cabin before he had time to exaſperate his maſter to a greater degree: and this would certainly have been the caſe, for the indignant Welchman could hardly be hindered, by his friend's arguments and entreaties, from re-entering the preſence-chamber, and defying Captain Oaghum to his teeth. He was, however, appeaſed at length, and came down to the birth, where Bowling, Thomſon and me at work preparing medicines, he bade us leave off our labour and go to play, for the captain by his high word and power had commanded, had driven ſickneſs a packing to the devil, and there was no more malady on board. So ſaying, he drank a glaſs of brandy, ſighed grievouſly three times, poured forth an execration or " Cur- " ſe-me-if-I-be, ever, ever, ever!" and then began to ſing a Welch ſong with great variety of notes, and ſeveral quavers. I could not underſtand the meaning of his ſong, which, however, and by the looks of Thomſon, who ſeemed [illegible] that he did not underſtand. He perceiving

our amazement, told us he would explain the myſtery; but at the ſame time bade us take notice, that he had lived poy, patchelor, married man, and widower, almoſt forty years, and in all that time, there was no man or mother's ſon in the whole world, who durſt uſe him ſo ill as Captain Oakhum had done. Then he acquainted us with the dialogue that paſſed between them, as I have already related it; and had no ſooner finiſhed this narration, than he received a meſſage from the ſteward, to bring the ſick lift to the quarter deck, for the captain had ordered all the patients thither to be reviewed. This inhuman order ſhocked us extremely, as we knew it would be impoſſible to carry ſome of them on the deck, without imminent danger of their lives; but as we like wiſe knew it would be to no purpoſe for us to remonſtrate againſt it, we reſolved to the quarter-deck in a body, to ſee this extraordinary matter: Morgan obſerving by the way, that the captain was going to ſend to the other world a great many evidences to teſtify againſt himſelf. When he appeared upon deck, the captain bade the doctor, who now boaſted of his right hand, look at theſe lazy lubberly dogs of his, who were good for nothing on board but to eat the king's proviſion, and encourage idleneſs in the ſhip. The ſurgeon ſmiled approbation, and taking the liſt, began to call the complaints of each by the number which was prefixed. The firſt who came was a poor fellow juſt freed from a fever, which had ſo reduced him, that he could hardly walk. Before the doctor had time to aſk what was the matter with him, the captain ſwore he was a lazy ſcoundrel, and bade him get to his duty, for he ſhould not be a cockboat to the ſhip. The poor wretch replied, that he was not able to do his duty, for he had been ſick of a fever, and deſired to be ſent to his hammock. The captain anſwered, that he ſhould be ſent to the yard-arm, if he did not get about his buſineſs immediately. The ſick man, finding himſelf unable to ſtand, ſat down upon the deck, and begged the doctor would order him ſome phyſic. Upon this the captain ſtruck him with his cane, and bade him get up, or he would break his head. The doctor, obſerving the man's countenance to change, and his eyes to turn, ſaid, he believed he was dying already. The captain, hearing this, ſtooped down, and ſeeing the man in a ſwoon, turned him over, and ſeeing him ſpit blood, ſaid, the rogue was in a conſumption, and bade the doctor give him ſome phyſic.

and turned over to the boatſwain;—but being reſolved to diſgrace the doctor, died upon the forecaſtle next day, during his cold fit. The third complained of a pleuretic ſtitch, and ſpitting of blood, for which Doctor Mackſhane, preſcribed exerciſe at the pump to promote expectoration; but whether this was improper for one in his ſituation, or that it was uſed to exceſs, I know not, but in leſs than half an hour he was ſuffocated with a deluge of blood that iſſued from his lungs. A fourth, with much difficulty, climbed to the quarter-deck, being loaded with a monſtruous aſcites or dropſy, that invaded his cheſt ſo much, he could ſcarce fetch his breath; but his diſeaſe being interpreted into fat, occaſioned by idleneſs and exceſs of eating, he was ordered, with a view to promote perſpiration and enlarge his cheſt, to go aloft immediately. It was in vain for this unwieldy wretch to alledge his utter incapacity, the boatſwain's driver was commanded to whip him up with the cat and nine tails. The ſmart of this application made him exert himſelf ſo much, that he actually arrived at the puttoc ſhrouds; but when the enormous weight of his body had nothing elſe to ſupport it than his weakened arms, either out of ſpite or neceſſity he quitted his hold, and plumped into the ſea, where he muſt have been drowned, had not a ſailor, who was in a boat along-ſide, ſaved his life, by keeping him afloat till he was hoiſted on board by a tackle. It would be tedious and diſagreeable to deſcribe the fate of every miſerable object that ſuffered by the inhumanity and ignorance of the captain and ſurgeon, who ſo wantonly ſacrificed the lives of their fellow-creatures. Many were brought up in the height of fevers, and rendered delirious by the injuries they received in the way. Some gave up the ghoſt in the preſence of their inſpectors; and others, who were ordered to their duty, languiſhed a few days at work among their fellows, and then departed without any ceremony. On the whole, the number of the ſick was reduced to leſs than a dozen; and the authors of this reduction were applauding themſelves for the ſervices they had done to their king and country, when the boatſwain's mate informed his honour, that there was a man below laſhed to his hammock by the direction

reſtion of the doctor's mate, and that he begged hard to be releaſed; affirming, he had been ſo maltreated only for a grudge Mr Morgan bore him, and that he was as much in his ſenſes as any man aboard. The captain hearing this, darted a ſevere look at the Welchman, and ordered the man to be brought up immediately: upon which Morgan proteſted with great fervency, that the perſon in queſtion was as mad as a March hare: and begged for the love of Got, they would at leaſt keep his arms pinioned during his examination, to prevent him from doing miſchief. This requeſt the commander granted for his own ſake, and the patient was produced, who inſiſted upon his being in his right wits with ſuch calmneſs and ſtrength of argument, that every body preſent was inclined to believe him, except Morgan, who affirmed there was no truſting to appearances; for he himſelf had been ſo much impoſed upon by his behaviour two days before, that he had actually unbound him with his own hands, and had well nigh been murdered for his pains. This was confirmed by the evidence of one of the waiters, who declared, he had pulled this patient from the doctor's mate, whom he had gotten down, and almoſt ſtrangled. To this the man anſwered, that the witneſs was a creature of Morgan's, and was ſuborned to give his teſtimony againſt him by the malice of the mate, whom the defendant had affronted, by diſcovering to the people on board that Mr Morgan's wife kept a gin-ſhop in Rag-fair.—This anecdote produced a laugh at the expence of the Welſhman, who ſtroking his head with ſome emotion, ſaid, "Ay, "ay, 'tis no matter— Got knows, it is an arrant falſe- "hood."—Captain Oakham, without any farther hearing, ordered the fellow to be unfettered; at the ſame time, threatening to make Morgan exchange ſtructures with him for his ſpite; but the Briton no ſooner heard the deciſion in favour of the madman, than he got up the mizen ſhrouds, crying to Thompſon and me to get out of his reach, for we ſhould ſee him play the devil with a vengeance. We did not think fit to diſregard his caution, and accordingly got up on the poop, whence we beheld the maniac (as ſoon as he was releaſed) fly at the main like a fury, ſaying, "I'll let you know, you ſcoun- "drel

" drel, that I am commander of this veſſel,"—and d pummel him without mercy. The ſurgeon, who went to the aſſiſtance of his patron, ſhared the ſame fate; and t was with the utmoſt difficulty that he was maſtered at laſt, after having done great execution among thoſe who oppoſed him.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The captain enraged, threatens to put the mediman to death with his own hand—is diverted from that reſolution by the arguments and ſupplications of the ſurgeon—ſets ſail for St Helena, join the fleet under the command of Sir C——n——r O——ie, and proceed for the Weſt Indies—are overtaken by a terrible tempeſt—my friend Jack Rattlin loſes his leg by a ball from the main-top—the behaviour of Doctor Macſhane—Jack acquitted of the imputation of his death, in which he is ſeconded by Thomſon and me, who undertake the care, and perform it ſucceſsfully.

THE ſurgeon being carried into his cabin, ſo enraged was the captain at the bad reception he had met with, that he ordered the boatſwain to ſtand before him, that he might have the ſatisfaction of giving him with his own hand; but the boatſwain, who had not the leaſt intention to preſent himſelf in the way of his maſter's reſentment, diſappeared the inſtant he had received the command, and left the fellow who had but juſt ſaved his life to be diſpatched by ſome other of the officers. Theſe, however, were not diſpoſed to execute the orders of their captain, who, finding himſelf diſappointed in his deſign, began to reflect upon the conſequences of his raſhneſs, and, inſtead of proceeding to the execution of his threats, ordered the ſurgeon to be brought before him, and aſked him, in a more temperate manner, what he had to ſay in his own juſtification? The ſurgeon, who was a man of ſenſe, and knew the diſpoſition of his patron, anſwered, that he was ſorry for having given him any offence; that he had only done his duty, and that he was ready to anſwer for his conduct before a court-martial. The captain, who was not deficient in point of underſtanding, was ſtruck with the propriety of this anſwer, and, inſtead of proceeding to extremities, ſhook the ſurgeon by the hand, aſſured him of his protection, and deſired him to go and dreſs his wounds, which were not dangerous. The ſurgeon, who was a man of ſenſe, and knew the diſpoſition of his patron, anſwered, that he was ſorry for having given him any offence; that he had only done his duty, and that he was ready to anſwer for his conduct before a court-martial. The captain, who was not deficient in point of underſtanding, was ſtruck with the propriety of this anſwer, and, inſtead of proceeding to extremities, ſhook the ſurgeon by the hand, aſſured him of his protection, and deſired him to go and dreſs his wounds, which were not dangerous.

not help discovering by his countenance the pleasure he enjoyed on this occasion; and while he bathed the Doctor's face with an embrocation, ventured to ask him, Whether he thought there were more fools or madmen on board? But he would have been wiser in containing this sally, which his patient carefully laid up in his memory, to be taken notice of at a more fit season. Meanwhile we weighed anchor; and on our way to the Downs, the madman, who was treated as a prisoner, took an opportunity, while the centinel attended him at the head, to leap overboard and frustrate the revenge of the captain. We staid not long at the Downs, but took the benefit of the first easterly wind to go round to Spithead; where having received on board provisions for six months, we sailed from St Helens in the grand fleet bound for the West Indies, on the ever-memorable expedition of Carthagena.

It was not without great mortification I saw myself on the point of being transported to such a distant and unhealthy climate, destitute of every convenience that could render such a voyage supportable; and under the dominion of an arbitrary tyrant, whose command was almost intolerable: however, as these complaints were common to a great many on board, I resolved to submit patiently to my fate, and contrive to make myself as easy as the nature of the case would allow. We got out of the channel with a prosperous breeze, which died away, leaving us becalmed about fifty leagues to the westward of the Lizard: but this state of inaction did not last long; for next night our main-top sail was split by the wind, which in the morning increased to a hurricane. I was alarmed by a most horrible din, occasioned by the play of the gun-carriages upon the decks above, the cracking of cables, the howling of the wind through the shrouds, the confused noise of the ship's crew, the pipes of the boatswain and his mates, the trumpets of the lieutenants, and the clanking of the cabin-pumps. Morgan, who had never been at sea before, turned out in a great hurry, crying, "God have mercy and compassion upon us! We are all undone people! Here is the ocean of Lucifer and all the devils broke loose! Thou art lost by sticking

in his hammock, putting up petitions to heaven for our ſafety.—I roſe and joined the Welchman, with whom (after having fortified ourſelves with brandy) I went above; but if my ſenſe of hearing was ſtartled before, how muſt my ſight have been appalled in beholding the effects of the ſtorm! The ſea was ſwelled into billows mountain-high, on the top of which our ſhip ſometimes hung, as if it was about to be precipitated to the abyſs below! ſometimes we ſunk between two waves that roſe on each ſide higher than our topmaſt-head, and threatened, by daſhing together, to overwhelm us in a moment! Of all our fleet, conſiſting of a hundred and fifty ſail, ſcarce twelve appeared, and theſe driving under their bare poles at the mercy of the tempeſt. At length the maſt of one of them gave way, and tumbled overboard with a hideous craſh! Nor was the proſpect in our own ſhip much more agreeable; a number of officers and ſailors ran backward and forward, with diſtraction in their looks, hollowing to one another, and undetermined what they ſhould attend to firſt. Some clung to the yards, endeavouring to unbend the ſails, that were ſplit into a thouſand pieces, flapping in the wind; others tried to furl thoſe which were yet whole, while the maſts, at every pitch, bent and quivered like twigs, as if they would have ſhivered into innumerable ſplinters. While I conſidered this ſcene with equal terror and aſtoniſhment, one of the main braces broke, by the ſhock whereof two ſailors were flung from the yard's-arm into the ſea, where they periſhed, and poor Jack Rattlin thrown down upon the deck, at the expence of a broken leg. Morgan and I ran immediately to his aſſiſtance, and found a ſplinter of the ſhin-bone thruſt by the violence of the fall through the ſkin: As this was a caſe of too great conſequence to be treated without the authority of the doctor, I went down to his cabin to inform him of the accident, as well as to bring up dreſſings, which we always kept ready prepared—I entered his apartment without any ceremony, and by the glimmering of a lamp, perceived him on his knees, before ſomething that very much reſembled a crucifix, but this I will not inſiſt upon, that I may not ſeem too much a ſlave to common report, which indeed aſſiſted my conjecture

on

on this occaſion, by repreſenting Dr Mackſhane as a member of the church of Rome—Be this as it will, he got up in a ſort of confuſion, occaſioned (I ſuppoſe) by his being diſturbed in his devotion, and in a trice, ſnatched the ſubject of my ſuſpicion from my ſight. After making an apology for my interruption, I acquainted him with the ſituation of Rattlin, but could by no means prevail upon him to viſit him on deck, where he lay: he bade me deſire the boatſwain to order ſome of the men to carry him down to the cockpit, and in the mean time (ſaid he) I will direct Thomſon to get ready the dreſſings. When I ſignified to the boatſwain the doctor's deſire, he ſwore a terrible oath, that he would not ſpare one man from the deck, becauſe he expected the maſt would go by the board every minute. This piece of information did not at all contribute to my peace of mind; however, as my friend Rattlin complained very much, with the aſſiſtance of Morgan, I ſupported him to the lower deck, whither Dr Mackſhane, after much intreaty, ventured to come, attended by Thomſon with a box full of dreſſings, and his own ſervant, who carried a whole ſet of capital inſtruments. He examined the fracture and the wound, and concluding, from a livid colour extending itſelf upon the limb, that a mortification would enſue, reſolved to amputate the leg immediately. This was a dreadful ſentence to the patient, who recruiting himſelf with a quid of tobacco, pronounced with a woful countenance,—"What! is there no remedy, doctor?—muſt I be dock'd? "can't you ſplice it?"—"Aſſuredly, Doctor Mackſhane "(ſaid the firſt mate) with ſubmiſſion, and deference, "and veneration to your ſuperior abilities, and opportunities, and ſtations, (look you,) I do apprehend, and "conjecture, and aver, that there is no occaſion nor neceſſity to ſmite off this poor man's leg."—"God Almighty bleſs you, dear Welchman!" cried Rattlin) "may you have fair wind and weather whereſoever you're "bound, and come to an anchor in the road of heaven "at laſt." Mackſhane, very much incenſed at his mate's differing in opinion from him ſo openly, anſwered that he was not bound to give an account of his practice to him; and in a peremptory tone, ordered him to apply

the tourniquet. At the ſight of which, Jack, ſtarting up, cried, "Avaſt, avaſt! d—n my heart, if you clap "your nippers on me, till I know wherefore!—Mr Ran-"dom, won't you lend a hand towards ſaving my pre-"cious limb? Odd's heart, if Lieutenant Bowling was "here, he would not ſuffer Jack Rattlin's leg to be chop-"ped off like a piece of old junk.' This pathetic addreſs to me, joined to my inclination to ſerve my honeſt friend, and the reaſons I had to believe there was no danger in delaying the amputation, induced me to declare myſelf of the firſt mate's opinion, and affirm that the preternatural colour of the ſkin was owing to an inflammation occaſioned by a contuſion, and common in all ſuch caſes, without any indication of an approaching gangrene. Morgan, who had a great opinion of my ſkill, manifeſtly exulted in my fellowſhip, and aſked Thomſon's ſentiments of the matter, in hopes of ſtrengthening our aſſociation with him too; but he, being of a meek diſpoſition, and either dreading the enmity of the ſurgeon, or ſpeaking the dictates of his own judgment, in a modeſt manner, eſpouſed the opinion of Mackſhane, who by this time, having conſulted with himſelf, determined to act in ſuch a manner, as to ſcreen himſelf from cenſure; and at the ſame time revenge himſelf on us, for our arrogance in contradicting him. With this view, he aſked, if we would undertake to cure the leg at our peril; that is, be anſwerable for the conſequence. To this queſtion Morgan replied, that the lives of his creatures are in the hands of God alone; and it would be great preſumption in him to undertake for an event that was in the power of his Maker, no more than the doctor could promiſe to cure all the ſick to whom he adminiſtered his aſſiſtance; but if the patient would put himſelf under our direction, we would do our endeavour to bring his diſtemper to a favourable iſſue, to which, at preſent, we ſaw no obſtruction. I ſignified my concurrence; and Rattlin was ſo overjoyed, that, ſhaking us both by the hands, he ſwore nobody elſe ſhould touch him, and if he died, his blood ſhould be upon his own head. Mr Mackſhane, flattering himſelf with the proſpect of our miſcarriage, went away, and left us to manage it as we

ſhould

ſhould think proper; accordingly, having ſawed off part of the ſplinter that ſtuck thro' the ſkin, we reduced the fracture, dreſſed the wound, applied the eighteen-tailed bandage, and put the leg in a box, *ſecundum artem.* Every thing ſucceeded according to our wiſh, and we had the ſatisfaction, of not only preſerving the poor fellow's leg, but likewiſe of rendering the doctor contemptible among the ſhip's company, who had all their eyes on us during the courſe of this cure, which was compleated in ſix weeks.

CHAP. XXIX.

*Mackſhane's malice—I am taken up and impriſoned for a ſpy—Morgan ſerves with the ſame fate—*Thomſon *is tampered with to turn evidence againſt us—diſdains the propoſal, and is maltreated for his integrity—*Morgan *is releaſed to aſſiſt the ſurgeon during an engagement with ſome* French *ſhips of war—I remain ſtanding on the poop, expoſed to the enemy's ſhot, and grow delirious with fear—am comforted after the battle by* Morgan, *who ſpeaks freely of the captain; is overheard by the centinel, who informs againſt him, and again impriſoned—*Thomſon *grows deſperate, and, notwithſtanding the remonſtrances of* Morgan *and me, goes overboard in the night.*

IN the mean time, the ſtorm ſubſided into a briſk gale, that carried us into the warm latitudes, where the weather became intolerable, and the crew very ſickly. [illegible] making attempts to make the captain [illegible] againſt the Welſhman and me. [illegible] to [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

we were picking a large bone of ſalt beef, Morgan diſcerned ſomething ſtir on the outſide of our hangings, which immediately interpreting to be the doctor, he tipt me the wink, and pointed to the place, where I could perceive ſomebody ſtanding; upon which I ſnatched up the bone, and levelled it with all my force at him, ſaying, "Whoever you are, take that for your curioſity." It had the deſired effect, for we heard the liſtener tumble down, and afterwards crawl to his own cabin. I applauded myſelf much for this feat, which turned out one of the moſt unlucky exploits of my life, Mackſhane from that time marking me for deſtruction. About a week after this exploit, as I was going my rounds among the ſick, I was taken priſoner, and carried to the poop by the maſter at arms, where I was loaded with irons, and ſtapled to the deck, on pretence that I was a ſpy on board, and had conſpired againſt the captain's life. How ridiculous ſoever this imputation was, I did not fail to ſuffer by it all the rigour that could be ſhewn to the worſt of criminals, being expoſed in this miſerable condition to the ſcorching heat of the ſun by day, and the unwholeſome damps by night, during the ſpace of ſix days, in which I was neither brought to trial, nor examined touching the probability of my charge. I had no ſooner recovered the uſe of my reflection, which had been quite overthrown by this accident, than I ſent for Thomſon, who, after condoling me on the occaſion, hinted, that I owed this misfortune to the hatred of the doctor, who had given an information againſt me to the captain, in conſ[illegible] of which I was arreſted, and all my papers ſeized. While I was curſing my capricious fate, I ſaw Morgan upon the poop, guarded by two corporals, who made him ſit down by me, that he might be pinioned in the ſame manner. Notwithſtanding my ſituation, I could [illegible] from laughing at the countenance of my [illegible] who, without ſpeaking one word, allowed [illegible] to be incloſed in the rings provided for them [illegible] when they pretended to faſten him on his [illegible] he grew outrageous, and drawing a large [illegible] declared to rip up the belly of the [illegible] who ſhould [illegible] in order to [illegible]

him in such an unworthy manner. They were preparing to use him very roughly, when the lieutenant on the quarter-deck called up to them to let him remain as he was. He then crept towards me, and taking me by the hand, bade me "put my trust in Got;" and looking at Thomson, who sat by us, trembling with a pale visage, told him, there were two more rings for his feet, and he should be glad to find him in such good company:—but it was not the intention of our adversary to include the second mate in our fate: him he accepted to be his drudge in attending the sick, and if possible, his evidence against us. With this view he sounded him afar off, but finding his integrity incorruptible, harrassed him so much out of spite, that in a short time this mild creature grew weary of his life.

While I and my fellow-prisoner comforted each other in our tribulation, the admiral discovered four sail to leeward, and made signal for our ship and four more to chace: hereupon every thing was cleared for an engagement, and Mackshane foreseeing he should have occasion for more assistants than one, obtained Morgan's liberty; while I was left in this deplorable posture to the chance of battle. It was almost dark when we came up with the sternmost chace, which we hailed, and inquired who they were? They gave us to understand they were French men of war; upon which Captain Oakhum commanded them to send their boat on board of him; but they refused, telling him, if he had any business with them, to come on board of their ship: he then threatened to pour in a broad side upon them, which they promised to return. Both sides were as good as their word, and the engagement began with great fury. The reader may guess how I passed my time, lying in this helpless situation, amidst the terrors of a sea fight, expecting every moment to be cut asunder, or dashed in pieces by the enemy's shot! I endeavoured to compose myself as much as possible, by reflecting that I was not a whit more exposed than those who were stationed about me; but when I beheld them employed without intermission in annoying the foe, and encouraged by the safety and behaviour of one another, I could easily perceive a wide difference between

tween their condition and mine: however, I concealed my agitation as well as I could, till the head of the officer of marines, who ſtood near me, being ſhot off, bounced from the deck athwart my face, leaving me well nigh blinded with brains. I could contain myſelf no longer, but began to bellow with all the ſtrength of my lungs: when a drummer coming towards me, aſked if I was wounded, and before I could anſwer, received a great ſhot in his belly, which tore out his entrails, and he fell flat on my breaſt. This accident entirely bereft me of all diſcretion: I redoubled my cries, which were drowned in the noiſe of the battle; and finding myſelf diſregarded, loſt all patience, and became frantic: I vented my rage in oaths and execrations, till my ſpirits being quite exhauſted, I remained quiet and inſenſible of the load that oppreſſed me. The engagement laſted till broad day, when Captain Oakhum, finding he was like to gain neither honour nor advantage by the affair, pretended to be undeceived by ſeeing their colours; and hailing the ſhip with whom he had fought all night, proteſted he believed them Spaniards, and the guns being ſilenced on each ſide, ordered the barge to be hoiſted out, and went on board of the French commodore. Our loſs amounted to ten killed, and eighteen wounded, moſt part of whom afterwards died. My fellow-mates had no ſooner diſpatched their buſineſs in the cock-pit, than, full of friendly concern, they came to viſit me: Morgan aſcending firſt, and ſeeing my face almoſt covered with brains and blood, concluded I was no longer a man for this world; and calling to Thomſon with great emotion, bade him come up and take his laſt farewell of his comrade and countryman, who was poſting to a better place, where there were no Macklhanes nor Oakhums to aſperſe and torment him. "No, (ſaid he, taking me by the hand) "you are going to a country where there is more reſ- "pect ſhewn to unfortunate gentlemen, and where you "will have the ſatisfaction of beholding your adver- "ſaries toſſing upon pikes of purſing prinſtocks." Thomſon alarmed at this apoſtrophe, made haſte to the place where I lay, and ſitting down by me with tears in his eyes, inquired into the nature of my calamity? By

this

this time I had recollected myself so far as to be able to converse rationally with my friends, whom, to their great satisfaction, I immediately undeceived with regard to their apprehension of being my mortally wounded. After I had got myself disengaged from the carnage in which I wallowed, and partaken of a refreshment which my friends brought along with them, we entered into discourse upon the hardships we sustained, and spoke very freely of the authors of our misery: but our discourse being overheard by the centinel who guarded me, he was no sooner relieved, than he reported to the captain every syllable of our conversation, according to the orders he had received: the effect of this information soon appeared in the arrival of the master at arms, who replaced Morgan in his former station, and gave the second mate a caution to keep a strict guard over his tongue, if he did not chuse to accompany us in our confinement. Thomson foreseeing that the whole slavery of attending the sick and wounded, as well as the cruelty of Mackshane, must now fall upon his shoulders, grew desperate at the prospect, and though I never heard him swear before, imprecated dreadful curses on the heads of his oppressors, declaring that he would rather quit life altogether, than be much longer under the power of such barbarians. I was not a little startled at his vivacity, and endeavoured to alleviate his complaints, by representing the subject of my own with as much aggravation as it would bear, by which comparison he might see the balance of misfortune lay on my side, and take an example from me of fortitude and submission, till such time as we could procure redress, which (I hoped) was not far off, considering that we should probably be in a harbour in less than three days, where we should have an opportunity of preferring our complaints to the admiral. The Welchman joined in my remonstrances, and was at great pains to demonstrate, that it was every man's duty as well as interest to resign himself to the divine will, and look upon himself as a centinel upon duty, who is by no means at liberty to leave his post before he is relieved. Thomson listened attentively to what we said, and at last shedding a flood of tears, shook his head, and left us without making any

reply. About eleven at night he came to see us again, with a settled gloom on his countenance, and gave us to understand, that he had undergone excessive toil since he saw us, and in recompence, had been grossly abused by the Doctor, who taxed him with being confederate with us, in a design of taking away his life and that of the captain. After some time spent in mutual exhortation, he got up, and squeezing me by the hand with an uncommon fervour, cried, "God bless you both;" and left us to wonder at his singular manner of parting with us which did not fail to make an impression on us both.

Next morning when the hour of visitation came round, this unhappy young man was missing, and after strict search, supposed to have gone overboard in the night; and this was certainly the case.

CHAP. XXX.

We lament the fate of our companion—the captain offers Morgan *his liberty, which he refuses to accept—We are brought before him and examined—Morgan is put back into custody, whither also I am remanded, after a curious trial.*

THE news of this event affected my fellow-prisoner and me extremely, as our unfortunate companion had justly acquired, by his amiable disposition, the love and esteem of us both; and the more we regretted his untimely fate, the greater horror we conceived for the villain who was undoubtedly the occasion of it. This abandoned miscreant did not discover the least symptom of concern for Thomson's death, although he must have been conscious to himself of having driven him by ill usage to that fatal resolution; but desired the captain to set Morgan at liberty again to look at the patients. Accordingly, one of the coopers was sent up to unfetter him; and he protested he would not be near him, lest he should know for what he was confined; nor would he be a tender doll, nor a little cock, nor a turtle, nor a fish, for any person under the sun. Observing him continue, and finding it would not be in his power to ex-

Give

ercife his tyranny much longer with impunity, was willing to fhow fome appearance of juftice, and therefore ordered us both to be brought before him on the quarter-deck, where he fat in ftate, with his clerk on one fide, and his counfellor Macfhane on the other. When we approached, he honoured us with this falutation: "So, gentlemen, "damn my blood! many a captain in the navy would "have ordered you both to be tuck'd up to the yard's-"arm, without either judge or jury, for the crimes you "have been guilty of; but, damn my blood, I have too "much good nature, in allowing fuch dogs as you to "make your defence."—"Captain Oakhum, (faid my "fellow fufferer,) certainly it is in your power (Got help "the while,) to tuck us all up at your will, and deire, "and pleafures; and perhaps it would be better for "fome of us to be tucked up, than undergo the mife-"ries to which we have been expofed. So may the far-"mer hang his kids for his diverfion, and amufement, "and mirth; but there is fuch a thing as juftice, if not "upon earth, furely in heaven, that will puniſh with fire "and brimftone all thofe who take away the lives of "innocent people out of wantonnefs and parparity (look "you)—In the mean time I fhall be glad to know the "crimes laid to my charge, and fee the perfon who ac-"cufes me."—"That you fhall, (faid the captain:) here, "doctor, what have you to fay?"—Macfhane ſtepping forward, hemmed a good while, in order to clear his throat, and before he began, Morgan accofted him thus: "Doc-"tor Macfhane, look in my face—look in the face of "an honeft man, who abhors a falſe witneſs as he ab-"hors the devil, and let be judge between you and I "now." The latter, not minding this conjuration, made the following ſpeech, as near as I can remember:—"I "fay, gentlemen, Mr Morgan, to be ſure, what you ſay is "true, in regard to an honeſt man; and if to be it ap-"pears to you as you underſtand it now, that is my opi-"nion, that you are not to be accuſed, in relation to "that time of the affair in queſtion, by Captain Oakhum "for to be any way guilty. As for my

your

" your captain, who to be ſure is the moſt honourable " and generous commander in the king's ſervice, without " aſparagement or acceptation of man, woman, or child." Having uttered this elegant harangue, on which he ſeemed to plume himſelf, Morgan replied, " I do partly gueſs, " and conceive, and underſtand your meaning, which I " wiſh could be more explicite: but, however, I do ſuppoſe, I am not to be condemned upon bare hearſay; " or if I am convicted of ſpeaking diſreſpectfully of Captain Oakhum, I hope there is no treaſon in my words." " —But there's mutiny, by God, and that's death by the " articles of war, (cried Oakhum)—In the mean time, " let the witneſſes be called." Hereupon Mackſhane's ſervant appeared, and the boy of our meſs, whom they had ſeduced and tutored for the purpoſe. The firſt declared, that Morgan, as he deſcended the cockpit-ladder one day, curſed the captain, and called him a ſavage beaſt, ſaying, he ought to be hunted down as an enemy to mankind. " This (ſaid the clerk) is a ſtrong preſumption of " a deſign formed againſt the captain's life. For why? " It preſuppoſes malice afore-thought, and a criminal in- " tention *a priori*."—" Right, (ſaid the captain to this " miſerable grub, who had been an attorney's boy) you " ſhall have law enough; here's Cook and Littlejohn for " it." This evidence was confirmed by the boy, who affirmed, he heard the firſt mate ſay, that the captain had no more bowels than a bear, and the ſurgeon had no more brains than an aſs. Then the centinel who heard our diſcourſe on the poop was examined, and informed the court that the Welchman aſſured me, Captain Oakhum and Doctor Mackſhane would toſs upon billows of burning brimſtone in hell for their barbarity. The clerk obſerved, that there was an evident prejudication, which confirmed the former ſuſpicion of a conſpiracy againſt the life of Captain Oakhum; for, becauſe, how could Morgan ſo poſitively pronounce that the captain and ſurgeon would be damned, unleſs he had intention to make away with them before they could have time to repent?—This ſage explanation had great weight with our noble commander, who exclaimed, " What have you to ſay to this, " Taffy? you ſeem to be taken all a-back, brother, hah!"

Morgan

—Morgan was too much of a gentleman to disown the text, although he absolutely denied the truth of the comment: upon which the captain, strutting up to him, with a ferocious countenance, said, "So, Mr son of a bitch, "you confess you honoured me with the names of bear "and beast, and pronounced my damnation! Damn my "heart! I have a good mind to have you brought to a "court-martial and hanged, you dog." Here Macksharne, having occasion for an assistant, interposed, and begged the captain to pardon Mr Morgan, with his wonted goodness, upon condition that he the delinquent should make such submissions as the nature of his misdemeanour demanded. Upon which the Cambro-Briton, who on this occasion would have made no submission to the Great Mogul surrounded with his guards, thanked the Doctor for his mediation, and acknowledged himself in the wrong for calling the image of God a beast; "but (said he) I "spoke by metaphor, and parable, and comparison, and "types; as we signify meekness by a lamb, lechery by "a goat, and craftiness by a fox; so we liken ignorance "to an ass, and brutality to a bear, and fury to a tyger; "therefore I made use of these similes to express my "sentiments, (look you,) and what I said, before God, "I will not unsay before man or beast neither." Oakhum was so provoked at this insolence (as he termed it,) that he ordered him forthwith to be carried to the place of his confinement, and his clerk to proceed on the examination of me. The first question put to me was touching the place of my nativity, which I declared to be the north of Scotland. "The north of Ireland more like, "(cried the captain,) but we shall bring you up presently." He then asked what religion I professed; and when I answered, "The protestant," swore I was as arrant a Roman as ever went to mass. "Come, come, "clerk, (continued he,) catechise him a little on this subject." But before I relate the particulars of the clerk's inquiries, it would not be amiss to inform the reader that our commander himself was an Hibernian, and, if not thoroughly bolled, a Roman Catholic to boot. "You say "you are a Protestant, (said the clerk,) make the sign "of the cross with your fingers, do, and swear upon it

" to that affirmation." When I was about to perform this ceremony, the captain cried with ſome emotion, " No, no, damme! I'll have no profanation neither.—" But go on with your interrogations."—" Well then " (proceeded my examiner,) how many ſacraments are " there?"—To which I replied, " Two."—" What are " they?" (ſaid he,) I anſwered, " Baptiſm and the Lord's " Supper."—" And ſo you would explode confirmation " and marriage altogether? (ſaid Oakhum,) I thought " this fellow was a rank Roman." The clerk, though he was bred under an attorney, could not refrain from bluſhing at this blunder, which he endeavoured to conceal, by obſerving that theſe decoys would not do with me, who ſeemed to be an old offender. He went on with aſking, if I believed in tranſubſtantiation; but I treated the notion of a real preſence with ſuch diſreſpect, that his patron was ſcandalized at my impiety, and commanded him to proceed to the plot. Whereupon this miſerable pettifogger told me, there was great reaſon to ſuſpect me of being a ſpy on board; and that I had entered into a conſpiracy with Thomſon and others not yet detected, againſt the life of Captain Oakham. Which accuſation they pretended to ſupport by the evidence of our boy, who declared he had often heard the deceaſed Thomſon and me whiſpering together, and could diſtinguiſh the words, " Oakham, rascal, poiſon, piſtol." By which expreſſions it appeared, we did intend to take ſhelter under his protection. That friendly ſoul of Thomſon ſeemed to confirm this conjecture, who, either feeling the ſtings of remorſe, for having engaged in ſuch a horrid conſpiracy, or fearing a diſcovery, by which he muſt have infallibly loſt his life, had by timely death put a fatal period to his own exiſtence. But what eſtabliſhed the truth of the whole, was a book in cypher found among my papers, which exactly tallied with one found in his cheſt, after his diſappearance. This, he obſerved, was a preſumption very near proof poſitive, and would determine any jury in Chriſtendom to find me guilty. In my own defence, I aſſured him that I had been dragged on board moſt very much againſt my inclinations, as I could prove by the evidence of [illegible]

that

the ſhip, conſequently could have no deſign of becoming ſpy at that time; and ever ſince had been entirely out of the reach of any corruption once that could juſtly entail that ſuſpicion upon me: As for conſpiring againſt my captain's life, it could not be ſuppoſed that any man in his ſenſes would harbour the leaſt thought of ſuch an undertaking, when he could not poſſibly perform without periſhing himſelf, or running to himſelf, even if he had a deſire to it in the world. That all along the boy's evidence to be true, (which I affirmed was falſe and malicious,) nothing concluſive could be gathered from a few incoherent words: Neither was the fate of Mr Thomſon a circumſtance more favourable for the charge; for I had in my pocket a letter which too well explained that myſtery, in a very different manner from that which was ſuppoſed. With theſe words I produced the following letter, which Jack Ratlin brought to me the very day after Thomſon diſappeared; and told me it was committed to his care by the deceaſed, who made him promiſe not to deliver it ſooner. The clerk taking it out of my hand, read aloud the contents, which were theſe:

"*Dear Friend,*

"I Am ſo much oppreſſed with the fatigue I daily "and nightly undergo, and the barbarous uſage of "Doctor Macſhane, who is bent on your deſtruction, "as well as mine, that I am reſolved to free myſelf "from this miſerable life, and before you receive this "ſhall be no more. I could have wiſhed to die in your "good opinion, which I am afraid I ſhall forfeit by the "raſhneſs of my act; but if you cannot acquit me, I know "you will at leaſt preſerve ſome regard for the memory "of an unfortunate young man who loved you.—I re"commend it to you, to beware of Macſhane, whoſe "revenge is implacable.—I wiſh all proſperity to you and "Mr Morgan, to whom, pray, offer my beſt reſpects, "and beg to be remembered as your unhappy friend and "ſervant,

"WILLIAM THOMSON."

The

This letter was no sooner read, than Mackshane, in a transport of rage, snatched it out of the clerk's hands and tore it into a thousand pieces, saying it was a villainous forgery, contrived and executed by myself. The captain and clerk declared themselves of the same opinion, although I insisted on having the remains of it compared with other writings of Thomson, which they had in their possession; and I was ordered to answer the last article of my accusation, namely, the book of cyphers found among my papers.—"That is easily done, (said I.) What "you are pleased to call cyphers, are no other than the "Greek characters, in which, for my amusement, I kept "a diary of every thing remarkable that has occurred to "my observation since the beginning of the voyage, till "the day on which I was put in irons; and the same "method was practised by Mr Thomson, who copied "mine."—"A very likely story! (cried Mackshane,) "what occasion was there for using Greek characters, "if you were not afraid of discovering what you had "wrote?—But what d'ye talk of Greek characters!— "D'ye think I am so ignorant of the Greek language, as "not to distinguish its letters from these, which are no "more Greek than Chinese? No, no, I will not give "up my knowledge of the Greek for you, nor none that "ever came from your country." So saying, with an unparalleled effrontery, he repeated some gibberish, which by the sound seemed to be Irish, and made it pass for Greek with the captain, who looking at me with a contemptuous sneer, exclaimed, "Ah, ha! have you "caught a tartar?" I could not help smiling at the consummate assurance of this Hibernian, and offered to refer the dispute to any body on board who understood the Greek alphabet: upon which Morgan was brought back, and being made acquainted with the affair, took the book and read a whole page in English, without hesitation, deciding the controversy in my favour. The doctor was so much disconcerted at this detection, that he affirmed Morgan was in the secret, and repeated from his own invention. Oakham said, "Ay, ay, I see "they are both in a story:" And dismissed my fellow-mate to his cockloft, although I proposed that he

and

and I ſhould read and tranſlate ſeparately any chapter or verſe in the Greek teſtament in his poſſeſſion, by which it would appear whether we or the ſurgeon ſpoke truth. Not being endued with eloquence enough to convince the captain that there could be no juggle nor confederacy in this expedient, I begged to be examined by ſome unconcerned perſon on board, who underſtood Greek: accordingly the whole ſhip's company, officers and all, were called upon deck, among whom it was proclaimed, that if any of them could ſpeak Greek, he or they ſo qualified ſhould attend the quarter-deck immediately. After ſome pauſe, two fore-maſt men came up, and profeſſed their ſkill in that language, which (they ſaid) they acquired during ſeveral voyages to the Levant, among the Greeks of the Morea. The captain exulted much in this declaration, and put my journal-book into the hands of one of them, who candidly owned he could neither read nor write; the other acknowledged the ſame degree of ignorance, but pretended to ſpeak the Greek lingo with any man on board; and addreſſing himſelf to me, pronounced ſome ſentences of a barbarous corrupted language, which I did not underſtand. I aſſerted that the modern Greek was as different from that ſpoke and written by the ancients, as the Engliſh uſed now from the old Saxon ſpoke in the time of Hengiſt; and as I had only learned the true original tongue, in which Homer, Pindar, the Evangeliſts, and other great men of antiquity wrote, it could not be ſuppoſed that I ſhould know any thing of an imperfect Gothic dialect that roſe on the ruins of the former, and ſcarce retained any traces of the old expreſſion. But if doctor Mackilhanie, who pretended to be maſter of the Greek language, could maintain a converſation with the Ottoman, I would retract what I had ſaid, and be content to ſuffer any puniſhment he ſhould think proper to inflict. I had no ſooner uttered theſe words, [illegible] knowing one of theſe fellows to be his countryman, accoſted him in Iriſh, and was anſwered in the ſame language; and a brisk converſation enſued between them. [illegible] Greek, but [illegible] the language of the Morea. [illegible] before they [illegible]

would venture to assert such an intrepid falsehood.—" I " thought, (said Oakhum), we should discover the im- " posture at last.—Let the rascal be carried back to his " confinement.—I find he must dangle." Having nothing further to urge in my own behalf, before a court so prejudiced with spite, and fortified with ignorance against truth, I suffered myself to be reconducted peaceably to my fellow-prisoner, who hearing the particulars of my trial, lifted up his hands and eyes to heaven, and uttered a dreadful groan; and not daring to disburden his thoughts to me by speech, lest he might be overheard by the centinel, burst forth into a Welch song, which he accompanied with a thousand contortions of face, and violent gestures of body.

CHAP. XXXI.

I discover a subornation against me, by means of a quarrel between two of the evidences; in consequence of which, I am set at liberty, and prevail upon Morgan *to accept of his freedom on the same terms.—*Macklhane's *malice—we arrive at* Jamaica, *from whence in a short time we beat up to* Hispaniola, *in conjunction with the* West India *squadron.—we take in water, sail again, and arrive at* Carthagena.—*reflections on our conduct there.*

MEAN WHILE a quarrel happening between the two modern Greeks, the one to be revenged of the other, came and discovered to us the mystery of Macklhane's dialogue, as I have explained it above. This detection coming to the ears of the doctor, who was sensible that (now we were in sight of Jamaica) we should have an opportunity of clearing ourselves before a court-martial, and at the same time, of making his malice and ignorance conspicuous, he interceded for us with the captain so effectually, that in a few hours we were set at liberty, and ordered to return to our duty. This was a happy event for me, my whole body being battered with the fists, and my limbs benumbed by want of motion: but I could scarce persuade the Welchman to accept of my assistance, he persisting in his obstinacy to

to remain in irons until he ſhould be diſcharged by a court-martial, which he believed would alſo do him juſtice on his enemies. At length I repreſented to him the precarious ſtate of a trial, the power and intereſt of his adverſaries, and flattered his revenge with the hope of wreaking his reſentment with his own hands upon Mackſhane after our return to England. This laſt argument had more weight with him than all the reſt, and prevailed upon him to repair with me to the cock-pit, which I no ſooner entered, than the idea of my deſerted friend preſented itſelf to my remembrance, and filled my eyes with tears. We diſcharged from our mefs the boy who had acted ſo perfidiously, notwithſtanding his tears, intreaties, and proteſtations of penitence for what he had done; but not before he had confeſſed that the ſurgeon had bribed him to give evidence againſt us, with a pair of ſtockings and a couple of old check-ſhirts, of which his ſervant had ſince plundered him.

The keys of our chefts and lockers being ſent to us by the doctor, we demanded the meſſenger until we had examined the contents; and my fellow-mate, finding all his Cheſhire cheeſe conſumed to a cruſt, his brandy exhauſted, and his onions gone, was ſeized with a fit of choler, which he diſcharged on Mackſhane's man in oaths and execrations, threatening to proſecute him as a thief. The fellow ſwore in his turn, that he never had the keys in his poſſeſſion till that time, when he received them from his maſter, with orders to deliver them to us.—"As God is my judge, (cried Morgan), and my ſalvation, "and my wife's, whoſoever has pilfered my proviſions, "is a lousy, paltry, raſcally knave! and by the ſoul "of my grandſire, I will impeach, and accuſe, and in"dict him of a purpoſe, if I did but know who he is." Had this miſfortune happened at ſea, where we could not repair the loſs, in all probability this ſcoundrel of Dutch extraction would have been ſtarved; but we obſerved how eaſily it would be to remedy this misfortune, by recovering the keys, and accordingly applied to the doctor. After ſome altercation with the meſſenger, the ſurgeon came in perſon, and, in the preſence of the purſer, delivered up the keys, and with a ſmile

aſpect, wiſhed us joy of our deliverance, which (he ſaid) he had been at great pains to obtain of the captain, who was very juſtly incenſed at our behaviour; but he (the doctor) had paſſed his word for our future conduct, and he hoped we ſhould give him no cauſe to repent of his kindneſs. He expected (no doubt) an acknowledgment from us for this pretended piece of ſervice, as well as a general amneſty of what was paſt; but he had to do with people who were not quite ſo apt to forgive injuries as he imagined, or to forget that if our deliverance was owing to his mediation, our calamity was occaſioned by his malice. I therefore ſat ſilent, while my companion anſwered, "Ay, ay, 'tis no matter—Got knows the heart "—there is a time for all things, as the wiſe man ſaith; "there is a time for throwing away ſtones, and a time "to gather them up again."—He ſeemed to be diſconcerted at this reply, and went away in a pet, muttering ſomething about "Ingratitude" and "Fellows," of which we did not think fit to take any notice.

Our fleet, having joined another that waited for us, lay at anchor about a month in the harbour of Port-Royal, in Jamaica, during which time ſomething of conſequence was certainly tranſacted; notwithſtanding the inſinuations of ſome who affirmed we had no buſineſs at all in that place—that in order to take the advantage of the ſeaſon proper for our enterprize, the Weſt-Indian ſquadron, which had previous notice of our coming, ought to have joined us at the weſt end of Hiſpaniola, with neceſſary ſtores and refreſhments, from whence we could have ſailed directly for Carthagena before the enemy could put themſelves in a good poſture of defence, or, indeed, have an inkling of our deſign. Be this as it will, we ſailed from Jamaica, and in ten days or a fortnight, beat up again to the wind as far as the iſle of Vaches, with an intention, as was ſaid, to attack the French fleet, then in poſſeſſion of the harbour of that place; but before we arrived they had ſteered for Europe, having given diſpatches to Carthagena, with an account of our being in thoſe ſeas, as alſo of our ſtrength and deſtination. We anchored here ſome days longer, taking in wood, and freſh water, in the mean while, however

our admiral seemed to consult the health of the men, by restricting each to a quart a-day. At length we set sail, and arrived in a bay to the windward of Carthagena, where we came to an anchor, and lay at our ease ten days longer. Here again certain malicious people take occasion to blame the conduct of their superiors, by saying, that in so doing, they not only unprofitably wasted time, which was very precious, considering the approach of the rainy season, but also allowed the Spaniards to recollect themselves from the terror occasioned by the approach of the English fleet, at least three times as numerous as ever appeared in that part of the world before. But if I might be allowed to give my opinion of the matter, I would ascribe this delay to the generosity of our chiefs, who seemed to take any advantage that fortune might give them, even over an enemy. At last, however, we weighed, and anchored again somewhat nearer the harbour's mouth, where we made shift to land our marines, who encamped on the beach, in despite of the enemy's flow, which knocked a good many of them on the head. This piece of conduct, in landing a camp under the walls of an enemy's fortification, which I myself happened to [illegible], was praised by [illegible], with a view of ascertaining [illegible] were [illegible] much used to [illegible] the [illegible] from the place [illegible] again has [illegible] for, for [illegible] by motives [illegible] to [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

CHAP. XXXII.

Our land forces being disembarked, erect a fascine battery—our ship is ordered, with four more, to batter the fort of Boca Chica *—Mackthane's cowardice—the chaplain's phrenzy—honest Rattlin loses his hand—his terrible and red faces on the battle—Cramphey's benaviour in the hurly the heat of the fight.*

OUR forces being landed and stationed as I have already mentioned, fet about erecting a fascine battery to cannonade the principal fort of the enemy, and in fomething more than three weeks it was ready to open. That we might do the Spaniards as much honour as poffible, it was determined in a council of war, that five of our largeft fhips fhould attack the fort on one fide, while the battery, ftrengthened by two mortars and twenty-four cohorns, fhould ply it on the other.

Accordingly, the fignal for our fhip to engage, among others was hoifted, we being advertifed the night before, to make every thing clear for that purpofe: and in fo doing, a difference happened between Captain Oakhum and his well-beloved coufin and counfellor Mackthane, which had well nigh terminated in an open rupture. The doctor, who had imagined there was no more danger of being hurt by the enemy's fhot in the cockpit than in the center of the earth, was lately informed that a furgeon's mate had been killed in that room of the fhip by a cannon-ball from two guns of our fhips that were directed to rake the diftant point of our fcullers; and [illegible] upon [illegible] the [illegible] of the [illegible] he [illegible] himfelf [illegible] on the [illegible]. The [illegible] at this [illegible] propofal, [illegible] of [illegible], [illegible] was no [illegible] [illegible] for [illegible] was, [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

nevertheleſs, he was obliged to comply, and ſent for the carpenter to give him orders about it: but before any ſuch meaſure could be taken, our ſignal was thrown out, and the doctor compelled to truſt his carcaſe in the cockpit, where Morgan and I were buſy in putting our inſtruments and dreſſings in order.

Our ſhip, with others deſtined for this ſervice, immediately weighed, and in leſs than half an hour came to an anchor before the caſtle of Boca Chica, with a ſwing upon our cable—and the cannonading (which indeed was terrible) began. The ſurgeon, after having croſſed himſelf, fell flat on the deck; and the chaplain and purſer, who were ſtationed with us in quality of aſſiſtants, followed his example, while the Welſhman and I ſat upon a cheſt, looking at one another with great diſcompoſure, ſcarce able to refrain from the like proſtration. And that the reader may know it was not a common occaſion that alarmed us thus, I muſt inform him of the particulars of this dreadful din that aſtoniſhed us. The fire of the Spaniards proceeded from eighty-four great guns, beſides a mortar and ſmall arms, in Boca Chica, thirty-ſix in fort St Joſeph, twenty in two falſine batteries, and four men of war, mounting ſixty-four guns each. This was anſwered by our land battery, mounted with twenty-one cannon, two mortars, and twenty-four cohorns, and five great ſhips of ſeventy or eighty guns, that fired without intermiſſion. We had not been many minutes engaged, when one of the ſailors brought another on his back to the cockpit, where he tumbled him down like a bag of oats, and pulling out his pouch, put a large chew of tobacco in his mouth, without ſpeaking a word. Morgan immediately examined the condition of the wounded man, and cried out, "A! I ſhall never now, the man is as "dead as my great grandfather." "Dead, (ſaid his "comrade) he may be dead now, for aught I know, "but I'll be damned if he was not alive when I took him "up." So ſaying, he went about to [illegible] and throw it overboard. "Dead, (ſaid he) "I made it's fair enough [illegible]

him half way up the cockpit ladder, crying, " You louzy " raſcal, is this the church yard, or the charnel houſe, " or the ſepulchre or the Golgotha of the ſhip?—but was ſtopt in his career by one calling, " Yo ho, avaſt there—ſcaldings"—" Scaldings! (anſwered Morgan) Got " knows 'tis hot enough indeed:—who are you?"—" Here's one," (replied the voice.) And I immediately knew it to be that of my honeſt friend Jack Rattlin, who coming towards me, told me, with great deliberation, he was come to be docked at laſt, and diſcovered the remains of one hand, which had been ſhattered to pieces with a grape ſhot. I lamented with unfeigned ſorrow his misfortune, which he bore with heroic courage, obſerving, that every ſhot had its commiſſion: It was well it did not take him in the head; or if it had, what then? he ſhould have died bravely, fighting for his king and country. Death was a debt which every man owed, and muſt pay; and that now was as well as another time.—I was much pleaſed and edified with the maxims of this ſea-philoſopher, who endured the amputation of his left hand without ſhrinking; the operation being performed (at his requeſt) by me, after Mackſhane, who was with difficulty prevailed to lift his head from the deck, had declared there was a neceſſity for his loſing the limb.—While I was employed in dreſſing the ſtump, I aſked Jack's opinion of the battle, who ſhaking his head, frankly told me, he believed we ſhould do no good: " For why, be- " cauſe inſtead of dropping anchor cloſe under ſhore, " where we ſhould have had to deal with one corner of " Boca Chica only, we had opened the harbour, and ex- " poſed ourſelves to the whole fire of the enemy from " their ſhipping and Fort St. Joſeph, as well as from the " caſtle we intended to cannonade; that beſides, we lay " at too great a diſtance to damage the walls, and three " parts in four of our ſhot did not take place; for there " was ſcarce any body on board who underſtood the point- " ing of a gun.—Ah! (God help us! (continued he) if your " kinſman Lieut. Bowling had been here, we ſhould have " had other guiſe work.—" [illegible] " to begin with [illegible] " [illegible] " [illegible] "

soon, that if he did not get up immediately, and perform his duty, he would complain of his behaviour to the admiral, and make application for his warrant. This remonſtrance effectually rouſed Mackſhane, who was never deaf to an argument in which he thought his intereſt was concerned: he therefore roſe up, and in order to ſtrengthen his reſolution, had recourſe more than once to a caſe-bottle of rum, which he freely communicated to the chaplain and purſer, who had as much need of ſuch extraordinary inſpiration as himſelf: being thus ſupported, he went to work, and arms and legs were hewed down without mercy. The fumes of the liquor mounting into the parſon's brain conſpired, with his former agitation of ſpirits, to make him quite delirious; he ſtript himſelf to the ſkin, and beſmearing his body with blood, could ſcarce be with-held from running upon deck in that condition. Jack Rattlin, ſcandalized at this deportment, endeavoured to allay his tranſports with reaſon: but finding all he ſaid ineffectual, and great confuſion occaſioned by his frolicks, he knocked him down with his right-hand, and by threats kept him quiet in that ſtate of humiliation. But it was not in the power of rum to elevate the purſer, who ſat on the floor wringing his hands, and curſing the hour in which he left his peaceable profeſſion of a brewer in Rocheſter, to engage in ſuch a life of terror and diſquiet. While we diverted ourſelves at the expence of this poor devil, a ſhot happened to take us between wind and water, and (its courſe being through the purſer's ſtore-room) made a terrible havoc and noiſe among the jars and bottles in its way, and diſconcerted Mackſhane ſo much, that he dropt his ſcalpel, and falling down on his knees, pronounced his *Paternoſter* aloud; the purſer fell backward, and lay without ſenſe or motion; and the chaplain grew ſo outrageous, that Rattlin with one hand could not keep him under; ſo that we were obliged to confine him in the ſurgeons cabin, where he was no doubt guilty of a thouſand extravagancies. Much about this time, my old antagoniſt Crampley came down with expreſs orders (as he ſaid) to bring me up to the quarter-deck to dreſs a ſlight wound the captain had received by a ſplinter. His reaſon for be-

nouring me in particular with this piece of ſervice being, that in caſe I ſhould be killed or diſabled by the way, my death or mutilation would be of leſs conſequence to the ſhip's company than that of the doctor or his firſt mate. At another time, perhaps, I might have diſputed this order, to which I was not bound to pay the leaſt regard; but as I thought my reputation depended upon my compliance, I was reſolved to convince my rival that I was no more afraid than he of expoſing myſelf to danger. With this view I provided myſelf with dreſſings, and followed him immediately to the quarter-deck, through a moſt infernal ſcene of ſlaughter, fire, ſmoak, and uproar! Captain Oakhum, who leaned againſt the mizen maſt, no ſooner ſaw me approach in my ſhirt, with the ſleeves tucked up to my arm-pits, and my hands dyed with blood, than he ſignified his diſpleaſure by a frown, and aſked why the doctor himſelf did not come? I told him Crampley had ſingled me out, as if by expreſs command; at which reply he ſeemed ſurpriſed, and threatened to puniſh the midſhipman for his preſumption, after the engagement: In the mean time I was ſent back to my ſtation, and ordered to tell Mackſhane that the captain expected him immediately. I got ſafe back, and delivered my commiſſion to the doctor, who flatly refuſed to quit the poſt aſſigned to him by his inſtructions: whereupon, Morgan, who (I believe) was jealous of my reputation for courage, undertook the affair, and aſcended with great intrepidity The captain, finding the ſurgeon obſtinate, ſuffered himſelf to be dreſſed, and ſwore he would confine Mackſhane as ſoon as the ſervice ſhould be over.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIII.

A breach being made in the walls, our ſoldiers give the aſſault, and take the place without oppoſition—our ſailors at the ſame time become maſters of all the other ſtrengths near Boca Chica *and take poſſeſſion of the harbour—the good conſequence of this ſucceſs—we move nearer the town—find two forts deſerted, and the channel blocked up with ſunk veſſels; which however we find means to clear—land our ſoldiers at* La Quinta—*repulſe a body of militia—attack the caſtle of* St Lazar, *and are forced to retreat with great loſs—the remains of our army are reimbarked—an effort of the admiral to take the town—the œconomy of our expedition deſcribed.*

HAVING cannonaded the fort during the ſpace of four hours, we were all ordered to ſlip our cables, and ſheer off; but next day the engagement was renewed, and continued from the morning till the afternoon, when the enemy's fire from Boca Chica ſlackened, and towards evening was quite ſilenced. A breach being made on the other ſide, by our land battery, large enough to admit a middle-ſized baboon, providing he could find means to climb up to it; our general propoſed to give the aſſault that very night, and actually ordered a detachment on that duty. Providence ſtood our friend upon this occaſion, and put it into the hearts of the Spaniards to abandon the fort, which might have been maintained by reſolute men to the day of judgment, againſt all the force we could exert in the attack;—and when our ſoldiers took poſſeſſion of the enemy's ramparts without reſiſtance, the ſame good luck attended a body of ſailors, who made themſelves maſters of Fort St Joſeph, the faſcine batteries, and one Spaniſh man of war; the other three being burnt or ſunk by the foe, that they might not fall into our hands. The taking of theſe forts, in the ſtrength of which the Spaniards chiefly confided, made us maſters of the outward harbour, and occaſioned great joy among us, as we laid our accounts with finding lit-

tle or no oppoſition from the town: and indeed, if a few great ſhips had ſailed up immediately, before they had recovered from the confuſion and deſpair that our unexpected ſucceſs had produced among them, it is not impoſſible that we might have finiſhed the affair to our ſatisfaction, without any more bloodſhed; but this ſtep our heroes diſdained, as a barbarous inſult over the enemy's diſtreſs, and gave them all the reſpite they could deſire, in order to recollect themſelves. In the mean time, Mackſhane taking the advantage of this general exultation, waited on our captain, and pleaded his own cauſe ſo effectually, that he was re-eſtabliſhed in his good graces; and as for Crampley, there was no more notice taken of his behaviour towards me during the action. But of all the conſequences of the victory, none was more grateful than plenty of freſh water, after we had languiſhed five weeks on the allowance of a purſer's quart *per diem* for each man, in the Torrid Zone, where the ſun was vertical, and the expence of bodily fluid ſo great, that a gallon of liquor could ſcarce ſupply the waſte of twenty-four hours; eſpecially as our proviſion conſiſted of putrid ſalt beef, to which the ſailors gave the name of Iriſh horſe; ſalt pork of New-England, which, though neither fiſh nor fleſh, favoured of both; bread from the ſame country, every biſcuit whereof, like a piece of clock-work, moved by its own internal impulſe, occaſioned by the myriads of inſects that dwelt within it; and butter ſerved out by the gill, that taſted like train oil thickened with ſalt. Inſtead of ſmall beer, each man was allowed three half quartorns of brandy or rum, which were diſtributed every morning, diluted with a certain quantity of his water, without either ſugar or fruit to render it potable; for which reaſon, this compoſition was by the ſailors juſtly ſtyled Nelſon. Nor was this limitation of ſimple element owing to the ſcarcity of it on board, for there was at this time enough in the ſhip for a voyage of ſix months, at the rate of half a gallon per day to each man: but the commiſſ of ſtoppage have been eſtabliſhed by way of puniſh on the ſhip's company for their ſins; or rather with view to mortify that ſpirit of contempt of life, that

might thereby become more resolute and regardless of danger. How simply then do those people argue, who ascribe the great mortality among us to our bad provision and want of water; and affirm, that a great many valuable lives might have been saved, if the useless transports had been employed in fetching fresh stock, turtle, fruit, and other refreshments, from Jamaica and other adjacent islands, for the use of the army and fleet! seeing it is to be hoped, that those who died went to a better place, and those who survived were the more easily maintained. After all, a sufficient number remained to fall before the walls of St Lazar, where they behaved like their own country mastiffs, which shut their eyes, run into the jaws of a bear, and have their heads crushed for their valour.

But to return to my narration. After having put garrisons into the forts we had taken, and re-imbarked our soldiers and artillery, a piece of service that detained us more than a week, we ventured up to the mouth of the inner-harbour, guarded by a large fortification, on one side, and a small redoubt on the other, both of which were deserted before our approach, and the entrance of the harbour blocked up by several old galleons, and two men of war, that the enemy had sunk in the channel. We made shift, however, to open a passage for some ships that favoured a second landing of our troops at a place called La Quinta, not far from the town, where, after a faint resistance from a body of Spaniards, who opposed their disembarkation, they encamped with a design of besieging the castle of St Lazar, which overlooked and commanded the city. Whether our renowned general had friends in his army who knew how to approach it in time, or that he trusted entirely to the fame of his arms, I shall not determine; but certain it is, a resolution was taken in a council of war, to attack the place with musketry only: this was put in execution, and succeeded accordingly; the enemy giving them such a hearty reception, that the greatest part of the detachment took up their quarters for some time on the spot. Our chief not relishing this kind of compliance in the Spaniards, was [illegible] to [illegible] the remainder of his army,

army, which, from eight thouſand able men landed on the beach near Boca Chica, was now reduced to fifteen hundred fit for ſervice. The ſick and wounded were ſqueezed into certain veſſels, which thence obtained the name of hoſpital-ſhips, though methinks they ſcarce deſerved ſuch a creditable title, ſeeing few of them could boaſt of their ſurgeon, nurſe, or cook; and the ſpace between decks was ſo confined, that the miſerable patients had not room to ſit upright in their beds. Their wounds and ſtumps being neglected, contracted filth and putrefaction, and millions of maggots were hatched amidſt the corruption of their ſores. This inhuman diſregard was imputed to the ſcarcity of ſurgeons, tho' it is well known that every great ſhip in the fleet could have ſpared one at leaſt for this duty; an expedient which would have been more than ſufficient to remove this ſhocking inconvenience. But perhaps the general was too much of a gentleman to aſk a favour of this kind from his fellow-chief, who, on the other hand, would not derogate ſo much from his own dignity as to offer ſuch aſſiſtance unaſked; for, I may venture to affirm, that by this time the Dæmon of Diſcord, with her ſooty wings, had breathed her influence upon our counſels; and it might be ſaid of theſe great men, (I hope they will pardon the compariſon,) as of Cæſar and Pompey; the one could not brook a ſuperior, and the other was impatient of an equal: ſo that between the pride of one, and inſolence of another, the enterpriſe miſcarried, according to the proverb, "Between "two ſtools the backſide falls to the ground." Not that I would be thought to liken any public concern to that opprobrious part of the human body, though I might with truth aſſert, if I durſt uſe ſuch a vulgar idiom, that the nation did hang an a—ſe at its diſappointment on this occaſion; neither would I preſume to compare the capacity of our heroic leaders to any ſuch wooden convenience as a joint-ſtool, or a cloſe-ſtool; but, only to ſignify by this ſimile, the miſtake the people committed in truſting to the union of two inſtruments that were never joined.

A day or two after the attempt on St Lazar, the admiral ordered one of the Spaniſh men of war we had taken to be mounted with ſixteen guns, and manned with

detachments from our great ſhips, in order to batter the town: accordingly, ſhe was towed into the inner harbour in the night, and moored within half a mile of the walls, againſt which ſhe began to fire at day-break, and continued about ſix hours expoſed to the oppoſition of at leaſt thirty pieces of cannon, which at length obliged our men to ſet her on fire, and get off as well as they could in their boats. This piece of conduct afforded matter of ſpeculation to all the wits either in the army or navy, who were at laſt fain to acknowledge it a ſtroke of policy above their comprehenſion. Some entertained ſuch an irreverent opinion of the admiral's underſtanding, as to think he expected the town would ſurrender to his floating battery of ſixteen guns: others imagined his ſole intention was to try the enemy's ſtrength, by which he ſhould be able to compute the number of great ſhips that would be neceſſary to force the town to a capitulation. But, this laſt conjecture ſoon appeared groundleſs, in as much as no ſhips of any kind whatever were afterwards employed on that ſervice. A third ſort ſwore, that no other cauſe could be aſſigned for this undertaking, than that which induced Don Quixote to attack the windmill. A fourth claſs (and that the moſt numerous, though, without doubt, compoſed of the ſanguine and malicious) plainly taxed this commander with want of honeſty as well as ſenſe; and alledged that he ought to have ſacrificed private pique to the intereſt of his country; that where the lives of ſo many brave fellow-citizens were concerned, he ought to have concurred with the general, without being ſolicited or even deſired, towards their preſervation and advantage; that if his arguments could not diſſuade him from a deſperate enterprize, it was his duty to have rendered it as practicable as poſſible, without running extreme hazard; that this could have been done with a good proſpect of ſucceſs, by ordering five or ſix large ſhips to batter the town, while the land-forces ſtormed the caſtle: by theſe means a conſiderable diverſion would have been made in favour of thoſe troops, who, in their march to the aſſault, and in the retreat, ſuffered much more from the town than from the caſtle; that the inhabitants, ſeeing themſelves vigorouſly attacked on all hands,

hands, would have been divided, diſtracted, and confuſed, and, in all probability, unable to reſiſt the aſſailants. But all theſe ſuggeſtions ſurely proceeded from ignorance and malevolence, or elſe the admiral would not have found it ſuch an eaſy matter, at his return to England, to juſtify his conduct to a miniſtry at once ſo upright and diſcerning. True it is, that thoſe who undertook to vindicate him on the ſpot, aſſerted, there was not water enough for our great ſhips near the town; though this was a little unfortunately urged, becauſe there happened to be pilots in the fleet perfectly well acquainted with the ſoundings of the harbour, who affirmed there was water enough for five eighty-gun ſhips to lie a-breaſt, almoſt up at the very walls. The diſappointments we ſuffered occaſioned an univerſal dejection, which was not at all alleviated by the objects that daily and hourly entertained our eyes, nor by the proſpect of what muſt inevitably have happened, had we remained much longer in this place. Such was the œconomy in ſome ſhips, that rather than be at the trouble of interring the dead, their commanders ordered their men to throw their bodies overboard, many without either baluſt or winding-ſheet; ſo that numbers of human carcaſſes floated in the harbour, until they were devoured by ſharks and carrion-crows; which afforded no agreeable ſpectacle to thoſe who ſurvived. At the ſame time the wet ſeaſon began, during which a deluge of rain falls from the riſing to the ſetting of the ſun, without intermiſſion: and that no ſooner ceaſes, than it begins to thunder and lighten with ſuch continual flaſhes, that one can ſee to read a very ſmall print by the illumination.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIV.

An epidemic fever rages among us—we abandon our conquests—I am seized with the distemper; write a petition to the captain, which is rejected—I am in danger of suffocation through the malice of Crampley, *and relieved by a serjeant—my fever increases—the chaplain wants to confess me—I obtain a favourable crisis—*Morgan's *affection for me proved—the behaviour of* Macklhane *and* Crampley *towards me—Captain* Oakhum *is removed into another ship with his beloved doctor—our new captain described—an adventure of* Morgan.

THE change of the atmosphere, occasioned by this phænomenon, conspired with the stench that surrounded us, the heat of the climate, our own constitutions impoverished by bad provisions, and our despair, to introduce the bilious fever among us, which raged with such violence, that three fourths of those whom it invaded died in a deplorable manner; the colour of their skin being, by the extreme putrefaction of the juices, changed into that of soot.

Our conductors, finding things in this situation, perceived it was high time to relinquish our conquests, and this we did, after having rendered their artillery useless, and blown up their walls with gunpowder. Just as we sailed from Boca Chica on our return to Jamaica, I found myself threatened with the symptoms of this terrible distemper; and knowing very well that I stood no chance for my life, if I should be obliged to lie in the cockpit, which, by this time, was grown intolerable even to people in health, by reason of the heat and unwholesome smell of decayed provision; I wrote a petition to the captain, representing my case, and humbly imploring his permission to lie among the soldiers on the middle deck, for the benefit of the air: but I might have spared myself the trouble; for, this humane commander refused my request, and ordered me to continue in the place allotted for the surgeon's mates, or else be confined to lie in the hospital, which, by the bye, was three degrees

more offenſive and more ſuffocating than our own birth below. Another in my condition perhaps would have ſubmitted to this fate, and died in a pet; but I could not brook the thought of periſhing ſo pitifully, after I had weathered ſo many gales of hard fortune: I therefore, without minding Oakhum's injunction, prevailed upon the ſoldiers (whoſe good will I had acquired) to admit my hammock among them; and actually congratulated myſelf upon my comfortable ſituation; which Crampley no ſooner underſtood, than he ſignified to the captain my contempt of his orders, and was inveſted with power to turn me down again to my proper habitation. This barbarous piece of revenge incenſed me ſo much againſt the author, that I vowed, with bitter imprecations, to call him to a ſevere account, if ever it ſhould be in my power; and the agitation of my ſpirits increaſed my fever to a violent degree. While I lay gaſping for breath in this infernal abode, I was viſited by a ſerjeant, the bones of whoſe noſe I had reduced and ſet to rights, after they had been demoliſhed by a ſplinter during our laſt engagement: He being informed of my condition, offered me the uſe of his birth in the middle deck, which was incloſed with canvas, and well aired by a port hole that remained open within it. I embraced this propoſal with joy, and was immediately conducted to the place, where I was treated, while my illneſs laſted, with the utmoſt tenderneſs and care by this grateful halberdier, who had no other bed for himſelf than a hencoop, during the whole paſſage. Here I lay and enjoyed the breeze, notwithſtanding which, my malady gained ground, and at length my life was deſpaired of; though I never loſt hopes of recovery, even when I had the mortification to ſee, from my cabin-window, ſix or ſeven thrown over-board every day, who died of the ſame diſtemper. This confidence, I am perſuaded, conduced a great deal to the preſervation of my life, eſpecially when joined to another reſolution I took at the beginning, namely, to refuſe all medicine, which I could not help thinking co-operated with the diſeaſe, and, inſtead of reſiſting putrefaction, promoted a total degeneracy of the viral fluid. When my friend Morgan, therefore, brought his diaphoreti-

phoretic boluſes, I put them in my mouth, 'tis true, but without any intention of ſwallowing them; and when he went away, ſpit them out, and waſhed my month with water-gruel: I ſeemingly complied in this manner, that I might not affront the blood of Caractacus, by a refuſal which might have intimated a diffidence of his phyſical capacity; for he acted as my phyſician, Doctor Macklhane never once inquiring about me, or even knowing where I was. When my diſtemper was at the height, Morgan thought my caſe deſperate, and after having applied a bliſter to the nape of my neck, ſqueezed my hand, bidding me with a woeful countenance, recommend myſelf to Got and my Reteemer; then taking his leave, deſired the chaplain to come and adminiſter ſome ſpiritual conſolation to me: but before he arrived, I made ſhift to rid myſelf of the troubleſome application the Welchman had beſtowed on my back. The parſon having felt my pulſe, inquired into the nature of my complaints, hemmed a little, and began thus: "Mr Random, "God out of his infinite mercy hath been pleaſed to "viſit you with a dreadful diſtemper, the iſſue of "which no man knows. You may be permitted "to recover, and live many days on the face of the "earth; and, which is more probable, you may be taken "away and cut off in the flower of your youth: It is "incumbent on you, therefore, to prepare for the great "change, by repenting ſincerely of your ſins; of this "there cannot be a greater ſign than an ingenuous con-"feſſion, which I conjure you to make, without heſita-"tion, or mental reſervation; and when I am convinced "of your ſincerity, I will then give you ſuch comfort as "the ſituation of your ſoul will admit of. Without doubt, "you have been guilty of numberleſs tranſgreſſions, to "which youth is ſubject, as ſwearing, drunkenneſs, "whoredom, and adultery. Tell me, therefore, without "reſerve, the particulars of each, eſpecially of the laſt, "that I may be acquainted with the true ſtate of your "conſcience; for no phyſician will preſcribe for his pa-"tient until he knows the circumſtances of his diſeaſe." As I was not under any apprehenſions of death, I could not help ſmiling at the doctor's inquiſitive remonſtrance,

which I told him favoured more of the Roman than of the Protestant church, in recommending auricular confession; a thing, in my opinion, not at all necessary to salvation, and which, for that reason, I declined. This reply disconcerted him a little; however he explained away his meaning, in making learned distinctions between what was absolutely necessary and what was only convenient; then proceeded to ask what religion I professed. I answered, that I had not as yet considered the difference of religions, consequently had not fixed on any one in particular, but that I was bred a Presbyterian. At this word the chaplain expressed great astonishment, and said, he could not comprehend how a Presbyterian was entitled to any post under the English government. Then he asked if I had ever received the sacrament, or taken the oaths; to which questions I replying in the negative, he held up his hands, assured me he could do me no service, wished I might not be in a state of reprobation; and returned to his mess-mates, who were making merry in the ward-room, round a table well stored with bumbo * and wine. This insinuation, terrible as it was, had not such an effect upon me as the fever, which, soon after he had left me, grew outrageous; I began to see strange chimeras, and concluded myself on the point of becoming delirious. In the mean time, being in great danger of suffocation, I started up in a kind of frantic fit, with an intention of plunging myself into the sea; and as my friend the serjeant was not present, would have certainly cooled myself to some purpose, had I not perceived a moisture upon my thigh as I endeavoured to get out of my hammock. The appearance of this revived my hopes, and I had reflection and resolution enough to take the advantage of this favourable symptom, by tearing the shirt from my body, and the sheets from my bed, and wrapping myself in a thick blanket, in which indosture, for about a quarter of an hour, I felt the pains of hell; but it was not long before I was recompensed for my suffering, by a profuse sweat, that bursting from the whole surface

* Bumbo is a liquor compounded of rum, sugar, water, and nutmeg.

ſurface of my ſkin, in leſs than two hours relieved me from all my complaints, except that of weakneſs, and left me as hungry as a kite. I enjoyed a very comfortable nap, after which I was regaling myſelf with the agreeable reverie of my future happineſs, when I heard Morgan on the outſide of the curtain, aſk the ſerjeant if I was alive ſtill "Alive! (cried the other) God forbid he ſhould "be otherwiſe! he has lain quiet theſe five hours, and "I do not chuſe to diſturb him, for ſleep will do him "great ſervice."—"Aye, (ſaid my fellow-mate), he ſleeps "ſo ſound, (look you), that he will never waken till the "great trumpet plows.—Got be merciful to his ſoul.— "He has paid his debt like an honeſt man.—Ay and "moreover, he is at reſt from all perſecutions, and trou- "bles, and afflictions, of which Got knows, and I know, "he had his own ſhare.—Ochree! Ochree! he was a "promiſing youth indeed!"—So ſaying, he groaned grievouſly, and began to whine in ſuch a manner, as perſuaded me he had a real friendſhip for me. The ſerjeant, alarmed at his words, came into the birth, and while he looked upon me, I ſmiled, and tipt him the wink. He immediately gueſſed my meaning, and remaining ſilent, Morgan was confirmed in his opinion of my being dead. Whereupon he approached with tears in his eyes, in order to indulge his grief with a ſight of the object; and I counterfeited death ſo well, by fixing my eyes, and dropping my under-jaw, that he ſaid, "There he lies, no "better than a lump of clay, Got help me." And obſerved by the diſtortion of my face, that I muſt have had a ſtrong ſtruggle. I ſhould not have been able to contain myſelf much longer, when he began to perform the laſt duty of a friend, in cloſing my eyes and my mouth; upon which I ſuddenly ſnapped at his fingers, and diſcompoſed him ſo much, that he ſtarted back, turned pale as aſhes, and ſtared like the picture of horror. Although I could not help laughing at his appearance, I was concerned for his ſituation, and ſtretched out my hand, telling him, I hoped to live and eat ſome ſalmagundy of his making in England. It was ſome time before he could recollect himſelf ſo far as to feel my pulſe, and inquire into the particulars of my diſeaſe: But when he found

found I had enjoyed a favourable criſis, he congratulated me upon my good fortune; not failing to aſcribe it, under Got, to the bliſter he had applied to my back, at his laſt viſit; which, by the bye, ſaid he, muſt now be removed and dreſſed. He was actually going to fetch dreſſings, when I feigning aſtoniſhment, ſaid, "Bleſs me! ſure you "never applied a bliſter to me—there is nothing on my "back, I aſſure you." But he could not be convinced till he had examined it, and then endeavoured to conceal his confuſion, by expreſſing his ſurpriſe in finding the ſkin untouched, and the plaiſter miſſing. In order to excuſe myſelf for paying ſo little regard to his preſcription, I pretended to have been inſenſible when it was put on, and to have pulled it off afterwards in a fit of delirium. This apology ſatisfied my friend, who on this occaſion abated a good deal of his ſtiffneſs in regard to punctilio; and as we were now ſafely arrived at Jamaica, where I had the benefit of freſh proviſions, and other refreſhments, I recovered ſtrength every day, and in a ſhort time my health and vigour were perfectly re-eſtabliſhed. When I got up at firſt, and was juſt able to crawl about the deck with a ſtaff in my hand, I met Doctor Mackſhane, who paſſed by me with a diſdainful look, and did not vouchſafe to honour me with one word: After him came Crampley, who ſtrutting up to me, with a fierce countenance, pronounced, "Here's fine diſcipline on board, when ſuch "lazy ſkulking ſons of bitches as you are allowed, on "pretence of ſickneſs, to lollop at your eaſe, while your "betters are kept to hard duty." The ſight and behaviour of this malicious ſcoundrel enraged me ſo much, that I could ſcarce refrain from laying my cudgel acroſs his pate; but when I conſidered my preſent feebleneſs, and the enemies I had in the ſhip, who wanted only a pretence to ruin me, I reſtrained my paſſion, and contented myſelf with telling him, I had not forgot his inſolence and malice, and that I hoped we ſhould meet one day on ſhore. At this declaration he grinned, ſhook his fiſt, and ſwore he longed for nothing more than ſuch an opportunity.

Meanwhile our ſhip was ordered to be heaved down, victualled, and watered, for her return to England; and our

our captain, for ſome reaſon or other, not thinking it convenient for him to reviſit his native country at this time, exchanged with a gentleman, who on the other hand wiſhed for nothing ſo much as to be ſafe without the tropic; all his care and tenderneſs of himſelf being inſufficient to preſerve his complexion from the injuries of the ſun and weather.

Our tyrant having left the ſhip, and carried his favourite Mackthane along with him, to my inexpreſſible ſatisfaction, our new commander came on board in a ten-oar'd barge, overſhadowed with a vaſt umbrella, and appeared in every thing the reverſe of Oakhum, being a tall, thin, young man, dreſſed in this manner: A white hat, garniſhed with a red feather adorned his head, from whence his hair flowed upon his ſhoulders in ringlets tied behind with a ribbon. His coat conſiſting of pink-coloured ſilk, lined with white, by the elegance of the cut retired backward, as it were, to diſcover a white ſatin waiſtcoat embroidered with gold, unbuttoned at the upper part to diſplay a broach ſet with garnets, that glittered in the breaſt of his ſhirt, which was of the fineſt cambric, edged with right Mechlin: the knees of his crimſon velvet breeches ſcarce deſcended ſo low as to meet his ſilk ſtockings, which roſe without ſpot or wrinkle on his meagre legs, from ſhoes of blue Meroquin, ſtudded with diamond buckles that flamed forth rivals to the ſun? A ſteel-hilted ſword, inlaid with gold, and decked with a knot of ribbon, which fell down in a rich taſſle, equipped his ſide, and an amber-headed cane hung dangling from his wriſt. But the moſt remarkable parts of his furniture were, a maſk on his face, and white gloves on his hands, which did not ſeem to be put on with an intention to be pulled off occaſionally, but were fixed with a curious ring on the little finger of each hand. In this garb, Captain Whiffle, for that was his name, took poſſeſſion of the ſhip, ſurrounded with a crowd of attendants, all of whom, in their different degrees, ſeemed to be of their patron's diſpoſition; and the air was ſo impregnated with perfumes, that one may venture to affirm the clime of Arabia Fœlix was not half ſo ſweet ſcented. My fellow-mate, obſerving no ſurgeon among his train, thought he had found

found an occaſion too favourable for himſelf to be neglected; and remembering the old proverb, "Spare to "ſpeak, and ſpare to ſpeed," reſolved to ſolicit the new captain's intereſt immediately, before any other ſurgeon could be appointed for the ſhip. With this view he repaired to the cabin in his ordinary dreſs, conſiſting of a check-ſhirt and trouſers, a brown linen waiſtcoat, and a night-cap of the ſame, (neither of them very clean,) which, for his further misfortune, happened to ſmell ſtrong of tobacco. Entering without any ceremony into this ſecret place, he found Captain Whiffle repoſing upon a couch, with a wrapper of fine chintz about his body, and a muſlin cap bordered with lace about his head; and after ſeveral long congees began in this manner:—"Sir, I hope you will forgive, and excuſe, and pardon "the preſumption of one who has not the honour of "being known unto you, but who is nevertheleſs a "ſhentleman porn and pred, and moreover, has had "misfortunes, Got help me, in the world."—Here he was interrupted by the captain, who, on ſeeing him, had ſtarted up with great amazement at the novelty of the apparition; and having recollected himſelf, pronounced with a look and tone ſignifying diſdain, curioſity, and ſurprize, "Zauns! who art thou?"—"I am ſurgeon's "firſt mate on board of this ſhip, (replied Morgan), and I "moſt vehemently deſire and beſeech you with all ſubmiſſion, to be pleaſed to condeſcend and vouchſafe to "inquire into my character, and my behaviour, and my "deſerts, which, under Got, I hope, will intitle me to the "vacancy of ſurgeon."—As he proceeded in his ſpeech, he continued advancing towards the captain, whoſe noſtrils were no ſooner ſaluted with the aromatic flavour that exhaled from him, than he cried with great emotion, "Heaven preſerve me! I am ſuffocated!—Fellow, fel"low, away with thee.—Curſe the fellow! get thee gone. "—I ſhall be ſtunk to death!" At the noiſe of his outcries, his ſervants ran into his apartment, and he accoſted them thus: "Villains! cut-throats! traitors! I "am betrayed! I am ſacrificed! Will you not carry that "monſter away! or muſt I be ſtifled with the ſtench of "him! oh! oh!"—With theſe interjections, he ſunk down

down upon his ſettee in a fit; his *valet de chambre* plied him with a ſmelling bottle; one footman chafed his temples with Hungary water, another ſprinkled the floor with ſpirits of lavender, a third puſhed Morgan out of the cabbin; who coming to the place where I was, ſat down with a demure countenance, and according to his cuſtom, when he received any indignity which he durſt not revenge, began to ſing a Welch ditty. I gueſſed he was under ſome agitation of ſpirits, and deſired to know the cauſe; but inſtead of anſwering me directly, he aſked me with great emotion, if I thought him a monſter and a ſtinkard? "A monſter and a ſtinkard (ſaid I with ſome "ſurpriſe) did any body call you ſo?" —"Got is my "judge (replied he) Captain Fiſſle did call me both; ay, "and all the water in the Tawy will not waſh it out of "my remembrance—I do affirm and avouch, and maintain with my ſoul, and my body, and my blood, look "you, that I have no ſmells about me, but ſuch as a "chriſtian ought to have, except the effluvia of tobacco, "which is a cephalic, odoriferous, aromatic herb, and "he is a ſon of a mountain-goat who ſays otherwiſe.— "As for my being a monſter, let that be as it is. I am "as Got was pleaſed to create me, which, peradventure, "is more than I ſhall aver of him who gave me that "title: for I will proclaim it before the world, that he is "diſguiſed, and tranſfigured, and tranſmogrified with "affectation and whimſies; and that he is more like a "papoon than one of the human race."

CHAP. XXXV.

Captain Whiffle *ſends for me—his ſituation deſcribed—his ſurgeon arrives, preſcribes for him, and puts him to-bed—A bed is put up for* Mr Simper *contiguous to the ſtate-room, which, with other parts of the captain's behaviour, gives the ſhip's company a very unfavourable idea of their commander—I am detained in the* Weſt Indies, *by the admiral, and go on board of the* Lizzard *ſloop of war, in quality of ſurgeon's mate, where I make myſelf known to the ſurgeon, who treats me very kindly—I go on ſhore, ſell my ticket, purchaſe neceſſaries, and at my return on board am ſurpriſed at the ſight of* Crampley, *who is appointed lieutenant of the ſloop—we ſail on a cruize—take a prize, in which I arrive at* Port-Morant, *under the command of my meſſmate, with whom I live in great harmony.*

HE was going on with an eulogium upon the captain, when I received a meſſage to clean myſelf and go up to the great cabbin: and with this command I inſtantly complied, ſweetening myſelf with roſe-water from the medicine-cheſt. When I entered the room, I was ordered to ſtand by the door until Captain Whiffle had reconnoitered me at a diſtance with a ſpy-glaſs. He, having conſulted one ſenſe in this manner, bade me advance gradually, that his noſe might have intelligence, before it could be much offended: I therefore approached with great caution and ſucceſs, and he was pleaſed to ſay "Ay, this creature is tolerable."—I found him lolling on his couch with a languiſhing air, his head ſupported by his *valet de chambre*, who from time to time applied a ſmelling bottle to his noſe,—"Vergette, (ſaid he in a "ſqueaking tone) dott thou think this wretch (meaning "me) will do me any injury? may I venture to ſubmit "my arm to him?"—"Pen my lord, (replied the va-"let,) I do tink dat dere be great occaſion for your ho-"nour doing one ſmall quantity of bludt; and the young "man ave quelque choſe of de bonne mien."—"Well "then, (ſaid his maſter,) I think I muſt venture." Then addreſſing himſelf to me, "Have thou ever bloodied any

"body

" body but brutes?—But I need not aſk thee, for thou " wilt tell me a moſt damnable lie."—" Brutes, Sir, " (anſwered I, pulling down his glove, in order to feel " his pulſe,) I never meddle with brutes."—" What the " devil art thou about? (cried he;) doſt thou intend to " twiſt off my hand? Gad's curſe! my arm is benumbed " up to the very ſhoulder. Heaven have mercy upon " me! muſt I periſh under the hands of ſavages? What " an unfortunate dog was I to come on board without " my own ſurgeon, Mr Simper!"—I craved pardon for having handled him ſo roughly, and with the utmoſt care and tenderneſs tied up his arm with a fillet of ſilk.—While I was feeling for the vein, he deſired to know how much blood I intended to take from him; and when I anſwered, "Not above twelve ounces," ſtarted up with a look full of horror, and bade me begone, ſwearing I had a deſign upon his life.—Vergette appeaſed him with difficulty, and opening a bureau, took out a pair of fleams, in one of which was placed a ſmall cup, and putting them into my hand, told me, that the captain never loſt above an ounce, and three drachms at one time. While I prepared for this important evacuation, there came into the cabin a young man gaily dreſſed, of a very delicate complexion, with a kind of languid ſmile on his face, which ſeemed to have been rendered habitual, by a long courſe of affectation. The captain no ſooner perceived him, than riſing haſtily, he flew into his arms, crying, "O " my dear Simper! I am exceſſively diſordered! I have " been betrayed, frightened, murdered, by the negligence " of my ſervants, who ſuffered a beaſt, a mule, a bear, to " ſurpriſe me, and ſtink me into convulſions with the " fumes of tobacco."—Simper, who by this time I found was obliged to act for the clearneſs of his complexion, aſſumed an air of ſoftneſs and ſympathy, and accoſted with many tender expreſſions of ſorrow the ſad accident that had thrown him into that condition. then, feeling his patient's pulſe on the outſide of his glove, gave as his opinion, that his diſorder was entirely nervous, and that ſome drops of the eſſence of caſtor and liquid laudanum would be of more ſervice to him than bleeding, by bridling the inordinate fierceneſs of his ſpirits, and compoſing the

fermentation of his bile. I was therefore ſent to prepare this preſcription, which was adminiſtred in a glaſs of ſack-poſſet; after the captain had been put to bed, and orders ſent to the officers on the quarter-deck, to let nobody walk on that ſide under which he lay.

While the captain enjoyed his repoſe, the doctor watched over him, and indeed became ſo neceſſary, that a cabin was made for him contiguous to the ſtate-room, where Whiffle ſlept, that he might be at hand in caſe of accident in the night. Next day, our commander being happily recovered, gave orders, that none of the lieutenants ſhould appear upon deck without a wig, ſword, and ruffles; nor any midſhipman, or other petty officer, be ſeen with a check-ſhirt, or dirty linen. He alſo prohibited any perſon whatever, except Simper and his own ſervants, from coming into the great cabin, without firſt ſending in to obtain leave. Theſe ſingular regulations did not prepoſſeſs the ſhip's company in his favour; but, on the contrary, gave ſcandal an opportunity to be very buſy with his character, and accuſe him of maintaining a correſpondence with his ſurgeon not fit to be named.

In a few weeks our ſhip being under ſailing orders, I was in hopes of reviſiting my native country in a very ſhort time, when the admiral's ſurgeon came on board, and ſending for Morgan and me to the quarter-deck, gave us to underſtand there was a great ſcarcity of ſurgeons in the Weſt-Indies; that he was commanded to detain one mate out of every great ſhip that was bound for England; and deſired us to agree between ourſelves, before the next day at that hour, which of us ſhould ſtay behind. We were thunderſtruck at this propoſal, and ſtared at one another ſome time without ſpeaking; at length the Welſhman broke ſilence, and offered to remain in the Weſt-Indies, provided the admiral would give him a ſurgeon's warrant immediately: but he was told there was no want of chief ſurgeons, and that he muſt be contented with the ſtation of mate, till he ſhould be further provided for in due courſe. Whereupon Morgan flatly refuſed to quit the ſhip for which the commiſſioners of the navy had appointed him; and the other told him as plainly, that if we could not determine the affair

affair by ourſelves before to-morrow morning, he muſt caſt lots, and abide by his chance. When I recalled to my remembrance the miſeries I had undergone in England, where I had not one friend to promote my intereſt, or favour my advancement in the navy, and at the ſame time reflected on the preſent dearth of ſurgeons in the Weſt-Indies, and the unhealthineſs of the climate, which every day almoſt reduced the number, I could not help thinking my ſucceſs would be much more certain and expeditious, by my ſtaying where I was, than by returning to Europe. I therefore reſolved to comply with a good grace; and next day, when we were ordered to throw dice, told Morgan he needed not trouble himſelf, for I would voluntarily ſubmit to the admiral's pleaſure. This frank declaration was commended by the gentleman, who aſſured me, it ſhould not fare the worſe with me for my reſignation. Indeed he was as good as his word, and that very afternoon procured a warrant, appointing me ſurgeon's mate of the Lizzard ſloop of war, which put me on a footing with every firſt mate in the ſervice.

My ticket being made out, I put my cheſt and bedding on board a canoe that lay along-ſide, and having ſhook hands with my truſty friend the ſerjeant, and honeſt Jack Rattlin, who was bound for Greenwich hoſpital, I took my leave of Morgan with many tears, after we had exchanged our ſleeve-buttons as remembrances of each other. Having preſented my new warrant to the captain of the Lizzard, I inquired for the doctor, whom I no ſooner ſaw, than I recollected him to be one of thoſe young fellows with whom I had been committed to the round-houſe during our frolic with Jackſon, as I have related before. He received me with a good deal of courteſy, and when I put him in mind of our former acquaintance, expreſſed great joy at ſeeing me again, and recommended me to an exceeding good meſs, compoſed of the gunner and maſter's mate. As there was not one ſick perſon in the ſhip, I got leave to go a-ſhore next day with the gunner, who recommended me to a Jew, that bought my ticket at the rate of 40 *per cent* diſcount; and having furniſhed myſelf with what neceſſaries I wanted, returned on board in the evening; and, to my ſurpriſe, found my

my old antagoniſt Crampley walking upon deck. Tho' I did not fear his enmity, I was ſhocked at his appearance, and communicated my ſentiments on that ſubject to Mr Tomlins the ſurgeon, who told me that Crampley, by dint of ſome friends about the admiral, had procured a commiſſion, conſtituting him lieutenant on board the Lizzard; and adviſed me, now he was my ſuperior officer, to behave with ſome reſpect towards him, or elſe he would find a thouſand opportunities of using me ill. This advice was a bitter potion to me, whom pride and reſentment had rendered utterly incapable of the leaſt ſubmiſſion to, or even of a reconciliation with the wretch who had, on many occaſions, treated me ſo inhumanly: however, I reſolved to have as little connection as poſſible with him, and to ingratiate myſelf as much as I could with the reſt of the officers, whoſe friendſhip might be a bulwark to defend me from the attempts of his malice.

In leſs than a week we ſailed on a cruize, and having weathered the eaſt end of the iſland, had the good fortune to take a Spaniſh barcolongo, with her prize, which was an Engliſh ſhip bound for Briſtol, that ſailed from Jamaica a fortnight before, without convoy. All the priſoners who were well we put on ſhore on the north-ſide of the iſland; the prizes were manned with Engliſhmen, and the command of the barcolongo given to my friend the maſter's mate, with orders to carry them into Port Morant, and there to remain until the Lizzard's cruize ſhould be ended, at which time ſhe would touch at the ſame place in her way to Port-Royal. With him I was ſent to attend the wounded Spaniards as well as Engliſhmen, who amounted to ſixteen, and to take care of them on ſhore, in a houſe that was to be hired as an hoſpital.—This deſtination gave me a great deal of pleaſure, as I ſhould, for ſome time, be freed from the arrogance of Crampley, whoſe inveteracy againſt me had already broke out on two or three occaſions ſince he was become a lieutenant.—My meſs-mate, who very much reſembled my uncle, both in figure and diſpoſition, treated me on board of the prize with the moſt civility and confidence; and among other favours, made me a preſent

ſent of a ſilver hilted hanger, and a pair of piſtols mounted with the ſame metal, which fell to his ſhare in plundering the enemy. We arrived ſafely at Morant, and going on ſhore, pitched upon an empty ſtore-houſe, which we hired for the reception of the wounded, who were brought to it next day with beds and other neceſſaries; and four of the ſhip's company appointed to attend them and obey me.

CHAP. XXXVI.

*A ſtrange adventure—in conſequence of which I am extremely happy—*Crampley *does me ill offices with the captain; but his malice is defeated by the good nature and friendſhip of the ſurgeon—we return to* Port-Royal—*our captain gets the command of a larger ſhip, and is ſucceeded by an old man* Brayl *is promoted for—we receive orders to ſail for* England.

WHEN my patients were all in a fair way, my companion and commander, whoſe name was Brayl, carried me up to the country to the houſe of a rich planter, with whom he was acquainted; where we were ſumptuouſly entertained, and in the evening ſet out on our return to the ſhip. When we had walked about a mile by moon-light, we perceived a horſeman behind us, who coming up wiſhed us *good even*, and aſked which way we went: his voice, which was quite familiar to me, no ſooner ſtruck my ear, than, in ſpite of all my reſolution and reflection, my hair briſtled up, and I was ſeized with a violent fit of trembling, which Brayl miſinterpreting, bade me be under no concern. I told him he was miſtaken in the cauſe of my diſorder; and addreſſing myſelf to the perſon on horſeback, ſaid, "I could have "ſworn by your voice that you was a dear friend of mine, "if I had not been certain of his death." To this addreſs, after ſome pauſe, he replied, "There are many voices "as well as faces, that reſemble one another; but pray "what was your friend's name?" I ſatisfied him in this particular;

particular, and gave a ſhort detail of the melancholy fate of Thomſon, not without many ſighs and ſome tears. A ſilence enſued which laſted ſome minutes, and then the converſation turned on different ſubjects, till we arrived at a houſe on the road, where the horſeman alighted, and begged with ſo much earneſtneſs that we would go in and drink a bowl of punch with him, that we could not reſiſt. But if I was alarmed at his voice, what muſt my amazement be, when I diſcovered by the light the very perſon of my lamented friend! Perceiving my confuſion, which was extreme, he claſped me in his arms, and bedewed my face with tears. It was ſome time ere I recovered the uſe of my reaſon, overpowered with this event, and longer ſtill before I could ſpeak; ſo that all I was capable of was to return his embraces, and to mingle the overflowings of my joy with his; whilſt honeſt Brayl, affected with the ſcene, wept as faſt as either of us, and ſignified his participation of our happineſs, by hugging us both, and capering about the room like a madman. At length I retrieved the uſe of my tongue, and cried, "Is it poſſible? can you be my friend Thom-"ſon? No, certainly, alas! he was drowned! and I am "now under the deception of a dream!" He was at great pains to convince me of his being the individual perſon whom I regretted, and bidding me ſit down and compoſe myſelf, promiſed to explain his ſudden diſappearance from the Thunder, and to account for his being at preſent in the land of the living. This taſk he acquitted himſelf of, after I had drank a glaſs of punch, and recollected myſelf, by informing us, that, with a determination to rid himſelf of a miſerable exiſtence, he had gone in the night-time to the head, while the ſhip was on her way, from whence he ſlipped down, as ſoftly as he could by the bows, into the ſea, where, after he was heartily ducked, he began to repent of his precipitation, and as he could ſwim very well, kept himſelf above water, in hopes of being taken up by ſome of the ſhips aſtern;—that, in this ſituation, he hailed a large veſſel, and begged to be taken in, but was anſwered that ſhe was a heavy ſailor, and therefore they did not chuſe to loſe time, by bringing to; however, they threw an old cheſt overboard,

board, for his convenience, and told him, that ſome of the ſhips aſtern would certainly ſave him;—that no other veſſel came within ſight or cry of him for the ſpace of three hours, during which time he had the mortification to find himſelf in the middle of the ocean alone, without other ſupport or reſting-place but what a few crazy boards afforded; till at laſt he diſcerned a ſmall ſloop ſteering towards him, upon which he ſet up his throat, and had the good fortune to be heard and reſcued from the dreary waſte, by their boat, which was hoiſted out on purpoſe. "I was no ſooner brought on board (continued he) than "I fainted, and when I recovered my ſenſes, found my- "ſelf in bed, regaled with a moſt noiſome ſmell of onions "and cheeſe, which made me think at firſt that I was "in my own hammock, along-ſide of honeſt Morgan, "and that all which had paſſed was no more than a dream. "Upon inquiry, I underſtood that I was on board of a "ſchooner belonging to Rhode Iſland, bound for Ja- "maica, with a cargo of geeſe, pigs, onions, and cheeſe; "and that the maſter's name was Robertſon, by birth a "North Briton, whom I knew at firſt ſight to be an old "ſchool fellow of mine. When I diſcovered myſelf to "him, he was tranſported with ſurpriſe and joy, and "begged to know the occaſion of my misfortune, which "I did not think fit to diſcloſe, becauſe I knew his no- "tions with regard to religion were very ſevere and con- "fined; therefore contented myſelf with telling him, I "fell overboard by accident; but made no ſcruple of "explaining the nature of my diſagreeable ſtation; and "of acquainting him with my determined purpoſe never "to return to the Thunder man of war. Although he "was not of my opinion in that particular, knowing "that I had left my cloaths, and what pay was due to "me, unleſs I went back to my duty; yet, when I deſ- "cribed the circumſtances of the Britiſh life I led, un- "der the tyrannic ſway of Oakham and Mackshane; "and [illegible] "the [illegible] "[illegible] "[illegible] "[

" navy; and that he might ſhew how much he had my " intereſt at heart, undertook to provide for me in ſome " ſhape or other, before he ſhould leave Jamaica. This " promiſe he performed to my heart's deſire, by recom- " mending me to a gentleman of fortune, with whom " I have lived ever ſince, in quality of ſurgeon and over- " ſeer to his plantations. He and his lady were now at " Kingſton, ſo that I am, for the preſent, maſter of this " houſe, to which, from my ſoul, I bid you welcome, " and hope you will favour me with your company du- " ring the remaining part of the night." I needed not a ſecond invitation; but Mr Brayl, who was a diligent and excellent officer, could not be perſuaded to ſleep out of the ſhip: however, he ſupped with us, and after having drank a chearful glaſs, ſet out for the veſſel, which was not above three miles from the place, eſcorted by a couple of ſtout negroes, whom Mr Thomſon ordered to conduct him. Never were two friends more happy in the converſation of each other than we, for the time it laſted: I related to him the particulars of our attempt upon Carthagena, of which he had heard but an imperfect account: and he gratified me with a narration of every little incident of his life ſince we parted. He aſſured me it was with the utmoſt difficulty he could reſiſt his inclination of coming down to Port-Royal to ſee Morgan and me, of whom he had heard no tidings ſince the day of our ſeparation; but that he was reſtrained by the fear of being detained as a deſerter. He told me, that when he heard my voice in the dark, he was almoſt as much ſurpriſed as I was at ſeeing him afterwards; and in the confidence of friendſhip, diſcloſed a paſſion he entertained for the only daughter of the gentleman with whom he lived, who, by his deſcription, was a very amiable young lady, and did not diſdain his addreſſes; that he was very much favoured by her parents, and did not deſpair of obtaining their conſent to the match, which would at once render him independent of the world. I congratulated him on his good fortune, which he proteſted ſhould never make him forget his friends; and towards morning we betook ourſelves to reſt.

Next day he accompanied me to the ſhip, where Mr Brayl entertained him at dinner, and we having ſpent the afternoon together, he took his leave of us in the evening, after he had forced upon me ten piſtoles, as a ſmall token of his affection. In ſhort, while we ſtaid here, we ſaw one another every day, and generally ate at the ſame table, which was plentifully ſupplied by him with all kinds of poultry, butcher's meat, oranges, limes, lemons, pine-apples, Madeira wine, and excellent rum; ſo that this ſmall interval of ten days was by far the moſt agreeable period of my life.

At length the Lizzard arrived; and my patients being all fit for duty, they and I were ordered on board of her, where I underſtood from Mr Tomlins, that there was a dryneſs between the lieutenant and him on my account; that rancorous villain having taken the opportunity of my abſence, to fill the captain's ears with a thouſand ſcandalous ſtories to my prejudice; among other things affirming, that I had been once tranſported for theft, and that when I was in the Thunder man of war I had been whipt for the ſame crime. The ſurgeon, on the other hand, having heard my whole ſtory from my own mouth, defended me ſtrenuouſly, and in the courſe of that good natur'd office, recounted all the inſtances of Crampley's malice againſt me, while I remained on board that ſhip. Which declaration, while it ſatisfied the captain of my innocence, made the lieutenant as much my defender's enemy as mine. This infernal behaviour of Crampley, with regard to me, added ſuch fuel to my former reſentment, that at certain times I was quite beſide myſelf with the deſire of revenge, and was even tempted to piſtol him on the quarter-deck, though an infamous death muſt inevitably have been my reward. But the ſurgeon, who was my confidant, argued againſt ſuch a deſperate action ſo rationally, that I ſtifled the flame which conſumed me for the preſent, and reſolved to wait for a more convenient opportunity. In the mean time, that Mr Tomlins might be the more convinced of the wrongs I ſuffered by his fellow's rancour, I begged he would go and viſit Mr Thomſon, whoſe wonderful eſcape I had made him acquainted with, and inquire of him into the

particulars of my conduct, while he was my fellow-mate. This requeſt the ſurgeon complied with, more through curioſity to ſee a perſon whoſe fate had been ſo extraordinary, than to confirm his good opinion of me, which he aſſured me was already firmly eſtabliſhed. He therefore ſet out for the dwelling-place of my friend, with a letter of introduction from me; and being received with all the civility and kindneſs I expected, returned to the ſhip, not only ſatisfied with my character beyond the power of doubt or inſinuation, but alſo charmed with the affability and converſation of Thomſon, who loaded him and me with preſents of freſh ſtock, liquors, and fruit. As he would not venture to come and ſee us on board, leſt Crampley ſhould know and detain him; when the time of our departure approached, I obtained leave to go and bid him farewell. After we had vowed an everlaſting friendſhip, he preſſed upon me a purſe with four doubloons, which I refuſed as long as I could, without giving umbrage; and having cordially embraced each other, I returned on board, where I found a ſmall box with a letter directed for me, to the care of Mr Tomlins. Knowing the ſuperſcription to be of Thomſon's hand writing, I opened it with ſome ſurpriſe, and learned that this generous friend, not contented with loading me with the preſents already mentioned, had ſent for my uſe and acceptance half a dozen fine ſhirts, and as many linen waiſtcoats and caps, with twelve pair of new thread ſtockings. Being thus provided with money, and all neceſſaries for the comfort of life, I began to look upon myſelf as a gentleman of ſome conſequence, and felt my pride dilate apace.

Next day we ſailed for Port-Royal, where we arrived ſafely with our prizes; and as there was nothing to do on board, I went aſhore, and having purchaſed a laced waiſtcoat, with ſome other clothes, at a ſale, made a ſwaggering figure for ſome days, among the taverns, where I ventured to play a little at hazard, and came off with fifty piſtoles in my pocket. Mean while our captain was promoted to a ſhip of twenty guns, and the command of the Lizzard given to a man turned of fourſcore, who had been lieutenant ſince the reign of King William

and

and notwithſtanding his long ſervice, would have probably died in that ſtation, had he not applied ſome prize-money he had lately received, to make intereſt with his ſuperiors. My friend Brayl was alſo made an officer about the ſame time, after he had ſerved in quality of a midſhipman and mate five and twenty years. Soon after theſe alterations, the admiral pitched upon our ſhip to carry home diſpatches for the miniſtry; and we ſet ſail for England, having firſt ſcrubbed her bottom, and taken in proviſions and water for the occaſion.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

RODERICK RANDOM,

BY TOBIAS SMOLLETT, M.D.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

Plates by Rowlandson.

VOLUME II.

Et genus et virtus, nisi cum re, vilior alga est. HOR.

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED FOR C. ELLIOT,

By J. Orphoot, Blackfriars Wynd.

1809.

THE

CONTENTS

OF THE

SECOND VOLUME.

CHAP. XXXVII. Page

We depart for Europe—a misunderstanding arises between the captain and surgeon, through the scandalous aspertions of Crampley—the captain dies—Crampley tyrannizes over the surgeon, who falls a victim to his cruelty—I am also ill used—the ship strikes—the behaviour of Crampley and the seamen on that occasion—I get on shore, challenge the captain to single combat—am treacherously knocked down, wounded and robbed, 1

CHAP. XXXVIII.

I get up, and crawl into a barn, where I am in danger of perishing through the fear of the country people—their inhumanity—I am succoured by a reputed witch—her story—her advice—she recommends me as a valet to a single lady, whose character she explains, 5

CHAP. XXXIX.

My reception by that lady—I become enamoured of Narcissa—recount the particulars of my last misfortune—acquire the good opinion of my mistress—an account of the young squire—I am made acquainted with more particulars of Narcissa's situation—conceive a mortal hatred against Sir Timothy—I examine my lady's library and performances—her extravagant behaviour, 13

CHAP. XL.

She is surprised at my learning—communicates her performances to me—I impart some of mine to her—am mortified at her faint praise—Narcissa approves of my production—I gain an involuntary conquest over the cook-wench and dairy-maid—their mutual resentments and insinuations—the jealousy of their lovers, 20

CHAP. XLI.

Narcissa being in danger from the brutality of Sir Timothy, is rescued by me, who revenge myself on my rival—I declare my pas-

sion, and retreat to the sea-side—I am surrounded by smugglers and carried to Bullaign—I find my uncle lieutenant Bowling, in great distress, and relieve him—our conversation, P. 26

CHAP. XLII.

He takes his passage in a cutter for Deal—we are accosted by a priest, who proves to be a Scotchman—his protestations of friendship—he is affronted by the lieutenant, who afterwards appeases him by submission—my uncle embarks—I am introduced by the priest to a capuchin, in whose company I set out for Paris—the character of my fellow-traveller—an adventure on the road—I am shocked at his behaviour, 35

CHAP. XLIII.

We lodge at a house near Amiens, where I am robbed by the capuchin, who escapes while I am asleep—I go to Noyons in search of him, but without success—I make my condition known to several people, but find no relief—I grow desperate—join a company of soldiers—inlist in the regiment of Picardy—we are ordered into Germany—I find the fatigues of the march almost intolerable—quarrel with my comrade in a dispute upon politics—he challenges me to the field, wounds and disarms me, 41

CHAP. XLIV.

The Gascon does not use his victory with all the moderation that might have been expected—In order to be revenged I learn the science of defence—We join Mareschal de Noailles—are engaged with the allies at Dettingen, and put to flight—the behaviour of the French soldiers on that occasion—I industriously seek another combat with the old Gascon, and vanquish him in my turn—our regiment is put into winter quarters at Rheims, where I find my friend Strap—our recognition—he supplies me with money, and procures my discharge—we take a trip to Paris: from whence we set out for London, by the way of Flanders, where we safely arrive, 48

CHAP. XLV.

I inquire about my uncle, and understand he is gone to sea—take lodgings at Charing-cross—go to the play, where I meet with an adventure—I go to an ordinary; the guests described—become acquainted with Medlar and Doctor Wagtail, 52

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVI.

Wagtail introduces me to a ſet of fine gentlemen, with whom I ſpend the evening at the tavern—our converſation—the characters of my new companions—the doctor is roaſted—the iſſue of our debauch, P. 73

CHAP. XLVII.

Strap communicates to me a conqueſt he had made on a chandler's widow—finds himſelf miſerably miſtaken—I go to an opera—admire Melinda—am cautioned by Banter—go to the aſſembly at Hampſtead—dance with that young lady—receive an inſolent meſſage from Bragwell, whoſe mettle is ſoon cooled—am in favour with my miſtreſs, whom I viſit next day; and am bubbled out of eighteen guineas at cards—Strap triumphs at my ſucceſs, but is aſtoniſhed at my expence—Banter comes to my lodging, is very ſarcaſtical at my expence, and borrows five guineas from me as a proof of his friendſhip, 84

CHAP. XLVIII.

We repair to the coffee-houſe, where we overhear a curious diſpute between Wagtail and Medlar, which is referred to our deciſion—the doctor gives us an account of his experiment—Medlar is roaſted by Banter at the ordinary—the old gentleman's advice to me, 93

CHAP. XLIX.

I receive a challenge—the conſequences of it—the quarrel being made up, I am put in arreſt, by the care and affection of Strap—but immediately releaſed upon explaining my affair—the behaviour of Mr O'Regan and his two friends—I viſit Melinda, whom I divert with an account of the duel—I propoſe marriage—ſhe refers the matter to her mother, of whom I make a ſolemn demand of her daughter—the old lady's behaviour—I am diſcarded, reſent their diſdain, 97

CHAP. L.

I long to be revenged on Melinda—apply to Banter for his aſſiſtance—he contrives a ſcheme for that purpoſe, which is put in execution with great ſucceſs—I make an attempt on the heart of Miſs Gripewell, but am diſappointed—grow melancholy at my diſappointment, and have recourſe to the bottle—receive a billet-doux—am raviſhed with the contents—find myſelf involved in an intrigue, which I imagined would make my fortune—

am confounded at my miſtake, which baniſhes all thoughts of matrimony. P. 105

CHAP. LI.

I cultivate an acquaintance with two noblemen—am introduced to earl Strutwell—his kind promiſe and invitation—the behaviour of his porter and lackey—he receives me with an appearance of uncommon affection—undertakes to ſpeak in my behalf to the miniſter—informs me of his ſucceſs, and wiſhes me joy—introduces a converſation about Petronius Arbiter—falls in love with my watch, which I preſs upon him—make a preſent of a diamond ring to lord Straddle—impart my good fortune to Strap, and to Banter, who diſabuſes me, to my utter mortification, 119

CHAP. LII.

I attempt to recover my watch and jewel, but to no purpoſe—reſolve to revenge myſelf on Strutwell by my importunity—am reduced to my laſt guinea—obliged to inform Strap of my neceſſity, who is almoſt diſtracted at the news—but nevertheleſs obliged to pawn my beſt ſword for preſent ſubſiſtence—that ſmall ſupply being exhauſted, I am almoſt ſtupified with my misfortunes—go to the gaming table, by the advice of Banter, and come off with unexpected ſucceſs—Strap's ecſtacy Mrs Gawky waits upon me, profeſſes remorſe for her perfidy, and implores my aſſiſtance—I do myſelf a piece of juſtice by her means, and afterwards reconcile her to her father, 124

CHAP. LIII.

I purchaſe new cloaths—reprimand Strutwell and Straddle—Banter propoſes another matrimonial ſcheme—I accept of his terms—ſet out for Bath in the ſtage coach, with the young lady and her mother—the behaviour of an officer and a lawyer—our fellow-travellers deſcribed—a ſmart dialogue between my miſtreſs and the Captain, 133

CHAP. LIV.

Day breaking, I have the pleaſure of viewing the perſon of Miſs Snapper, whom I had not ſeen before—the ſoldier is witty upon me—is offended, talks much of his valour—is reprimanded by a grave gentlewoman—we are alarmed with the cry of highwaymen—I get out of the coach and ſtand on my own defence—they ride off without having attacked us—I purſue them—one of them is thrown from his horſe and taken—I return to the coach—I am complimented by Miſs Snapper—the captain's behaviour

on the occaſion—the prude reproaches me in a ſoliloquy—I upbraid her in the ſame manner—the behaviour of Mrs Snapper at breakfaſt, diſobliges me—the lawyer is witty on the officer, who threatens him, P. 139

CHAP. LV.

I reſolve to ingratiate myſelf with the mother, and am favoured by accident—the preciſe lady finds her huſband, and quits the coach—the Captain is diſappointed of his dinner—We arrive at Bath—I accompany Miſs Snapper to the Long-room, where ſhe is attacked by Beau N—ſh, and turns the laugh againſt him—I make love to her, and receive a check—ſquire her to an aſſembly, where I am bleſt with a ſight of my dear Narciſſa, which diſcompoſes me ſo much, that Miſs Snapper, obſerving my diſorder, is at pains to diſcover the cauſe—is piqued at the occaſion, and in our way home pays me a ſarcaſtic compliment—I am met by Miſs Williams, who is maid and confidante of Narciſſa—ſhe acquaints me with her lady's regard for me while under the diſguiſe of a ſervant, and deſcribes the tranſports of Narciſſa, on ſeeing me at the aſſembly in the character of a gentleman—I am ſurpriſed with an account of her aunt's marriage, and make an appointment to meet Miſs Williams next day. 147

CHAP. LVI.

I become acquainted with Narciſſa's brother, who invites me to his houſe—where I am introduced to that adorable creature—after dinner the ſquire retires to take his nap—Freeman, gueſſing the ſituation of my thoughts, withdraws likewiſe on pretence of buſineſs—I declare my paſſion for Narciſſa—am well received—charmed with her converſation—the ſquire detains us to ſupper—I elude his deſign by ſtratagem, and get home ſober, 156

CHAP. LVII.

Miſs Williams informs me of Narciſſa's approbation of my flame—I appeaſe the Squire—write to my miſtreſs, am bleſſed with an anſwer—beg leave of her brother to dance with her at a ball; obtain his conſent and her's—enjoy a private converſation with her—am perplexed with reflections—have the honour of appearing her partner at the ball—we are complimented by a certain nobleman—he diſcovers ſome ſymptoms of paſſion for Narciſſa—I am ſtung with jealouſy—Narciſſa alarmed, retires—I obſerve Melinda in the company—the Squire is captivated by her beauty, 165

CHAP.

CHAP. LVIII.

Tortured with jealouſy, I go home and abuſe Strap—receive a meſſage from Narciſſa, in conſequence of which I haſten to her apartment, where her endearing aſſurances baniſh all my doubts and apprehenſions—in my retreat diſcover ſomebody in the dark, whom, ſuſpecting to be a ſpy, I reſolve to kill: but to my great ſurpriſe am convinced of his being no other than Strap—Melinda ſlanders me—I become acquainted with Lord Quiverwit, who endeavours to ſound me with regard to Narciſſa—the ſquire is introduced to his lordſhip, and grows cold towards me—I learn from my confidante, that this nobleman profeſſes honourable love to my miſtreſs who continues faithful to me, notwithſtanding the ſcandalous reports ſhe has heard to my prejudice—I am mortified with an aſſurance that her whole fortune depends on the pleaſure of her brother—Mr Freeman condoles me on the decline of my character, which I vindicate ſo much to his ſatisfaction that he undertakes to combat fame in my behalf. P. 174

CHAP. LIX.

I receive an extraordinary meſſage at the door of the Long-room, which I however enter, and affront the Squire, who threatens to take the law of me—Rebuke Melinda for her malice—She weeps with vexation—Lord Quiverwit is ſevere upon me—I retort his ſaracaſm—I am received with the utmoſt tenderneſs by Narciſſa, who deſires to hear the ſtory of my life—we vow eternal conſtancy to one another—I retire—am waked by a meſſenger, who brings a challenge from Quiverwit, whom I meet, engage, and vanquiſh. 177

CHAP. LX.

I am viſited by Freeman, with whom I appear in public, and am careſſed—am ſent for by Lord Quiverwit, whoſe preſence I quit in a paſſion—Narciſſa is carried off by her brother—I intend to purſue him, and am diſſuaded by my friend—engage in play, and loſe all my money—ſet out for London—try my fortune at the gaming-table without ſucceſs—receive a letter from Narciſſa—bilk my tailor. 186

CHAP. LXI.

I am arreſted—carried to the Marſhalſea—find my old acquaintance beau Jackſon in that jail—he informs me of his adventures—Strap arrives, and is with difficulty comforted—Jackſon introduces me to a poet—I admire his converſation and capacity an—

—am deeply affected with my misfortune—Strap hires himself as a journeyman barber, P. 193

CHAP. LXII.

I read Melopoyn's tragedy, and conceive a vaſt opinion of his genius—he recounts his adventures, 199

CHAP. LXIII.

The continuation and concluſion of Mr Melopoyn's ſtory, 208

CHAP. LXIV.

I am ſeized with a deep melancholy, and become a ſloven—am relieved by my uncle—he prevails upon me to engage with his owners, as ſurgeon of the ſhip which he commands—he makes me a conſiderable preſent—entertains Strap as his ſteward—I take leave of my friends, and go on board—the ſhip arrives at the Downs, 221

CHAP. LXV.

I ſet out for Suſſex—conſult Mrs Sagely—atchieve an interview with Narciſſa—return to the ſhip—we get clear of the channel—I learn our deſtination—we are chaſed by a large ſhip—the company are diſmayed, and encouraged by the captain's ſpeech—our purſuer happens to be an Engliſh man of war—we arrive on the coaſt of Guinea, purchaſe four hundred negroes, ſail for Paraguay, get ſafe into the river of Plate, and ſell our cargo to great advantage. 228

CHAP. LXVI.

I am invited to the villa of a Spaniſh Don, where we meet with an Engliſh gentleman, and make a very intereſting diſcovery—we leave Buenos-Ayres, and arrive at Jamaica, 238

CHAP. LXVII.

I viſit my old friend Thompſon—we ſet ſail for Europe, meet with an odd adventure—arrive in England—I ride acroſs the country from Portſmouth to Suſſex—converſe with Mrs Sagely, who informs me of Narciſſa's being in London—in conſequence of this intelligence, I proceed to Canterbury—meet with my old friend Morgan—arrive at London—viſit Narciſſa—introduce my father to her—he is charmed with her good ſenſe and beauty—we come to a reſolution of demanding her brother's conſent to our marriage, 246

CHAP.

CHAP. LXVIII.

My father makes a preſent to Narciſſa—the letter is diſpatched to her brother—I appear among my acquaintance—Banter's behaviour—the Squire refuſes his conſent—my uncle comes to town—approves of my choice—I am married—we meet the Squire and his lady at the play—our acquaintance is courted, P. 256

CHAP. LXIX.

My father intends to viſit the place of his nativity—we propoſe to accompany him—my uncle renews his will in my favour, determining to go to ſea again—we ſet out for Scotland—arrive at Edinburgh—purchaſe our paternal eſtate—proceed to it—halt at the town where I was educated—take up my bond to Crab—the behaviour of Potion and his wife, and one of my female couſins—our reception at the eſtate—Strap marries Miſs Williams, and is ſettled by my father to his own ſatisfaction—I am more and more happy, 262

THE

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

RODERICK RANDOM.

CHAP. XXXVII.

We depart for Europe—*a miſunderſtanding ariſes between the captain and ſurgeon, through the ſcandalous aſperſions of* Crampley—*the Captain dies*—Crampley *tyrannizes over the ſurgeon, who falls a victim to his cruelty—I am alſo ill uſed—the ſhip ſtrikes—the behaviour of* Crampley *and the ſeamen on that occaſion—I get on ſhore, challenge the captain to ſingle combat—I am treacherouſly knocked down, wounded and robbed.*

NOW that I could return to my native country in a creditable way, I felt exceſſive pleaſure in finding myſelf out of ſight of that fatal iſland, which has been the grave of ſo many Europeans; and as I was accommodated with every thing to render the paſſage agreeable, I reſolved to enjoy myſelf as much as the inſolence of Crampley would permit. This inſidious ſlanderer had found means already to cauſe a miſunderſtanding between the ſurgeon and captain, who by his age and infirmities was rendered intolerably peeviſh, his diſpoſition having alſo been ſoured by a long courſe of diſappointments, and had a particular averſion to all young men, eſpecially to ſurgeons, whom he conſidered as unneceſſary animals on board of a ſhip. In conſequence of theſe ſentiments, he never conſulted the doctor, notwithſtanding his being

ſeized with a violent fit of the gout and gravel, but applied to a caſk of Holland's gin, which was his ſovereign preſcription againſt all diſtempers. But whether he was at this time too ſparing, or took an overdoſe of his cordial, certain it is, he departed in the night without any ceremony, which indeed was a thing he always deſpiſed, and was found ſtiff next morning, to the no ſmall ſatisfaction of Crampley, who ſucceeded to the command of the veſſel. For that very reaſon, Mr Tomlins and I had no cauſe to rejoice at this event, fearing that the tyranny of our new commander would be now as unlimited as his power. The firſt day of his command juſtified our apprehenſions; for, on pretence that the decks were too much crowded, he ordered the ſurgeon's hencoops with all his fowls to be thrown overboard; and at the ſame time prohibited him and me from appearing on the quarter-deck. Mr Tomlins could not help complaining of theſe injuries, and in the courſe of his expoſtulation dropped ſome haſty words, of which Crampley taking hold, confined him to his cabbin, where, in a few days, for want of air, he was attacked by a fever, which ſoon put an end to his life, after having made his will, by which he bequeathed all his eſtate, perſonal and real, to his ſiſter, and left to me his watch and inſtruments, as remembrances of his friendſhip. I was penetrated with grief on this melancholy occaſion; the more, becauſe there was nobody on board to whom I could communicate my grief, or of whom I could receive the leaſt conſolation or advice.—Crampley was ſo far from diſcovering the leaſt remorſe for his barbarity, at the news of the ſurgeon's death, that he inſulted his memory in the moſt abuſive manner, and affirmed he had poiſoned himſelf out of pure fear, dreading to be brought to a court-martial for mutiny; for which reaſon he would not ſuffer the ſervice of the dead to be read over his body before it was thrown overboard.

Nothing but a ſpeedy deliverance could have ſupported me under the brutal ſway of this baſhaw; who, to render my life the more irkſome, ſignified to my meſs-mates a deſire that I ſhould be expelled from their ſociety.—This was no ſooner hinted, than they granted his requeſt;

queſt; and I was fain to eat in a ſolitary manner by myſelf during the reſt of the paſſage, which however ſoon drew to a period.

We had been ſeven weeks at ſea, when the gunner told the captain, that by his reckoning we muſt be in ſoundings, and deſired he would order the lead to be heaved. Crampley ſwore he did not know how to keep the ſhip's way, for we were not within a hundred leagues of ſoundings, and therefore he would not give himſelf the trouble to caſt the lead. Accordingly, we continued our courſe all that afternoon and night, without ſhortening ſail, though the gunner pretended to diſcover Scilly light; and next morning proteſted in form againſt the captain's conduct, for which he was put in confinement. We diſcovered no land all that day, and Crampley was ſtill ſo infatuated as to neglect ſounding: but at three o'clock in the morning, the ſhip ſtruck, and remained faſt on a ſand bank. This accident alarmed the whole crew; the boat was immediately hoiſted out, but as we could not diſcern which way the ſhore lay, we were obliged to wait for day-light. In the mean time the wind increaſed, and the waves beat againſt the ſloop with ſuch violence, that we expected ſhe would have gone to pieces. The gunner was releaſed and conſulted: he adviſed the captain to cut away the maſt, in order to lighten her; this was performed without ſucceſs. The ſailors ſeeing things in a deſperate ſituation, according to cuſtom, broke up the cheſts belonging to the officers, dreſſed themſelves in their cloaths, drank their liquors without ceremony; and drunkenneſs, tumult, and confuſion enſued. In the midſt of this uproar I went below to ſecure my own effects; and found the carpenter's mate hewing down the purſer's cabin with his hatchet, whiſtling all the while with great compoſure. When I aſked his intention in ſo doing, he replied very calmly, "I want only to taſte "the purſer's rum, that's all, maſter."—At that inſtant the purſer coming down, and ſeeing his effects going to wreck, complained bitterly of the injuries done to him, and aſked the fellow what occaſion he had for liquor, when in all likelihood he would be in eternity in a few minutes? "Ah's ere for that (ſaid the plunderer) let

" us live while we can."—" Miſerable wretch that thou " art! (cried the purſer) what muſt be thy lot in the " other world, if thou dieſt in the commiſſion of rob- " bery?"—" Why, hell, I ſuppoſe," (replied the other with great deliberation,) while the purſer fell on his knees and begged of Heaven that we might not all periſh for the ſake of one Jonas. During this dialogue I cloathed myſelf in my beſt apparel, girded on my hanger, ſtuck my piſtols loaded in my belt, diſpoſed of all my valuable moveables about my perſon, and came upon deck with a reſolution of taking the firſt opportunity to get upon ſhore, which, when the day broke, appeared to be at the diſtance of three miles a-head Crampley finding his efforts to get the ſhip off ineffectual, determined to conſult his own ſafety by going into the boat, which he had no ſooner done, than the ſhip's company followed ſo faſt, that ſhe would have ſunk along-ſide, had not ſome one wiſer than the reſt cut the rope and put off. But before this happened, I had made ſeveral attempts to get in, and was always baulked by the captain, who was ſo eager for excluding me, that he did not mind the endeavours of any other body. Enraged at this inhuman partiality, and ſeeing the rope cut, I pulled one of my piſtols from my belt, and cocking it, ſwore I would ſhoot any man who would preſume to obſtruct my entrance. So ſaying, I leaped with my full exertion, and got on board the boat with the loſs of the ſkin off one of my ſhins. I chanced in my deſcent to overturn Crampley, who no ſooner got up than he ſtruck at me ſeveral times with a cutlaſs, and ordered the men to throw me overboard; but they were too anxious about their own ſafety to mind what he ſaid. Though the boat was very deeply loaded, and the ſea terribly high, we made ſhift to get upon dry land in leſs than an hour after we parted from the ſloop.—As ſoon as I ſet foot on *terra firma*, my indignation, which had boiled ſo long within me, broke out againſt Crampley, whom I immediately challenged to ſingle combat, preſenting my piſtols, that he might take his choice: he took one without heſitation, and, before I could cock the other, fired in my face, throwing the piſtol after the ſhot. I felt myſelf ſtunned, and imagining

the

the bullet had entered my brain, diſcharged mine as quick as poſſible, that I might not die unrevenged; then flying upon my antagoniſt, I knocked out ſeveral of his fore-teeth with the but-end of the piece; and would certainly have made an end of him with that inſtrument, had he not diſengaged himſelf, and ſeized his cutlaſs, which he had given to his ſervant when he received the piſtol. Seeing him armed in this manner, I drew my hanger, and having flung my piſtol at his head, cloſed with him in a tranſport of fury, and thruſt my weapon into his mouth, which it enlarged on one ſide to his ear. Whether the ſmart of this wound diſconcerted him, or the unevenneſs of the ground made him reel, I know not, but he ſtaggered ſome paces back: I followed cloſe, and with one ſtroke cut the tendons of the back of his hand, upon which his cutlaſs dropt, and he remained defenceleſs. I know not with what cruelty my rage might have inſpired me, if I had not at that inſtant been felled to the ground by a blow on the back part of my head, which deprived me of all ſenſation. When I recovered the uſe of my underſtanding, I found myſelf alone in a deſolate place, ſtript of my clothes, money, watch, buckles, and every thing but my ſhoes, ſtockings, breeches, and ſhirt. What a diſcovery muſt this be to me, who but an hour before was worth ſixty guineas in caſh! I curſed the hour of my birth, the parents that gave me being, the ſea that did not ſwallow me up, the poignard of the enemy, which could not find the way to my heart, the villainy of thoſe who had left me, in that miſerable condition, and, in the ecſtacy of deſpair, reſolved to ly ſtill where I was and periſh.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

I get up, and crawl into a barn, where I am in danger of perishing through the fear of the country people —their inhumanity—I am succoured by a reputed witch —her story—her advice she recommends me as a valet to a single lady, whose character she explains.

BUT as I lay ruminating, my passion insensibly abated; I considered [illegible] in quite another light from that in which it appeared to me at first, and the result of my deliberation was to get up if I could, and crawl to the next inhabited place for assistance.—With some difficulty I got upon my legs, and having examined my body found I had received no other injury than two large contused wounds, one on the fore another on the hinder part of my head; which seemed to be occasioned by the same weapon, namely, the butt-end of a pistol. I looked towards the sea, but could discern no remains of the ship; which made me conclude she had gone to pieces, and that those who remained in her had perished: but, as I afterwards learned, the gunner, who had more sagacity than Crampley, observing that it was flood when we left her, and that she would possibly float at high-water, made no noise about getting on shore, but continued on deck, in hopes of bringing her safe into some harbour, after the commander had deserted her, for which he expected, no doubt, to be handsomely rewarded. This he accordingly performed, and was promised great things by the admiralty for saving his Majesty's ship, but I never heard he reaped the fruits of his expectation. As for my own part, I directed my course towards a small cottage I perceived, and in the road picked up a seaman's old jacket, which I supposed the thief who dressed himself in my cloaths had thrown away: this was a very comfortable acquisition to me, who was almost starved with cold: I therefore put it on, and as my natural heat revived, my wounds, which had left off bleeding, burst out afresh; so that finding myself exceedingly exhausted, I was about to lye down in the fields, when I discovered

diſcovered a barn on my left hand, within a few yards of me: thither I made ſhift to ſtagger, and finding the door open went in, but ſaw nobody; upon which I threw myſelf down upon a truſs of ſtraw, hoping to be ſoon relieved by ſome perſon or other. I had not lain here many minutes, when I ſaw a country man come in with a pitch-fork in his hand, which he was upon the point of thruſting into the ſtraw that concealed me, and in all probability would have done my buſineſs, had I not uttered a dreadful groan, after having aſſayed in vain to ſpeak.—This melancholy note alarmed the clown, who ſtarted back, and diſcovering a body all beſmeared with blood, ſtood trembling, with the pitch-fork extended before him, his hair erect, his eyes ſtaring, his noſtrils dilated, and his mouth wide open. At another time I ſhould have been much diverted with this figure, which preſerved the ſame attitude very near a quarter of an hour, during which time I made many unſucceſsful efforts to implore his compaſſion and aſſiſtance; but my tongue failed me, and my language was only a repetition of groans. At length an old man arrived, who ſeeing the other in ſuch a poſture, cried, "Mercy upon us! the lond's bewitch'd!—"Why, Dick, beeſt thou bewitch'd thyſelf?"—Dick, without moving his eyes from the object that terrified him, replied, "O vather! vather! here be either the devil or "a dead man: I doant know which o'em, but a groans "woundily."—The father, whoſe eye-ſight was none of the beſt, pulled out his ſpectacles, and having applied them to his noſe, reconnoitred me over his ſon's ſhoulder; but no ſooner did he behold me, than he was ſeized with a fit of ſhaking, even more violent than Dick's, and with a trembling accent adjured me thus: "In the name of the "Vather, Zon, and Holy Ghoſt, I charge yon, an you be "Satan or begone to the Red-Sea; but an you be a "moorcred Chriſtian, ſpeak, that you may have a Chriſtom "burial."—As I was not in a condition to ſatisfy him in this particular, he repeated his conjuration to no purpoſe; and they continued a long time in the agonies of fear. At length the father propoſed that the ſon ſhould draw nearer and take a more diſtinct view of the apparition: but Dick was of opinion that his father ſhould advance firſt,

as being an old man paſt his labour, and if he received any miſchief, the loſs would be the ſmaller; whereas he himſelf might eſcape, and be uſeful in his generation.—This prudential reaſon had no effect upon the ſenior, who ſtill kept Dick between me and him. In the mean time I endeavoured to raiſe one hand as a ſignal of diſtreſs, but had only ſtrength ſufficient to cauſe a ruſtling among the ſtraw, which diſcompoſed the young peaſant ſo much, that he ſprung out at the door, and overthrew his father in his flight. The old gentleman would not ſpend time in getting up, but crawled backwards like a crab, with great ſpeed, till he had got over the threſhold, mumbling exorciſms all the way. I was exceedingly mortified to find myſelf in danger of periſhing through the ignorance and cowardice of theſe clowns; and felt my ſpirits decay apace, when an old woman entered the barn, followed by the two fugitives, and with great intrepidity advanced to the place where I lay, ſaying, "If it be the devil "I fearn not, and for a dead mon, a can do us no harm." When ſhe ſaw my condition, ſhe cried, "Here be no devil "but in youren fool's head.—Here be a poor miſerable "wretch, bleeding to death, and if he dies, we muſt be "at the charge of burying him; therefore, Dick, go and "vetch the old wheel-barrow and puten in, and carry him "to good-man Hodge's back-door, he is more able than "we to lay out money upon poor vagrants."—Her advice was taken, and immediately put in execution: I was rolled to the other farmer's door, where I was tumbled out like a heap of dung, and would certainly have fallen a prey to the hogs, if my groans had not diſturbed the family, and brought ſome of them out to view my ſituation. But Hodge reſembled the Jew more than the good Samaritan, and ordered me to be carried to the houſe of the parſon, whoſe buſineſs it was to practiſe as well as to preach charity; obſerving that it was ſufficient for him to pay his *quota* towards the maintenance of the poor belonging to his own pariſh. When I was ſet down at the vicar's gate, he fell into a mighty paſſion, and threatened to excommunicate him who ſent as well as thoſe who brought me, unleſs they would move me immediately to another place. About this time I fainted with the fatigue

I had

I had undergone, and afterwards underſtood, that I was bandied about from door to door through a whole village, nobody having humanity enough to adminiſter the leaſt relief to me, until an old woman, who was ſuſpected of witchcraft by the neighbourhood, hearing of my diſtreſs, received me into her houſe, and having dreſſed my wounds, brought me to myſelf with cordials of her own preparing. I was treated with great care and tenderneſs by this grave matron, who, after I had recovered ſome ſtrength, deſired to know the particulars of my laſt diſaſter. This piece of ſatisfaction I could not refuſe to one who had ſaved my life, therefore I related all my adventures without exaggeration or reſerve. She ſeemed ſurpriſed at the viciſſitudes I had undergone, and drew a happy preſage of my future life from my paſt ſufferings; then launched out into the praiſe of adverſity with ſo much ardour and good ſenſe, that I concluded ſhe was a perſon who had ſeen better days, and conceived a longing deſire to hear her ſtory. She perceived my drift by ſome words I dropped, and ſmiling told me, there was nothing either entertaining or extraordinary in the courſe of her fortune; but however, ſhe would communicate it to me, in conſideration of the confidence I had repoſed in her.——"It is of little conſequence," ſaid ſhe, "to tell the names of my parents, "who are dead many yeurs ago: let it ſuffice to aſſure "you they were wealthy, and had no other child than "me, ſo that I was looked upon as heireſs to a conſiderable eſtate, and teized with addreſſes on that account. "Among a number of my admirers, there was a young "gentleman of no fortune, whoſe ſole dependence was "on his promotion in the army, in which at that time "he bore a lieutenant's commiſſion. I conceived an affection for this amiable officer, which in a ſhort time "increaſed to a violent paſſion, and, without entering into minute circumſtances, married him privately. We "had not enjoyed one another long in ſtolen interviews, "when he was ordered with his regiment into Flanders; "but before he ſet out, it was agreed between us, that "he ſhould declare our marriage to my father by letter, and implore his pardon for the ſtep we had taken

" without his approbation. This was done while I was " abroad viſiting, and juſt as I was about to return home, " I received a letter from my father, importing, that " ſince I had acted ſo undutifully and meanly, as to mar- " ry a beggar, without his privity or conſent, to the diſ- " grace of his family, as well as the diſappointment of " his hopes, he renounced me to the miſerable fate I had " entailed upon myſelf, and charged me never to ſet foot " within his doors again. This rigid ſentence was con- " firmed by my mother, who, in a poſtſcript, gave me " to underſtand that her ſentiments were exactly con- " formable to thoſe of my father, and that I might ſave " myſelf the trouble of making any applications, for her " reſolutions were unalterable. Thunder-ſtruck with " my evil fortune, I called a coach and drove to my huſ- " band's lodgings, where I found him waiting the event " of his letter. Though he could eaſily divine by my " looks, the iſſue of his declaration, he read with great " ſteadineſs the epiſtle I had received; and with a ſmile " full of tenderneſs, which I ſhall never forget, embraced " me, ſaying, I believe the good lady your mother might " have ſpared herſelf the trouble of the laſt part of her " poſtſcript. Well, my dear Betty, you muſt lay aſide " all thoughts of a coach, till I can procure the com- " mand of a regiment.—This unconcerned behaviour, " while it enabled me to ſupport my reverſe of fortune, " at the ſame time endeared him to me the more, by " convincing me of his diſintereſted views in eſpouſing " me. I was next day boarded in company with the " wife of another officer, who had long been friend and " confidant of my huſband, at a village not far from " London, where they parted with us in the moſt melt- " ing manner, went to Flanders, and were killed in fight " of one another at the battle of the wood. Why ſhould " I tire you with a deſcription of our unutterable ſorrow " at the fatal news of this event, the remembrance of " which now fills my aged eyes with tears? When our " grief ſubſided a little, and reflection came to our aid, " we found ourſelves deſerted by the whole world, and " in danger of periſhing for want: whereupon we made " application for the penſion, and were put upon the liſt.

" Then

" Then vowing eternal friendſhip, ſold our jewels and " ſuperfluous cloaths, retired to this place (which is in " the county of Suſſex) bought this little houſe, where we " lived many years in a ſolitary manner, indulging our " mutual ſorrow, 'till it pleaſed Heaven to call away my " companion two years ago; ſince which time I have " lingered out an unhappy being, in hopes of a ſpeedy " diſſolution, when I promiſe myſelf the eternal reward " of all my cares. In the mean time, (continued ſhe) " I muſt inform you of the character I bear among my " neighbours. My converſation being different from that " of the inhabitants of the village, my recluſe way of life, " my ſkill in curing diſtempers, which I acquired from " books ſince I ſettled here; and, laſtly, my age, have " made the common people look upon me as ſo ..ething " preternatural, and I am actually at this hour believed " to be a witch. The parſon of the pariſh, whoſe ac- " quaintance I have not been at much pains to cultivate, " taking umbrage at my ſuppoſed diſreſpect, has contri- " buted not a little towards the confirmation of this opi- " nion, by dropping certain hints to my prejudice among " the vulgar, who are alſo very much ſcandalized at my " entertaining this poor tabby cat with the collar about " her neck, which was a favourite of my deceaſed com- " panion."

The whole behaviour of this venerable perſon, was ſo primitive, innocent, ſenſible, and humane, that I contracted a filial reſpect for her, and begged her advice with regard to my future conduct, as ſoon as I was in a condition to act for myſelf. She diſſuaded me from a deſign I had formed of travelling to London in hopes of retrieving my cloaths and pay, by returning to my ſhip, which by this time, I read in a news-paper, was ſafely arrived in the River Thames. " Becauſe (ſaid ſhe) you " run the hazard of being treated not only as a deſerter " in quitting the ſloop, but alſo as a mutineer in aſſault- " ing your commanding officer, to the malice of whoſe " revenge you will be moreover expoſed." She then promiſed to recommend me as a ſervant to a ſingle lady of her acquaintance, who lived in the neighbourhood, with her nephew, who was a young fox-hunter of great

fortune, where I might be very happy, provided I could bear with the diſpoſition and manners of my miſtreſs, which was ſomewhat whimſical and particular. But above all things, ſhe counſelled me to conceal my ſtory, the knowledge of which would effectually poiſon my entertainment: for it was a maxim amongſt moſt people of condition, that no gentleman in diſtreſs ought to be admitted into a family, as a domeſtic, leſt he become proud, lazy, and inſolent. I was fain to embrace this humble propoſal, becauſe my affairs were deſperate; and in a few days was hired by this lady, to ſerve in quality of her footman; being repreſented by my hoſteſs, as a young man, who having been ſent to ſea by his relations againſt his inclinations, was ſhipwrecked and robbed, which had encreaſed his diſguſt to that way of life ſo much, that he rather choſe to go to ſervice on ſhore than enter himſelf on board of any other ſhip. Before I took poſſeſſion of my new place, ſhe gave me a ſketch of my miſtreſs's character, that I might know better how to regulate my conduct. "Your lady (ſaid ſhe) is a maiden of forty "years, not ſo remarkable for her beauty as her learn-"ing and taſte, which is famous all over the country. "Indeed ſhe is a perfect female *virtuoſo*, and ſo eager "after the purſuit of knowledge, that ſhe neglects her "perſon even to a degree of ſluttiſhneſs; this negligence, "together with her contempt for the male part of the "creation, gives her nephew no great concern, as by "that means, he will probably keep her fortune, which "is conſiderable, in the family. He therefore permits "her to live in her own way, which is ſomething extra-"ordinary, and gratifies her in all her whimſical de-"Her apartment is at ſome diſtance from the [illegible] "habited parts of the houſe; and conſiſts of a [illegible]-"room, bed-chamber and ſtudy: ſhe keeps a [illegible]-"waiting-woman, and footman of her own, and ſeldom "eats or converſes with any of the family, but her niece, "who is a very lovely creature, and humours her aunt "often to the prejudice of her own health, by ſitting up "with her whole nights together; for your miſtreſs is "too much of a philoſopher to be ſwayed by the cuſtoms "of the world, and never ſleeps or eats as other people

"do.

" do. Among other odd notions, she professes the prin-
" ciples of Rosicrucius, and believes the earth, air, and
" sea are inhabited by invisible beings, with whom it is
" possible for the human species, to entertain correspond-
" ence and intimacy, on the easy condition of living
" chaste. As she hopes one day to be admitted into an
" acquaintance of this kind, she no sooner heard of me
" and my cat, than she paid me a visit, with a view, as
" she has since owned, to be introduced to my familiar;
" and was greatly mortified to find herself disappointed
" in her expectation. Being by this visionary turn of
" mind, abstracted as it were from the world, she can-
" not advert to the common occurrences of life; and
" therefore is frequently so absent as to commit very
" strange mistakes and extravagances, which you will
" do well to rectify and repair, as your prudence will
" suggest."

CHAP. XXXIX.

My reception by that lady—I become enamoured of Narcissa—*recount the particulars of my last misfortune—acquire the good opinion of my mistress—an account of the young 'Squire—I am made acquainted with more particulars of* Narcissa's *situation—conceive a mortal hatred against Sir* Timothy—*I examine my lady's library and performances—her extravagant behaviour.*

FRAUGHT with these useful instructions, I repaired to the place of her habitation, and was introduced by the waiting-woman, to the presence of my lady, who had not before seen me. She sat in her study, with one foot upon the ground, and the other upon a high stool at some distance from her seat; her sandy locks hung down (for her I cannot call beautiful, from her head, which was deprived of its coif, for the benefit of scratching with its own nail, while she held the stump of a pen in the other. Her forehead was high and wrinkled, her eyes large, grey, and prominent; her nose long, sharp, and aquiline; her mouth of vast capacity; her visage meagre

meagre and freckled, and her chin pecked like a shoemaker's paring knife: her upper-lip contained a large quantity of plain Spaniſh, which by continual falling, had embroidered her neck that was not naturally very white, and the breaſt of her gown, that flowed looſe about her with a negligence truly poetic, diſcovering linen that was very fine, and to all appearance *never waſhed but in Caſtalian ſtreams*. Around her lay heaps of books, globes, quadrants, teleſcopes, and other learned apparatus: her ſnuff-box ſtood at her right hand, at her left lay her handkerchief ſufficiently uſed, and a convenience to ſpit in appeared on one ſide of her chair. Being in a reverie when we entered, the maid did not think proper to diſturb her; ſo that we waited ſome minutes unobſerved, during which time, ſhe bit the quill ſeveral times, altered her poſition, made many wry faces, and at length, with an air of triumph, repeated aloud,

"Nor dare th' immortal Gods my rage oppoſe!"

Having committed her ſucceſs to paper, ſhe turned towards the door, and perceiving us, cried, "What's the "matter?"—"Here's the young man (replied my con-"ductreſs) whom Mrs Sagely recommended as a foot-"man to your ladyſhip." On this information ſhe ſtared in my face a conſiderable time, and then aſked my name, which I thought proper to conceal under that of John Brown. After having ſurveyed me with a curious eye, ſhe broke out into, "O! ay, thou waſt ſhipwreck-"ed I remember.—Whether didſt thou come on ſhore "on the back of a whale or dolphin?" To this I anſwered, I had ſwam aſhore without any aſſiſtance. Then ſhe demanded to know if I had ever been at the Helleſpont, and ſwam from Seſtos to Abydos. I replied in the negative; upon which ſhe bid the maid order a ſuit of new livery for me, and inſtruct me in the articles of my duty; ſo ſaying ſhe ſnift in her ſnuff-box and wiped her noſe with her cap which lay on the table, inſtead of a handkerchief. We returned to the kitchen, where I was regaled by the maids, who ſeemed to vie with one another, in expreſſing their regard for me. From them I underſtood, that my buſineſs conſiſted in cleaning ſhoes and

and forks, laying the cloth, waiting at table, carrying meſſages, and attending my lady when ſhe went abroad. There being a very good ſuit of livery in the houſe, which had belonged to my predeceſſor, deceaſed, I dreſſed myſelf in it, and found it fitted me exactly, ſo that there was no occaſion for employing a tailor on that account. I had not been long equipped in this manner, when my lady's bell rung; upon which I ran up ſtairs, and found her ſtalking about the room in her ſhift and under-petticoat only; I would have immediately retired; as became me, but ſhe bid me come in, and air a clean ſhift for her; which having done with ſome backwardneſs, ſhe put it on before me without any ceremony, and I verily believe was ignorant of my ſex all the time, being quite abſorb'd in contemplation. About four o'clock in the afternoon, I was ordered to lay the cloth and place two covers, which I underſtood was for my miſtreſs and her niece, whom I had not as yet ſeen. Though I was not very dexterous at this operation, I performed it pretty well for a beginner, and when dinner was upon the table, ſaw my miſtreſs approach, accompanied by the young lady, whoſe name for the preſent ſhall be Narciſſa. So much ſweetneſs appeared in the countenance and carriage of this amiable apparition, that my heart was captivated at firſt ſight, and while dinner laſted I gazed upon her without intermiſſion. Her age ſeemed to be ſeventeen, her ſtature tall, her ſhape unexceptionable, her hair that fell down upon her ivory neck in ringlets, black as jet; her arched eye brows of the ſame colour; her eyes piercing, yet tender; her lips of the conſiſtence and hue of cherries; her complexion, clear, delicate, and healthy: her aſpect noble, ingenuous and humane; and the whole ſo exquiſitely delightful, that I was quite loſt for any converſation, and ſwam [illegible] without admiring, and [illegible] How often did I curſe [illegible] and how often did I [illegible] enjoy [illegible] joy!

joy! I was even ſo happy as to be the ſubject of their converſation: for Narciſſa having obſerved me, ſaid to her aunt, "I ſee your new footman is come." Then addreſſing herſelf to me, aſked with ineffable complacency, if I was the perſon who had been ſo cruelly uſed by robbers? When I had ſatisfied her in this, ſhe expreſſed a deſire of knowing the particulars of my fortune both before and ſince my being ſhipwrecked: hereupon (as Mrs Sagely had counſelled me) I told her, that I had been bound prentice to the maſter of a ſhip, contrary to my inclination, which ſhip had foundered at ſea; and I and four more, who chanced to be on deck when ſhe went down, made ſhift to ſwim to the ſhore, where my companions, after having overpowered me, ſtript me to the ſhirt, and left me, as they imagined, dead of the wounds I received in my own defence: then I related the circumſtances of my being found in a barn, with the inhuman treatment I met with from the country people and parſon; which I perceived drew tears from the charming creature's eyes! When I had finiſhed my recital, my miſtreſs ſaid, "*Ma foy! le garçon eſt bien fait!*" To which opinion Narciſſa aſſented, with a compliment to my underſtanding in the ſame language, that flattered my vanity extremely.

The converſation among other ſubjects, turned upon the young 'ſquire, whom my lady enquired after under the title of the Savage; and was informed by her niece, that he was ſtill in bed, repairing the fatigue of laſt night's debauch, and recruiting his ſtrength and ſpirits to undergo a fox-chace to-morrow morning, in company with Sir Timothy Thicket, [illegible] Jumper, and a great many other gentlemen of the [illegible] ſtamp, whom he had invited on that occaſion; ſo that by day-break the whole houſe would be in an [illegible]. This was a very diſagreeable piece of news to the *virtuoſa*, who proteſted ſhe would ſtuff her ears with cotton when ſhe went to bed, and take a doſe of opium to make her ſleep the more ſound, that ſhe might not be diſturbed and diſtracted by the clamour of the brutes.

When their dinner was over I and my fellow-ſervants ſat down to ours in the kitchen, where I underſtood that Sir

Sir Timothy Thicket was a wealthy knight in the neighbourhood, between whom and Narciſſa a match had been projected by her brother, who propoſed at the ſame time to eſpouſe Sir Timothy's ſiſter; by which means, as their fortunes were pretty equal, the young ladies would be provided for, and their brothers be never the poorer; but the ladies did not concur in the ſcheme, each of them entertaining a hearty contempt for the perſon allotted to her for a huſband, by this agreement. This information begot in me a mortal averſion to Sir Timothy, whom I looked upon as my rival, and curſed in my heart for his preſumption. Next morning by day-break, being awaked by the noiſe of the hunters and hounds, I got up to view the cavalcade, and had a ſight of my competitor, whoſe accompliſhments (the eſtate excluded) did not ſeem brilliant enough to give me much uneaſineſs with reſpect to Narciſſa, who, I flattered myſelf, was not to be won by ſuch qualifications as he was maſter of, either as to perſon or mind. My miſtreſs, notwithſtanding her precaution, was ſo much diſturbed by her nephew's company, that ſhe did not riſe till five o'clock in the afternoon: ſo that I had an opportunity of examining her ſtudy at leiſure, to which I was ſtrongly prompted by my curioſity. Here I found a thouſand ſcraps of her own poetry, conſiſting of three, four, ten, twelve, and twenty lines on an infinity of ſubjects, which, as whim inſpired, ſhe had begun, without conſtancy or capacity to bring to any degree of compoſition: but what was very extraordinary in a female poet, there was not the leaſt mention made of love in any of her performances. I counted fragments of five tragedies, the titles of which were, "The Stern Philoſopher—The Double Murder—The Sa-"crilegious Traitor—The Fall of Lucifer—And the Laſt "Day." From whence I gathered, that her diſpoſition was gloomy, and her imagination delighted with objects of horror. Her library was compoſed of the beſt Engliſh hiſtorians, poets, and philoſophers; of all the French critics and poets, and of a few books in Italian, chiefly poetry, at the head of which were Taſſo and Arioſto, pretty much uſed. Beſides theſe, tranſlations of the claſſics into French, but not one book in Greek or Latin:

a circumſtance that diſcovered her ignorance of theſe languages. After having taken a full view of this collection, I retired, and at the uſual time was preparing to lay the cloth, when I was told by the maid that her miſtreſs was ſtill in bed, and had been ſo affected with the notes of the hounds in the morning, that ſhe actually believed herſelf a hare beſet with the hunters; and begged a few greens to munch for her breakfaſt. When I teſtified my ſurprize at this unaccountable imagination, ſhe let me know that my lady was very much ſubject to whims of this nature; ſometimes fancying herſelf an animal, ſometimes a piece of furniture, during which conceited transformations, it was very dangerous to come near her, eſpecially when ſhe repreſented a beaſt; for that lately, in the character of a cat, ſhe had flown at her, and ſcratched her face in a terrible manner;—that, ſome months ago, ſhe propheſied the general conflagration was at hand, and nothing would be able to quench it, but her water, which therefore ſhe kept ſo long that her life was in danger; and ſhe muſt needs have died of the retention, had they not found an expedient to make her evacuate, by kindling a bonfire under her chamber window, and perſuading her that the houſe was in flames; upon which, with great deliberation, ſhe bid them bring all the tubs and veſſels they could find, to be filled, for the preſervation of the houſe, into one of which ſhe immediately diſcharged the cauſe of her diſtemper. I was alſo informed, that nothing contributed ſo much to the recovery of her reaſon, as muſic, which was alſo adminiſtred on theſe occaſions by Narciſſa, who played perfectly well on the harpſichord, and to whom ſhe (the maid) was juſt then going to intimate her aunt's diſorder. She was no ſooner gone than I was ſummoned by the bell to my lady's chamber, where I found her ſitting ſpruat on her hams, on the floor, in the manner of puſs when ſhe liſtens to the cries of her purſuers. When I appeared, ſhe ſtarted up with an alarmed look, and ſprang to the other ſide of the room to avoid me, whom, without doubt, ſhe miſtook for a beagle thirſting after her life. Perceiving her extreme confuſion, I retired, and on the ſtair-caſe met the adorable Narciſſa coming up, to whom I imparted the ſituation

of

of my miſtreſs: ſhe ſaid not a word, but ſmiling with unſpeakable grace, went into her aunt's apartment, and in a little time my ears were ravithed with the effects of her ſkill. She accompanied the inſtrument with a voice ſo ſweet and melodious, that I did not wonder at the ſurpriſing change it produced on the ſpirits of my miſtreſs, which were ſoon compoſed to peace and ſober reflection.

About ſeven o'clock the hunters arrived, with the ſkins of two foxes and one badger, carried before them as trophies of their ſucceſs; and when they were about to ſit down to dinner (or ſupper) Sir Timothy Thicket deſired that Narciſſa would honour the table with her preſence: but this, notwithſtanding her brother's threats and intreaties, ſhe refuſed, on pretence of attending on her aunt, who was indiſpoſed; ſo that I enjoyed the ſatisfaction of ſeeing my rival mortified: but this diſappointment made no great impreſſion on him, who conſoled himſelf with the bottle, of which the whole company became ſo much enamoured, that after a moſt horrid uproar of laughing, ſinging, ſwearing, dancing, and fighting, they were all carried to bed in a ſtate of utter oblivion. My duty being altogether detached from the 'ſquire and his family, I led a pretty eaſy and comfortable life, drinking daily intoxicating draughts of love from the charms of Narciſſa, which brightened on my contemplation every day more and more. Inglorious as my ſtation was, I became blind to my own unworthineſs, and even conceived hopes of, one day, enjoying this amiable creature, whoſe affability greatly encouraged theſe preſumptuous thoughts.

CHAP. XL.

She is surpriſed at my learning—communicates her performances to me—I impart ſome of mine to her—am mortified at her faint praiſe—Narciſſa approves of my production—I gain an involuntary conqueſt over the cook-wench and dairy-maid—their mutual reſentment and inſinuations—the jealouſy of their lovers.

DURING this ſeaſon of love and tranquillity, my muſe, which had lain dormant ſo long, awoke, and produced ſeveral ſmall performances on the ſubject of my flame: but as it concerned me nearly to remain undiſcovered in my real character and ſentiments, I was under a neceſſity of mortifying my deſire of praiſe, by confining my works to my own peruſal and applauſe. In the mean time I ſtrove to inſinuate myſelf into the good opinion of both ladies; and ſucceeded ſo well, by my diligence and dutiful behaviour, that in a little time I was at leaſt a favourite ſervant; and frequently enjoyed the pleaſure of hearing myſelf mentioned in French and Italian, with ſome degree of warmth and ſurpriſe, by the deareſt object of all my wiſhes, as a perſon who had ſo much of the gentleman in my appearance and diſcourſe, that ſhe could not for her ſoul treat me like a common lacquey. My prudence and modeſty were not long proof againſt theſe bewitching compliments. One day, while I waited at dinner, the converſation turned upon a knotty paſſage of Taſſo's Gieruſalem, which it ſeems had puzzled them both. After a great many unſatisfactory conjectures, my miſtreſs, taking the book out of her pocket, turned up the place in queſtion, and read the ſentence over and over without ſucceſs; at length, deſpairing of finding the author's meaning, ſhe turned to me ſaying, "Come hither, Bruno, let us ſee what fortune will do "for us; I will interpret to thee what goes before and "what follows in this obſcure paragraph, the particular "words of which I will alſo explain, that thou may'ſt, "by comparing one with the other, gueſs the ſenſe of "that which perplexes us." I was too vain to let ſlip this

this opportunity of displaying my talents; therefore, without hesitation, read and explained the whole of that which had disconcerted them, to the utter astonishment of both. Narcissa's face and lovely neck were over-spread with blushes, from whence I drew a favourable omen, while her aunt, after having stared at me a good while with a look of amazement, exclaimed, "In the name of Heaven, "who art thou?"—I told her I had picked up a smattering of Italian during a voyage up the Straits. At this she shook her head, and observed that no smatterer could read as I had done. She then desired to know if I understood French, to which I answered in the affirmative: She asked if I was acquainted with the Latin and Greek: I replied, "A little."—"Oho!" continued she, "and with philosophy and mathematicks, I suppose?"—I owned, I knew something of each—Whereupon she repeated her stare and interrogation. I began to repent my vanity, and, in order to repair the fault I had committed, said, it was not to be wondered at if I had a tolerable education, because learning was so cheap in my country, that every peasant was a scholar; but I hoped her ladyship would think my understanding no exception to my character. She was pleased to answer, "No, no, God for-"bid." But during the rest of the time they sat at table, they behaved with remarkable reserve.

This alteration gave me much uneasiness: and I passed the night without sleep, in melancholy reflections on the vanity of young men, which prompts them to commit so many foolish actions, contrary to their own sober judgement. Next day, however, instead of profiting by this self-condemnation, I yielded still more to the dictates of the principle I had endeavoured to chastise, and if fortune had not befriended me more than prudence could expect, I should have been treated with the contempt I deserved. After breakfast, my lady, who was a true author, bid me follow her into the study, where she expressed herself thus: "Since you are so learned, you cannot "be void of taste; therefore I am to desire your opi-"nion of a small performance in poetry, which I lately "composed. You must know, I have planned a tragedy, the subject of which shall be the murder of a prince "at one

" before the altar, where he is buſy at his devotions.
" After the deed is perpetrated, the regicide will ha-
" rangue the people, with the bloody dagger in his hand;
" and I have already compoſed a ſpeech, which I think
" will ſuit the character extremely.—Here it is." Then taking up a ſcrap of paper, ſhe read with violent empha-ſis and geſture, as follows:

" Thus have I ſent the ſimple king to hell,
" Without or coffin, ſhroud, or paſſing-bell:
" To me, what are divine and human laws?
" I court no ſanction but my own applauſe!
" Rapes, robb'ries, treaſon, yield my ſoul delight!
" And human carnage gratifies my ſight.
" I drag the parent by the hoary hair,
" And toſs the ſprawling infant on my ſpear,
" While the fond mother's cries regale mine ear.
" I fight, I vanquiſh, murder friends and foes;
" Nor dare the immortal gods my rage oppoſe."

Though I did great violence to my underſtanding in praiſing this unnatural rhapſody, I nevertheleſs extolled it as a production that of itſelf deſerved immortal fame; and beſeeched her ladyſhip to bleſs the world with the fruits of thoſe uncommon talents Heaven had beſtowed upon her. She ſmiled with a look of ſelf-complacency, and, encouraged by the incenſe I had offered, communicated all her poetical works, which I applauded one by one, with as little candour as I had ſhewn at firſt. Satiated with my flattery, which I hope my ſituation juſtified, ſhe could not in conſcience refuſe me an opportunity of ſhining in my turn; and therefore, after a compliment to my nice diſcernment and taſte, obſerved that doubtleſs I muſt have produced ſomething in that way myſelf, which ſhe deſired to ſee. This was a temptation I could by no means reſiſt. I owned, that while I was at college I wrote ſome ſmall detached pieces, at the deſire of a friend who was in love; and at her requeſt, repeated the following verſes, which indeed my love for Narciſſa had inſpired:

On

On Celia *playing on the harpſichord and ſinging.*

I.

When Sappho ſtruck the quiv'ring wire,
The throbbing breaſt was all on fire:
And when ſhe rais'd the vocal lay,
The captive ſoul was charm'd away!

II.

But had the nymph poſſeſs'd with theſe,
Thy ſofter, chaſter pow'r to pleaſe;
Thy beauteous air of ſprightly youth;
Thy native ſmiles of artleſs truth;

III.

The worm of grief had never prey'd
On the forſaken love-ſick maid;
Nor had ſhe mourn'd an hapleſs flame,
Nor daſh'd on rocks her tender frame.

My miſtreſs made me a cold compliment on the verſification, which, ſhe ſaid, was elegant enough, but the ſubject beneath the pen of a true poet. I was extremely nettled at her indifference, and looked at Narciſſa, who by this time had joined us, for her approbation, but ſhe declined giving her opinion, proteſting ſhe was no judge of theſe matters: ſo that I was forced to retire, very much baffled in my expectation, which was generally a little to ſingular. In the afternoon, however, the waiting-maid [illegible] that Narciſſa had extolled her approbation of my [illegible] much, and deſired her to procure a [illegible], that ſhe (Narciſſa) might have an opportunity to peruſe it at leiſure. I was [illegible] with this intelligence, and immediately tranſcribed a copy of my ode, which was carried [illegible] together with another on the [illegible]

Thy

I.

Thy fatal ſhafts unerring move,
I bow before thine altar, love!
I feel thy ſoft, reſiſtleſs flame
Glide ſwift through all my vital frame!

II.

For while I gaze my boſom glows,
My blood in tides impetuous flows,
Hope, fear, and joy, alternate roll,
And floods of tranſport 'whelm my ſoul!

III.

My faultering tongue attempts in vain
In ſoothing murmurs to complain;
My tongue ſome ſecret magic ties,
My murmurs ſink in broken ſighs!

IV.

Condemn'd to nurſe eternal care,
And ever drop the ſilent tear,
Unheard I mourn, unknown I ſigh,
Unfriended live, unpitied die!

Whether or not Narciſſa diſcovered my paſſion, I could not learn from her behaviour, which, though always benevolent to me, was henceforth more reſerved and leſs chearful. While my thoughts aſpired to a ſphere ſo far above me, I had unwittingly made a conqueſt of the cook-wench and the dairy-maid, who became ſo jealous of one another, that if their ſentiments had been refined by education, it is probable one or other of them would have had recourſe to poiſon or ſteel, to be revenged of her rival; but as their minds were happily adapted to their humble ſtation, their mutual enmity was confined to ſcolding and fifty-cuffs, in which exerciſe they were both well ſkilled. My good fortune did not long remain a ſecret, being diſcloſed by the frequent broils of the fair ſparrers, who kept no decorum in their encounters. The coachman and gardener, who paid their devoirs to

my

my admirers, each to his reſpective choice, alarmed at my ſucceſs, laid their heads together, in order to concert a plan of revenge: and the former having been educated at the academy of Tottenham court, undertook to challenge me to ſingle combat: he accordingly, with many opprobrious invectives, bid me defiance, and offered to box with me for twenty guineas. I told him, that although I believed myſelf a match for him, even at that work, I would not deſcend ſo far below the dignity of a gentleman, as to fight like a porter; but if he had any thing to ſay to me, I was his man at blunderbuſs, muſket, piſtol, ſword, hatchet, ſpit, cleaver, fork or needle; —nay more, that if he gave his tongue any more ſaucy liberties at my expence, I would crop his ears without any ceremony. This rhodomontade, deliver'd with a ſtern countenance and reſolute tone, had the deſired effect upon my antagoniſt, who with ſome confuſion, ſneaked off, and gave his friend an account of his reception. The ſtory taking air among the ſervants, procured for me the title of Gentleman John, with which I was ſometimes honour'd, even by my miſtreſs and Narciſſa, who had been informed of the whole affair by the chamber-maid. In the mean-time, the rival queens expreſſed their paſſion by all the ways in their power: the cook entertained me with choice bits, the dairy maid with ſtroakings; the firſt would often encourage me to declare myſelf, by complimenting me upon my courage and learning, and obſerving, that if ſhe had a huſband like me, to maintain order and keep accounts, ſhe could make a great deal of money by ſetting up an eating-houſe at London, for gentlemen's ſervants on board wages. The other courted my affection, by ſhewing her own importance, and telling me, that many a ſubſtantial farmer in the neighbourhood would be glad to marry her; but ſhe was reſolved to plague her eye, if ſhe ſhould plague her heart. Then ſhe would launch out into the praiſe of my proper perſon, and ſay, ſhe was ſure I would make a good huſband, for I was very good natured. I began to be uneaſy at the importunities of theſe inamoratas, whom at another time, perhaps, I might have pleaſed, without the diſagreeable fatigue of mentioning it; but at preſent, my whole ſoul was

engroſſed by Narciſſa, and I could not bear the thoughts of doing any thing derogatory of the paſſion I entertained for her.

CHAP. XLI.

Narciſſa *being in danger from the brutality of* Sir Timothy, *is reſcued by me, who revenge myſelf on my rival—I declare my paſſion, and retreat to the ſea ſide—I am ſurrounded by ſmugglers, and carried to* Bulloign—*I find my uncle lieutenant* Bowling, *in great diſtreſs, and relieve him—our converſation.*

AT certain intervals, my ambition would revive; I would deſpiſe myſelf for my tame reſignation to my ſordid fate, and revolve an hundred ſchemes for aſſuming the character of a gentleman, to which I was entitled by birth and education. In theſe fruitleſs ſuggeſtions, time ſtole away unperceived, and I had already remained eight months in the ſtation of a footman, when an accident happened, that put an end to my ſervitude, and, for the preſent, baniſhed all hopes of ſucceeding in my love.

Narciſſa went one day to viſit Miſs Thicket, who lived with her brother, within leſs than a mile of our houſe, and was perſuaded to walk home in the cool of the evening, accompanied by Sir Timothy, who having a good deal of the brute in him, was inſtigated to uſe ſome unbecoming familiarities with her, encouraged by the ſolitarineſs of a field through which they paſſed.—The lovely creature was incenſed at his rude behaviour, for which ſhe reproached him in ſuch manner, that he loſt all regard to decency, and actually offered violence to this pattern of innocence and beauty.—But Heaven would not ſuffer ſo much goodneſs to be violated; and Jenny, who paſſing by accident near the place, was alarmed with her cries, to her ſuccour. What were the emotions of my ſoul, when I beheld Narciſſa, almoſt ſinking beneath the brutal force of this ſatyr! I flew like lightning to her relief, which

which he perceiving, quitted his prey, and drew his hanger to chaſtiſe my preſumption. My indignation was too high to admit one thought of fear, ſo that ruſhing upon him, I ſtruck his weapon out of his hand, and uſed my cudgel ſo ſucceſsfully, that he fell to the ground, and lay to all appearance, without ſenſe. Then I turned to Narciſſa, who had ſwooned, and ſitting down by her gently raiſed her head, and ſupported it on my boſom, while with one hand around her waiſt, I kept her in that poſition. My ſoul was thrilled with tumultuous joy, at feeling the object of my deareſt wiſhes within my arms; and while ſhe lay inſenſible, I could not refrain from applying my cheek to her's, and raviſhing a kiſs. In a little time the blood began to reviſit her face, ſhe opened her enchanting eyes, and having recollected her late ſituation, ſaid, with a look full of tender acknowledgment, "Dear John, I am entirely obliged to you!" So ſaying, ſhe made an effort to riſe, in which I aſſiſted her, and ſhe proceeded to the houſe, leaning upon me all the way. I was a thouſand times tempted by this opportunity to declare my paſſion, but the dread of diſoblıging her reſtrained my tongue. We had not got an hundred paces from the ſcene of her diſtreſs, when I perceived Sir Timothy get up and move homeward; a circumſtance which, though it gave me ſome ſatisfaction, in as much as I thereby knew I had not killed him, filled me with juſt apprehenſion of his reſentment, which I found myſelf in no condition to withſtand; eſpecially when I conſidered his intimacy with our 'ſquire, to whom I knew he would eaſily juſtify himſelf for what he had done, by imputing it to his love, and deſiring his brother Bruin to take the ſame liberty with his niece, without any fear of offence. When we arrived at the houſe, Narciſſa aſſured me ſhe would exert all her influence in protecting me from the revenge of Timothy, and likewiſe engage her aunt in my intereſt. As the ſame time paſſing out our party, created in a tranſient conſideration for the ſervice I had done them. But I ſtood too much upon the punctilio of honour to entertain the leaſt ſuſpicion of being miſtreated, and reſolved the preſent, ſaying, I had merited nothing by barely doing my duty. She

ſeemed aſtoniſhed at my diſintereſtedneſs, and bluſhed; I felt the ſame ſuffuſion, and with a downcaſt eye and broken accent, told her I had one requeſt to make, which if her generoſity would grant, I would think myſelf fully recompenſed for an age of miſery. She changed colour at this preamble, and with great confuſion replied, ſhe hoped my good ſenſe would hinder me from aſking any thing ſhe was bound in honour to refuſe, and therefore bid me ſignify my deſire. Upon which I kneeled, and begged to kiſs her hand. She immediately, with an averted look, ſtretched it out; I imprinted on it an ardent kiſs, and bathing it with my tears, cried, "Dear Ma-"dam, I am an unfortunate gentleman, who loves you "to diſtraction, but would have died a thouſand deaths, "rather than make this declaration under ſuch a ſervile "appearance, were he not determined to yield to the ri-"gour of his fate, to fly from your bewitching preſence, "and bury his preſumptuous paſſion in eternal ſilence." With theſe words I roſe and went away, before ſhe could recover ſpirits ſo far as to make any reply. My firſt care was to go and conſult Mrs Sagely, with whom I had maintained a friendly correſpondence ever ſince I left her houſe. When ſhe underſtood my ſituation, the good woman, with real concern, condoled me on my unhappy fate, and approved of my reſolution to leave the country, being perfectly well acquainted with the barbarous diſpoſition of my rival, "who by this time (ſaid ſhe) has no "doubt meditated a ſcheme of revenge. Indeed I can-"not ſee how you will be able to elude his vengeance; "being himſelf in the commiſſion, he will immediately "grant warrants for apprending you; and as almoſt all "the people in this country are dependent on him or "his friend, it will be impoſſible for you to find ſhelter "among them: if you be apprehended, he will commit "you to jail, where you may poſſibly languiſh in great "miſery till the next aſſizes, and then be tranſported for "aſſaulting a magiſtrate." While ſhe thus warned me of my danger, we heard a knocking at the door, which threw us both into great conſternation, as in all probability it was occaſioned by my purſuers; whereupon this generous old lady, putting two guineas into my hand,

with

with tears in her eyes, bid me for God's ſake get out at the back door, and conſult my ſafety as providence ſhould direct me. There was no time for deliberation.

I followed her advice, and eſcaped by the benefit of a dark night, to the ſea-ſide, where, while I ruminated on my next excurſion, I was all of a ſudden ſurrounded by armed men, who, having bound my hands and feet, bid me make no noiſe on pain of being ſhot, and carried me on board of a veſſel, which I ſoon perceived to be a ſmuggling cutter. This diſcovery gave me ſome ſatisfaction at firſt, becauſe I concluded myſelf ſafe from the reſentment of Sir Timothy: But when I found myſelf in the hands of ruffians, who threatened to execute me for a ſpy, I would have thought myſelf happily quit for a year's impriſonment, or even tranſportation. It was in vain for me to proteſt my innocence: I could not perſuade them that I had taken a ſolitary walk to their haunt, at ſuch an hour merely for my own amuſement; and I did not think it my intereſt to diſcloſe the true cauſe of my retreat, becauſe I was afraid they would have made their peace with juſtice by ſurrendering me to the penalty of the law. What confirmed their ſuſpicion was, the appearance of a cuſtom-houſe yacht, which gave them chace, and had well nigh made a prize of the veſſel; when they were delivered from their fears by a thick fog, which actually favoured them, and favoured their arrival at Dunkirk. But before they got out of ſight of their purſuer, they held a council of war about me, whom ſome of the moſt ferocious among them, would have thrown overboard, as a traitor who had betrayed them to their enemies; but others, more conſiderate, alledged that if they put me to death and ſhould afterwards be taken, they could expect no mercy from the legiſlature, which would never pardon outlawry aggravated by murder. It was therefore determined by a plurality of votes, that I ſhould be ſet on ſhore in France, and left to find my paſſage back to England as I ſhould think proper, which would be puniſhment ſufficient for the tranſgreſſion of a crime in itſelf not capital. Although this favourable determination gave me great pleaſure, my apprehenſion of being robbed would not ſuffer me

to be perfectly at eaſe. To prevent this calamity, as ſoon as I was untied in conſequence of the aforeſaid deciſion, I tore a ſmall hole in one of my ſtockings, into which I dropped ſix guineas, reſerving half a piece and ſome ſilver in my pocket, that finding ſomething, they might not be tempted to make any further inquiry. This was a very neceſſary precaution, for when we came within ſight of the French ſhore, one of the ſmugglers told me, I muſt pay for my paſſage. To this I replied, that my paſſage was none of my own ſeeking; therefore they could not expect a reward from me for tranſporting me into a ſtrange country by force.—"Damme! (ſaid the outlaw) "none of your palaver; but let me ſee what money you "have got." So ſaying, he thruſt his hand into my pocket without any ceremony, and emptied it of the contents: then caſting an eye at my hat and wig, which captivated his fancy, he took them off, and clapping his own on my head, declared that a fair exchange was no robbery. I was fain to put up with the bargain, which was by no means favourable to me; and a little while after we went all on ſhore together.

I was reſolved to take my leave of theſe deſperadoes, without much ceremony, when one of them cautioned me againſt appearing to their prejudice, if ever I returned to England, unleſs I had a mind to be murdered, for which ſervice, he aſſured me, the gang never wanted agents. I promiſed to obſerve his advice, and departed for the Upper Town, where I inquired for a cabaret, or public houſe, into which I went with an intention of taking ſome refreſhment. In the kitchen, five Dutch ſailors ſat at breakfaſt, with a large loaf, a firkin of butter, and a cag of brandy on the table, the bung of which they often applied to their mouths with great perſeverance and ſatisfaction. At ſome diſtance from them I perceived another perſon in the ſame room, ſitting in a penſive, ſolitary manner, entertaining himſelf with a whiff of tobacco, from the ſtump of a pipe as black as jet. This appearance of Marco never failed to attract my regard and compaſſion; I approached this forlorn tar, with a view to offer him my aſſiſtance, and notwithſtanding the alteration of dreſs, and diſguiſe of a long beard, I diſ-

covered in him my long loſt and lamented uncle and benefactor lieutenant Bowling! Good Heaven! what were the agitations of my ſoul, between the joy of finding again ſuch a valuable friend, and the ſorrow of ſeeing him in ſuch low condition! the tears guſhed down my cheeks, I ſtood motionleſs and ſilent for ſome time; at length, recovering the uſe of ſpeech, exclaimed, "Gracious God! Mr "Bowling!"—My uncle no ſooner heard his name mentioned than he ſtarted up, crying with ſome ſurpriſe, "Hollo!" and after having looked at me ſtedfaſtly, without being able to recollect me, ſaid, "Did you call "me, brother?" I told him I had ſomething extraordinary to communicate, and deſired him to give me a few minutes hearing in another room; but he would by no means conſent to this propoſal, ſaying, "Avaſt there, "friend; none of your tricks upon travellers;—if you "have any thing to ſay to me, do it above-board; you "need not be afraid of being overheard; here are "none who underſtand our lingo."—Though I was loth to diſcover myſelf before company, I could no longer refrain telling, I was his own nephew Roderick Random. On this information, he conſidered me with great earneſtneſs and aſtoniſhment, and recalling my features, which though enlarged, were not entirely altered ſince he had ſeen me, came up and ſhook me by the hand very cordially, proteſting he was glad to ſee me well. After ſome pauſe, he went on thus; "And yet, my lad, I am ſorry to ſee "you under ſuch colours; the more ſo, as it is not in "my power, at preſent, to change them for the better, "times being very hard with me."—With theſe words I could perceive a tear trickle down his furrowed cheeks, which affected me ſo much that I wept bitterly. Imagining my ſorrow was the effect of my misfortunes, he comforted me, by obſerving that life was a voyage in which we muſt expect to meet with all weathers; ſometimes it was calm, ſometimes rough; that a fair gale often ſucceeded a ſtorm; that the wind did not always ſit one way, and that deſpair ſignified nothing: but reſolution and truſt were better than a ſtout veſſel: For why? Becauſe they require no carpenter, and grow ſtronger the more labour they undergo. I wiped my tears, which I endeavoured

I aſſured him were not ſhed for my own diſtreſs but for his, and begged leave to accompany him into another room, where we could converſe more at our eaſe. There I recounted to him the ungenerous uſage I had met with from Potion; at which he ſtarted up, ſtalked acroſs the room three or four times, in a great hurry, and graſping his cudgel, cried, "I would I were along-ſide of him!—"that's all.—I would I were along-ſide of him!"—I then gave him a detail of all my adventures and ſufferings, which affected him more than I could have imagined; and concluded with telling him that captain Oakham was ſtill alive, and that he might return to England when he would, to ſolicit his affairs, without danger or moleſtation. He was wonderfully pleaſed at this piece of information, of which, however, he ſaid he could not at preſent avail himſelf, for want of money to pay for his paſſage to London. This objection I ſoon removed, by putting five guineas into his hand, and telling him I thought myſelf extremely happy in having an opportunity of manifeſting my gratitude to him in this neceſſity. But it was with the utmoſt difficulty I could prevail on him to accept of two, which he affirmed were more than ſufficient to pay the neceſſary expence. After this friendly conteſt was over, he propoſed we ſhould have a meſs of ſomething; "for "(ſaid he) it has been bannian day with me a great while. "—You muſt know I was ſhipwrecked five days ago, "near a place called Luſieux, in company with thoſe "Dutchmen who are now drinking below; and having "but little money when I came a-ſhore, it was ſoon "ſpent, becauſe I let them have ſhare and ſhare while it "laſted. Howſomever, I ſhould have remembered the "old ſaying, *Every hog his own apple:* for when they "found my hold unſtowed, they went all hands to ſhoot-"ing and begging; and becauſe I would not take a ſpell "at the ſame duty, refuſed to give me the leaſt aſſiſt-"ance, ſo that I have not broke bread theſe two days."—I was ſhocked at the extremity of this diſtreſs, and ordered ſome bread cheeſe and wine to be brought immediately, to allay his hunger, until a fricaſſee of chickens could be prepared. When he had recruited his ſpirits with this homely fare, I deſired to know the particu-

cullars of his pregrination, ſince the accident at Cape Tiberoon: which were briefly, theſe: the money he had about him being all ſpent at Port Louis, the civility and hoſpitality of the French cooled to ſuch a degree, that he was obliged to lift on board of one of their king's ſhips, as a common foremaſt-man, to prevent himſelf from ſtarving on ſhore. In this ſituation he continued two years, during which time he had acquired ſome knowledge of their language, and the reputation of a good ſeaman: the ſhip he belonged to was ordered home to old France, where ſhe was laid up as unfit for ſervice, and he was received on board one of Monſieur d'Antin's ſquadron, in quality of quarter-maſter; which office he performed in a voyage to the Weſt-Indies, where they engaged with our ſhip as before related; but his conſcience upbraiding him for ſerving the enemies of his country, he quitted the ſhip at the ſame place where he firſt lifted, and got to Curaſoa in a Dutch veſſel; there he bargained with another ſkipper, bound to Europe, to work for his paſſage to Holland, from whence he was in hopes of hearing from his friends in England; but was caſt away, as he mentioned before, on the French coaſt, and muſt have been reduced to the neceſſity of travelling on foot to Holland, and begging for his ſubſiſtence on the road, or of entering on board of another French man of war, at the hazard of being treated as a deſerter, if Providence had not ſent me to his ſuccour.—"And now, my lad, (continued "he) I think I ſhall ſteer my courſe directly to London, "where I do not doubt of being replaced, and of having "the R taken off me by the lords of the admiralty, to whom "I intend writing a petition ſetting forth my caſe. If I "ſucceed, I will have wherewithal to give you ſome aſ-"ſiſtance, becauſe when I left the ſhip I had two years "pay due to me; therefore I deſire to know whither "you are bound; and beſides, perhaps I may have in-"tereſt enough to procure a warrant appointing you ſur-"geon's mate of the ſhip to which I ſhall belong. For the "beagle of the admiralty is my good friend; and he and "one of the under-clerks are ſworn brother, and that "under-clerk has a great deal to ſay with one of the up-"per clerks, who is very well known to the under-ſecre-

" tary; who, upon his recommendation, I hope will " recommend my affair to the firſt ſecretary; and " he again will ſpeak to one of the Lords in my be- " half; ſo that you ſee I do not want friends to aſ- " ſiſt me on occaſion. As for the fellow, Crampley, " tho'f I know him not, I am ſure he is neither ſea-man " nor officer, by what you have told me, or elſe he could " never be ſo much miſtaken in his reckoning, as to run " the ſhip aſhore on the coaſt of Suſſex, before he be- " lieved himſelf in ſoundings; neither, when that acci- " dent happened, would he have left the ſhip until ſhe " had been ſtove to pieces, eſpecially when the tide was " making; wherefore by this time I do ſuppoſe he has " been tried by a court-martial, and executed for his " cowardice and miſconduct"—I could not help ſmiling at the deſcription of my uncle's ladder, by which he propoſed to climb to the attention of the board of admiralty; and though I knew the world too well, to conſide in ſuch dependence myſelf, I would not diſcourage him with doubts; but aſked if he had no friend in London, who would advance a ſmall ſum of money to enable him to appear as he thought, and make a tender preſent to the under ſecretary, who might poſſibly diſpatch his buſineſs the ſooner on that account? He ſcratched his head, and after ſome recollection replied, " Why, yes, I believe Daniel " Whipcord the ſhip chandler in Wapping would not re- " fuſe me ſuch a ſmall matter—I know I can have what " credit I would, for lodging, liquor, and cloaths; but as " to money, I won't be poſitive—Had honeſt Block been " living, I ſhould not have been at a loſs."—I was heartily ſorry to find a worthy man ſo deſtitute of friends when he had ſuch need of them; and looked upon my own ſituation as leſs miſerable than his, becauſe I was better acquainted with the ſelfiſhneſs and roguery of mankind; conſequently leſs liable to diſappointment and impoſition.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLII.

He takes his paſſage in a cutter for Deal—*we are accoſted by a prieſt, who proves to be a* Scotchman—*his profeſſions of friendſhip—he is affronted by the lieutenant, who afterwards appeaſes him by ſubmiſſion—my uncle embarks—I am introduced by the prieſt to a capuchin, in whoſe company I ſet out for* Paris—*the character of my fellow traveller—an adventure on the road—I am ſhocked at his behaviour.*

WHEN our repaſt was ended, we walked down to the harbour, where we found a cutter that was to ſail for Deal in the evening, and Mr Bowling agreed for his paſſage: In the mean time we ſauntered about the town, to ſatisfy our curioſity, our converſation turning on the ſubject of my deſigns, which were not as yet fixed: neither can it be ſuppoſed that my mind was at eaſe, when I found myſelf reduced almoſt to extreme poverty, in the midſt of foreigners, among whom I had not one acquaintance to adviſe or befriend me. My uncle was ſenſible of my forlorn condition, and preſſed me to accompany him to England, where he did not doubt of finding ſome ſort of proviſion for me: but beſides the other reaſons I had for avoiding that kingdom, I looked upon it, at this time, as the worſt country in the univerſe for a poor honeſt man to live in; and therefore determined to remain in France, *coute que coute*. I was confirmed in this reſolution, by a reverend prieſt, who, paſſing by at this time, and overhearing us ſpeak Engliſh, accoſted us in the ſame language, telling us he was our countryman, and wiſhing it might be in his power to do us any ſervice. We thanked this grave perſon for his courteous offer, and invited him to drink a glaſs with us, which he did not think proper to refuſe, and we went altogether into a tavern of his recommending. After having drank to our healths in a bumper of good Burgundy, he began to inquire into our ſituation, and aſked particularly the place of our nativity, which we no ſooner named, than he ſtarted up, and wringing our hands with great fervour, ſhed a flood of tears, crying, "I came from the ſame part of the "country! perhaps you are my own relations."—I was

on my guard againſt his careſſes, which I ſuſpected very much, when I remembred the adventure of the money-dropper; but without any appearance of diffidence, obſerved, that as he was born in that part of the country, he muſt certainly know our families, which (howſoever mean our preſent appearance might be) were none of the moſt obſcure and inconſiderable. Then I diſcovered our names, to which I found he was no ſtranger; he had known my grandfather perſonally; and notwithſtanding an abſence of fifty years from Scotland, recounted ſo many particulars of the families in the neighbourhood, that my ſcruples were entirely removed, and I thought myſelf happy in his acquaintance. In the courſe of our converſation, I diſcloſed my condition without reſerve, and diſplayed my talents to ſuch advantage, that the old father looked upon me with admiration, and aſſured me, that if I ſtayed in France and liſtened to reaſon, I could not fail of making my fortune, to which he would contribute all in his power.

My uncle began to be jealous of the prieſt's inſinuation, and very abruptly declared, that if ever I ſhould renounce my religion, he would break off all connection and correſpondence with me; for it was his opinion that no honeſt man could ſwerve from the principles in which he was bred, whether Turkiſh, Proteſtant, or Roman. The father affronted at this declaration, with great vehemence, began a long diſcourſe, ſetting forth the danger of obſtinacy, and ſhutting one's eyes againſt the light: he ſaid, that ignorance would be no plea towards juſtification, when he had opportunities of being better informed; and that if the minds of the people had not been opened to conviction, the Chriſtian religion would not have been propagated in the world; and we ſhould now be in a ſtate of Pagan darkneſs and barbarity. He endeavoured to prove, by ſome texts of Scripture, and many quotations from the fathers, that the Pope was the ſucceſſor of St Peter, and vicar of Jeſus Chriſt: that the church of Rome was the true, holy, Catholic church; and that the Proteſtant faith was an impious hereſy, and damnable ſchiſm, by which many millions of ſouls would ſuffer everlaſting perdition. When he had finiſhed his ſermon, which

which I thought he pronounced with more zeal than discretion, he addressed himself to my uncle, and desired to know his objections to what had been said. The lieutenant, whose attention had been wholly engrossed by his own affairs, took the pipe out of his mouth and replied, "As for me, friend, d'ye see, I have no objection to "what you say, it may be either true or false, for what "I know; I meddle with nobody's affairs but my own; "the gunner to his linstock, and the steersman to his "helm, as the saying is—I trust to no creed but the "compass, and do unto every man as I would be done "by; so that I defy the pope, the devil, and the pretender; and hope to be saved as well as another."—This association of persons gave great offence to the friar, who protested in a mighty passion, that if Mr Bowling had not been his countryman, he would have caused him to be imprisoned for his insolence—I ventured to disapprove of my uncle's rashness, and appeased the old gentleman, by assuring him, there was no offence intended by my kinsman, who by this time, sensible of his error, shook the injured party by the hand, and asked pardon for the freedom he had taken. Matters being amicably compromised, he invited us to come and see him in the afternoon at the convent to which he belonged, and took his leave for the present; when my uncle recommended it strongly to me to persevere in the religion of my forefathers, whatever advantages I might propose to myself by a change, which could not fail of disgracing myself, and dishonouring my family. I assured him no consideration should induce me to forfeit his friendship and good opinion, on that score; at which he discovered great satisfaction, and put me in mind of dinner, which we immediately bespoke, and when it was ready eat together.

I imagined my acquaintance with the Scotch Friar, if properly managed, might turn out to my advantage, and therefore resolved to cultivate it as much as I could. With this view we visited him at his convent, according to his invitation, where he treated us with wine and sweetmeats, and shewed us every thing that was remarkable in the monastery. Having been thus entertained, we took our leave, though not before I had promised to be

him next day; and the time fixed for my uncle's embarking being come, I accompanied him to the harbour, and saw him on board. We parted not without tears, after we had embraced and wished one another all manner of prosperity; and he intreated me to write to him often, directing to lieutenant Thomas Bowling at the sign of the union flag, near the Hermitage, London.

I returned to the house in which we had met, where I passed the night in a very solitary manner, reflecting on the severity of my fate, and endeavouring to project some likely scheme of life for the future; but my invention failed me, I saw nothing but insurmountable difficulties in my way, and was ready to despair at the miserable prospect! That I might not, however, neglect any probable means, I got up in the morning, and went directly to the father, whose advice and assistance I implored. He received me very kindly, and gave me to understand, that there was one way of life in which a person of my talents could not fail of making a figure. I guessed his meaning, and told him once for all, I was fully determined against any alteration in point of religion, therefore if his proposal regarded the church, he might save himself the trouble of explaining it. He shook his head and sighed, saying, "Ah! son, son, what a glorious prospect "is here spoiled by your stubborn prejudice! Suffer "yourself to be persuaded by reason, and consult your "temporal welfare, as well as the concerns of your im-"mortal soul. I can, by my interest, procure your ad-"mission as a noviciate into this convent, where I will "superintend and direct you with a truly paternal affec-"tion." Then he launched out into the praises of a monastic life, which no noise disturbs, no cares molest, and no danger invades—where the heart is weaned from carnal attachments, the grosser appetites subdued and chastised, and the soul wafted to the divine regions of philosophy and truth, on the wings of studious contemplation. But his eloquence was lost upon me, whom two considerations enabled to withstand his temptations: namely, my promise to my uncle, and my aversion to an ecclesiastical life; for as to the difference of religion, I looked upon it as a thing of too small moment to come into competi-

competition with a man's fortune. Finding me immoveable on this head, he told me, he was more ſorry than offended at my non-compliance, and ſtill ready to employ his good offices in my behalf. "The ſame erroneous maxims (ſaid he) that obſtruct your promotion "in the church, will infallibly prevent your advancement in the army; but if you can brook the condition "of a ſervant, I am acquainted with ſome people of rank "at Verſailles, to whom I can give you letters of recommendation, that you may be entertained by ſome one "of them in quality of *maître d'hôtel*; and I do not doubt "that your qualifications will ſoon entitle you to a better proviſion." I embraced his offer with great eagerneſs; and he appointed me to come back in the afternoon, when he would not only give me the letters, but likewiſe introduce me to a capuchin of his acquaintance, who intended to ſet out for Paris next morning, in whoſe company I might travel, without being at the expence of one livre during the whole journey. This piece of good news gave me infinite pleaſure; I acknowledged my obligations to the benevolent father, in the moſt grateful expreſſions; and he performed his promiſe to a tittle, in delivering the letters, and making me acquainted with the capuchin, with whom I departed next morning by break of day.

It was not long before I diſcovered my fellow-traveller to be a merry facetious fellow, who, notwithſtanding his profeſſion and appearance of mortification, loved good eating and drinking better than his roſary, and paid more adoration to a pretty girl than to the Virgin Mary, or St Genevieve. He was a thick brawny young man, with red eye-brows, a hooked noſe, a face covered with freckles; and his name was Frere Balthazar. His order did not permit him to wear linen, ſo that having little occaſion to undreſs himſelf, he was none of the cleanlieſt animals in the world; and his conſtitution was naturally ſo ſtrong ſcented, that I always thought it convenient to keep to the windward of him in our march. As he was perfectly well known on the road, we fared ſumptuouſly without any coſt, and the fatigue of our journey was much alleviated by the good humour of my com-

panion, who ſung an infinite number of catches on the ſubjects of love and wine —We took up our lodgings the firſt night at a peaſant's houſe, not far from Abbé Ville, where we were entertained with an excellent ragout, cooked by our landlord's daughters, one of whom was very handſome. After having ate heartily, and drank a ſufficient quantity of *vin du Pais*, we were conducted to a barn, where we found a couple of carpets ſpread on clean ſtraw for our reception. We had not lain in this ſituation above half an hour, when we heard ſomebody knock ſoftly at the door, upon which Balthazar got up, and let in our hoſt's two daughters, who wanted to have ſome private converſation with him in the dark; when they had whiſpered together ſome time, the capuchin came to me, and aſked if I was inſenſible to love, or ſo hard-hearted as to refuſe a ſhare of my bed to a pretty maid, who had a *tendreſſe* for me? I muſt own, to my ſhame, that I ſuffered myſelf to be overcome by my paſſion, and with great eagerneſs ſeized the occaſion, when I underſtood that the amiable Nanette was to be my bed-fellow. In vain did my reaſon ſuggeſt the reſpect I owed to my dear miſtreſs Narciſſa; the idea of that lovely charmer rather increaſed than allayed the ferment of my ſpirits; and the young Paiſanne had no reaſon to complain of my remembrance. Early in the morning, the kind creatures left us to our repoſe, which laſted till eight o'clock; when we got up, and were treated at breakfaſt with chocolate and *l' eau de vie* by our paramours, of whom we took a tender leave, after my companion had confeſſed and given them abſolution. While we proceeded on our journey, the converſation turned upon the night's adventure, being introduced by the capuchin, who aſked me how I liked my lodgings? I declared my ſatisfaction, and talked in rapture of the agreeable Nanette; at which he ſhook his head, and ſmiling, ſaid, ſhe was a *morceau pour la bonne bouche*. "I never valued myſelf "(continued he) upon any thing ſo much as the con-"queſt of Nanette; and, vanity apart, I have been pret-"ty fortunate in my amours."—This information ſhocked me not a little, as I was well convinced of his intimacy with her ſiſter; and though I did not care to tax

him with downright inceſt, I profeſſed my aſtoniſhment at his laſt night's choice, when I ſuppoſed the other was at his devotion. To this he anſwered, that beſides his natural compliaiſance to the ſex, he had another reaſon to diſtribute his favours equally between them, namely, to preſerve peace in the family, which could not otherwiſe be maintained;—that moreover Nanette had conceived an affection for me, and he loved her too well to baulk her inclination; more eſpecially, when he had an opportunity of obliging his friend at the ſame time. I thanked him for this inſtance of his friendſhip, though I was extremely diſguſted at his want of delicacy, and curſed the occaſion that threw me in his way—Libertine as I was, I could not bear to ſee a man behave ſo wide of the character he aſſumed: I looked upon him as a perſon of very little worth and honeſty, and ſhould have even kept a wary eye upon my pocket, if I had thought he could have any temptation to ſteal. But I could not perceive the uſe of money to a capuchin, who is obliged, by the rules of his order, to appear like a beggar, and enjoy all other neceſſaries of life *gratis*; beſides, my fellow-traveller ſeemed to be of a complexion too careleſs and ſanguine to give me any apprehenſion on that ſcore; ſo that I proceeded with great confidence, in expectation of being ſoon at my journey's end.

CHAP. XLIII.

We lodge at a hoſt near Amiens, *where I am robbed by the capuchin, who eſcapes while I am aſleep—I go to* Noyons *in ſearch of him, but without ſucceſs—I make my condition known to ſeveral people, but find no relief—I grow deſperate—join a company of ſtrolers—inliſt in the regiment of* P——y—*we are ordered into* Germany—*I find the ſubject of the march altogether intolerable—quarrel with my comrade in a diſpute about politics—he challenges me to the field, wounds me, and is himſelf ſlain.*

THE firſt night of our pilgrimage we paſſed at a hoſt near Amiens, which, being unknown,

known, we supped upon indifferent fare, and four wine, and were fain to ly in a garret upon an old mattreſs, which, I believe, had been in the poſſeſſion of ten thouſand myriads of fleas, time out of mind. We did not invade their territory with impunity; in leſs than a minute we were attacked with ſtings innumerable, in ſpite of which, however, I fell faſt aſleep, being exceſſively fatigued with our day's march, and did not wake till nine next morning; when ſeeing myſelf alone, I ſtarted up in a terrible fright, and examining my pockets, found my preſaging fear too true. My companion had made free with my cath, and left me to ſeek my way to Paris by myſelf! I ran down ſtairs immediately; and with a look full of grief and amazement, inquired for the mendicant, who, they gave me to underſtand, had ſet out four hours before, after having told them I was a little indiſpoſed, and deſired I might not be diſturbed, but be informed when I ſhould wake, he had taken the road to Noyons, where he would wait for my coming, at the Coq D'Or. I ſpoke not a word, but with a heavy heart directed my courſe to that place, at which I arrived in the afternoon, fainting with wearineſs and hunger; but learned, to my utter confuſion, that no ſuch perſon had been there!—It was happy for me that I had a good deal of reſentment in my conſtitution, which animated me on ſuch occaſions againſt the villainy of mankind, and enabled me to bear misfortunes otherwiſe intolerable. Boiling with indignation, I diſcovered to my hoſt my deplorable condition, and inveighed with great bitterneſs againſt the treachery of Barbazar; at which he ſhrugged up his ſhoulders, and with a peculiar grimace on his countenance, ſaid, he was ſorry for my misfortune, but there was no remedy like patience. At that inſtant, ſome gueſts arrived, to whom he haſtened to offer his ſervice, leaving me mortified at his indifference, and fully perſuaded that an inn-keeper is the ſame ſordid animal all over the world. While I ſtood in the porch, forlorn and undetermined, venting ejaculations of curſes againſt the thief who had robbed me, and the old prieſt who recommended him to my friendſhip, a young gentleman, richly attended by a *valet de chambre* and two ſervants in livery, arrived at the

inn

inn. I thought I perceived a good deal of sweetness and good nature in his countenance; therefore he had no sooner alighted than I accosted him, and in a few words explained my situation. He listened with great politeness, and when I had made an end of my story, said, "Well, "Monsieur, what would you have me do?" I was effectually abashed at this interrogation, which I believed no man of common sense or generosity could make, and made no other reply than a low bow: he returned the compliment full lower and tript into an apartment, while the landlord let me know, that my standing there to interrupt company gave offence, and might do him much prejudice. He had no occasion to repeat his intimation; I moved from the place immediately, and was so much transported with grief, anger, and disdain, that a torrent of blood gushed from my nostrils. In this manner, I quitted Noyons, and betook myself to the fields, where I wandered about like one distracted, till my spirits were quite exhausted, and I was obliged to throw myself down at the root of a tree, to rest my wearied limbs. Here my rage forsook me, I began to feel the importunate cravings of nature, and relapsed into silent sorrow and melancholy reflection. I revolved all the crimes I had been guilty of, and found them so few and venial, that I could not comprehend the justice of that Providence, which, after having exposed me to so much wretchedness and danger, left me a prey to famine at last in a foreign country, where I had not one friend or acquaintance to close my eyes, and do the last offices of humanity to my miserable carcase. A thousand times I wished myself a bear, that I might retreat to woods and deserts, far from the unsociable haunts of man, where I could live by my own talons, independent of treacherous friends, and imperious form.

As I lay in this manner, groaning over my hapless fate, I heard the tinkling of bells, and raising my head, perceived a company of men and women dancing on the green at some distance from me. I looked upon this to be a fortunate incident. I got up, and, with a trembling emotion, when every twelfth minute is expected, and the heart dilated with returning hope; wherefore I got up and approached

proached thefe people, whom I foon difcovered to be a party of foldiers, with their wives and children, unbending and diverting themfelves at this rate, after the fatigue of a march. I had never before feen fuch a parcel of fcare-crows together, neither could I reconcile their meagre gaunt looks, their fqualid and ragged attire, and every other external fymptom of extreme woe, with this appearance of feftivity. I faluted them, however, and was received with great politeffe; after which they formed a ring and danced round me. This jollity had a wonderful effect upon my fpirits. I was infected with their gaiety, and in fpite of my difmal fituation forgot my cares, and joined in their extravagance. When we had recreated ourfelves a good while at this diverfion, the ladies fpread their mantuas on the ground, upon which they emptied their knapfacks of fome onions, coarfe bread, and a few flafks of poor wine: being invited to a fhare of the banquet, I fat down with the reft, and in the whole courfe of my life never made a more comfortable meal. When our repaft was ended, we got up again to dance: and now that I found myfelf refreffied, I behaved to the admiration of every body: I was loaded with a thoufand compliments and profeffions of friendfhip; the men commended my perfon and agility, and the women were loud in the praife of my *bonne grace*;—the ferjeant in particular, expreffed fo much regard for me, and defcribed the agreeablenefs of a foldier's life, with fo much art, that I began to liften to his propofal of enlifting me into the fervice; and the more I confidered my own condition, the more I was convinced of the neceffity I was under of coming to a fpeedy determination. Having therefore maturely weighed the circumftances *pro* and *con*, I fignified my content, and was admitted into the regiment of Picardy, faid to be the oldeft corps in Europe. The company to which this command belonged, was quartered at a village not far off, whither we marched next day, and I was prefented to my captain, who feemed very well pleafed with my appearance, gave me a crown to drink, and ordered me to be accommodated with cloaths, arms and accoutrements. Whereupon I fold my livery fuit, purchafed linen, and as I was at great pains to learn the

exercife

exercise, in a very short time became a compleat soldier.—It was not long before we received orders to join several more regiments, and march with all expedition into Germany, in order to reinforce Marechal Duc de Noailles, who was then encamped with his army on the side of the river Main, to watch the motions of the English, Austrians, and Hessians, under the command of the Earl of Stair. We began our march accordingly, and I then became acquainted with that part of a soldier's life to which I had been a stranger hitherto. It is impossible to describe the hunger and thirst I sustained, and the fatigue I underwent in a march of so many hundred miles; during which I was so much chafed with the heat and motion of my limbs, that in a very short time the inside of my thighs and legs were deprived of skin, and I proceeded on in the most exquisite torture. This misfortune I owed to the plumpness of my constitution, which I cursed, and envied the withered condition of my comrades, whose bodies could not spare juice enough to supply a common issue, and were inured proof against all manner of friction. The continual pain I felt made me fretful, and my peevishness was increased by the mortification of my pride, in seeing these miserable wretches, whom a hard gale of wind would have scattered through the air like chaff, bear these toils with alacrity, under which I was ready to sink.

One day while we enjoyed a halt, and the soldiers with their wives had gone out to dance, according to custom, my comrade Bowling came home with me on pretence of friendship, and indeed he was very kind and comfortable. He told me, though I was young and tender at present, I would soon be reformed to the service; and he did not doubt but I should have the honour to contribute in some measure to the glory of the king—"Have courage therefore, my cock," (said he,) and pray to our good God, "that you may be as happy as I am, who have had the "honour of serving Lewis the Great, and of receiving "many wounds in helping to establish his glory." When I looked upon the contemptible object that pronounced these words, I was amazed at the infatuation that possessed him; and could not help expressing my astonishment

ment at the abſurdity of a rational being, who thinks himſelf highly honoured in being permitted to encounter abject poverty, [illegible], famine, diſeaſe, mutilation, and evident death, merely to gratify the vicious ambition of a prince, by whoſe miſmanagements were diſregarded, and his name utterly unknown. I obſerved, that if his ſituation was the conſequence of compulſion, as having been preſſed into the ſervice, I would praiſe his patience and fortitude in bearing ills;—if he had taken up arms in defence of his injured country, he was to be applauded for his patriotiſm;—or if he had fled to this way of life as an eſcape from a greater evil, he was juſtifiable in his own conſcience (though I could have no notion of miſery more extreme than that he ſuffered;) but to put his condition on the foot of conducing to the glory of his prince, was no more than profeſſing himſelf a deſperate ſlave, who voluntarily underwent the utmoſt wretchedneſs and peril, and committed the moſt flagrant crimes, to ſooth the barbarous pride of a fellow-creature, his ſuperior in nothing but the power he derived from the ſubmiſſion of ſuch wretches as he. The ſoldier was very much aſtoniſhed at the liberty I took with his king, which, he ſaid, nothing but my ignorance could excuſe. He affirmed, that the characters of princes were ſacred, and ought not to be profaned by the cenſure of their ſubjects, who are bound by their allegiance to obey their commands, of what nature ſoever, without murmuring or repining: and deſired me to correct the rebellious principles I had imbibed among the Engliſh, who, for their inſolence to their kings, were notorious all over the world, even to a proverb:

Vivat qui vivere nescit,
Et regnet qui regnare potest.

In the vindication of my countrymen, I repeated all the arguments commonly uſed to prove that every man has a natural right to liberty; that allegiance and protection are reciprocal, that when the natural ties are broken by the tyranny of the king, he is diſſolved to the people from his breach of contract, and liable to the penalty of the

law; and that thoſe inſurrections of the Engliſh, which are branded with the name of Rebellion, by the ſlaves of arbitrary power, were no other than glorious efforts to reſcue that independance, which was their birth-right, from the ravenous claws of uſurping ambition. The Frenchman, provoked at the little deference I paid to the kingly name, loſt all patience, and reproached me in ſuch a manner, that my temper forſook me, and I clenched my fiſt, with an intention to give him an hearty box on the ear. Perceiving my deſign, he ſtarted back, and demanded a parley; upon which I checked my indignation, and he gave me to underſtand, that a Frenchman never forgave a blow; therefore, if I was not weary of my life, I would do well to ſpare him that mortification, and do him the honour of meaſuring his ſword with mine, like a gentleman. I took his advice, and followed him to a field hard by, where indeed I was aſhamed at the pitiful figure of my antagoniſt, who was a poor, little, ſhivering creature, decrepid with age and blind of one eye. But I ſoon found the folly of judging from appearance; being at the ſecond paſs wounded in the ſword-arm, and immediately diſarmed with ſuch a jerk, that I thought the joint was diſlocated. I was no leſs confounded than enraged at this event, eſpecially as my adverſary did not bear his ſucceſs with all the moderation that might have been expected; for he inſiſted upon my aſking pardon for my preſumption in affronting his ſuperiority. This I would by no means comply with, telling him, it was a mean condeſcenſion, which no gentleman in his circumſtances ought to propoſe, and more in my freedom perſiſted; and if he inſiſted in his arrogant demand, I would in my turn oblige him with the ſame. At which he ſtepped more upon his guard than with the ſword he had before diſarmed me.

CHAP. XLIV.

The Gaſcon *does not uſe his victory with all the moderation that might have been expected—In order to be revenged I learn the ſcience of defence—We join* Mareſchal Duc de Noailles—*are engaged with the allies at* Dettingen, *and put to flight— the behaviour of the* French *ſoldiers on that occaſion—I induſtriouſly ſeek another combat with the old* Gaſcon, *and vanquiſh him in my turn—our regiment is put into winter-quarters at* Rheims, *where I find my friend* Strap—*our recognition—he ſupplies me with money, and procures my diſcharge—we take a trip to* Paris; *from whence we ſet out for* London, *by the way of* Flanders, *where we ſafely arrive.*

HE was diſconcerted at this declaration, to which he made no reply, but repaired to the dancers, among whom he recounted his victory with many exaggerations and gaſconades; while I, taking up my ſword, went to my quarters and examined my wound, which I found was of no conſequence. The ſame day, an Iriſh drummer, having heard my misfortune, viſited me, and after having condoled with me on the chance of war, gave me to underſtand, that he was maſter of the ſword, and would in a very ſhort time inſtruct me ſo thoroughly in that noble ſcience, that I ſhould be able to chaſtiſe the old Gaſcon for his inſolent laughing at my expence.—This friendly office he proffered on pretence of the regard he had for his countrymen; but I afterwards learned the true motive was no other than a jealouſy he entertained, of a correſpondence between the Frenchman and his wife, which he did not think proper to reſent in perſon. Be this as it will, I accepted his offer, and practiſed his leſſons with ſuch application, that I ſoon believed myſelf a match for my conqueror. In the mean time we continued our march, and arrived at the camp of Mareſchal Noailles, the night before the battle of Dettingen. Notwithſtanding the fatigue we had undergone, our regiment was one of thoſe which were ordered next day to croſs the river under the command of the

the Duc de Gramont, to take poſſeſſion of a narrow defile, through which the allies muſt of neceſſity have paſſed at a great diſadvantage, or remain where they were, and periſh for want of proviſion, if they would not condeſcend to ſurrender at diſcretion. How they ſuffered themſelves to be pent up in this manner, it is not my province to relate; I ſhall only obſerve, that when we had taken poſſeſſion of our ground, I heard an old officer, in converſation with another, profeſs a ſurpriſe at the conduct of Lord Stair, who had the reputation of a good general. But it ſeems, at this time, that nobleman was over-ruled, and only acted in an inferior character; ſo that no part of the blame could be imputed to him, who declared his diſapprobation of the ſtep, in conſequence of which the whole army was in the utmoſt danger; but Providence or deſtiny acted miracles in their behalf, by diſpoſing the Duc de Gramont to quit his advantageous poſt, paſs the defile, and attack the Engliſh, who were drawn up in order of battle on the plain, and who handled us ſo roughly, that after having loſt a great number of men, we turned our backs without ceremony, and fled with ſuch precipitation, that many hundreds periſhed in the river, through pure fear and confuſion; for the enemy was ſo generous, that they did not purſue us one inch of ground; and if our conſternation would have permitted, we might have retreated with great order and deliberation, But notwithſtanding the royal clemency of the King of Great Britain, who headed the allies in perſon, and, no doubt, put a ſtop to the carnage, our loſs amounted to five thouſand men, among whom were many officers of diſtinction. Our miſcarriage opened a paſſage for the foe to Hanau, whither they immediately marched, leaving their ſick and wounded to the care of the French, who next day took poſſeſſion of the field of battle, buried the dead, and treated the living with humanity. This was a great conſolation to us, who thence took occaſion to claim the victory: and the genius of the French nation never appeared more conſpicuous than now, in the rhodomontades they uttered on the ſubject of their generoſity and courage: every man (by his own account) performed feats that would have ſhamed all the heroes of antiquity.—

One compared himself to a lion retiring at leisure from his cowardly pursuers, who kept at a wary distance and galled him with their darts. Another likened himself to a bear that retreats with his face to the enemy, who dare not assail him; and a third assumed the character of a desperate stag, that turns upon the hounds and keeps them at bay. There was not a private soldier engaged, who had not, by the prowess of his single arm, demolished a whole platoon, or put a squadron of horse to flight; and above others, the meagre Gascon extolled his exploits above those of Hercules or Charlemagne. As I still retained my resentment for the disgrace I suffered in my last rencontre with him, and now that I thought myself qualified, I longed for an opportunity to retrieve my honour; I magnified the valour of the English with all the hyperboles I could imagine, and decried the pusillanimity of the French in the same strain, comparing them to hares flying before grey-hounds, or mice pursued by cats; and passed an ironical compliment on the speed he exerted in his flight, which, considering his age and infirmities, I said was surprising. He was stung to the quick by this sarcasm, and with an air of threatening disdain, bid me know myself better, and remember the correction I had already received from him for my insolence; for he might not be always in the humour of sparing a wretch who abused his goodness. To this innuendo I made no reply but by a kick on the breech, which overturned him in an instant. He started up with wonderful agility, and drawing his sword, attacked me with great fury; several people interposed, but when he informed them of its being an affair of honour, they retired, and left us to decide the battle by ourselves. I sustained his onset with little damage, having only received a small scratch on my right shoulder; and seeing his breath and vigour almost exhausted, assaulted him in my turn, closed with him, and wrested the sword out of his hand in the struggle. Having thus acquired the victory, I desired him to beg his life; to which he made no answer, but shrugged up his shoulders to his ears, expanded his hands, elevated the skin of his forehead and eye-brows, and depressed the corner of his mouth, in such a manner, that I could scarce refrain from laughing

laughing aloud at his grotesque appearance. That I might, however, mortify his vanity, which had triumphed without bounds over my misfortune, I thrust his sword up to the hilt in something (it was not a tansy) that lay smoaking on the plain, and joined the rest of the soldiers with an air of tranquillity and indifference.

There was nothing more of moment attempted by either of the armies during the remaining part of the campaign, which being ended, the English marched back to the Netherlands; part of our army was detached to French Flanders, and our regiment ordered to winter quarters in Champaigne. It was the fate of the grenadier company, to which I now belonged, to lye at Rheims, where I found myself in the utmost want of every thing. My pay, which amounted to five sols a-day, far from supplying me with necessaries, was scarce sufficient to procure a wretched subsistence, to keep soul and body together; so that I was, by hunger and hard duty, brought down to the meagre condition of my fellow soldiers, and my linen reduced from three tolerable shirts to two pair of sleeves and necks, the bodies having been long ago converted into spatterdashes; and after all I was better provided than any other man in the regiment. In this urgency of my affairs, I wrote to my uncle in England, tho' my hopes from that quarter were not at all sanguine, for the reasons I have already explained, and in the mean time had recourse to my old remedy, patience, consoling myself with the flattering suggestions of a lively imagination, that never abandoned me in my distress.

One day while I stood centinel at the gate of a general officer, a certain nobleman came to the door, followed by a gentleman in mourning, to whom at parting I heard him say, "You may depend upon my good offices." This assurance was answered by a low bow of the person in black, who turning to go away, discovered to me the individual countenance of my old friend and adherent Strap—I was so much astonished at the sight, that I lost the power of utterance, and before I could recollect myself, he was gone, without taking any notice of me. Indeed had he staid, I scarce would have ventured to accost him; because though I was perfectly well acquainted with the features

of his face, I could not be positively certain as to the rest of his person, which was very much altered for the better, since he left me at London; neither could I conjecture by what means he was enabled to appear in the sphere of a gentleman, to which, while I knew him, he had not even the ambition to aspire. But I was too much concerned in the affair to neglect further information, and therefore took the first opportunity of asking the porter if he knew the gentleman to whom the Marquis spoke? The Swiss told me, his name was Monsieur d'Estrapes, that he had been *valet de chambre* to an English gentleman lately deceased, and that he was very much regarded by the Marquis for his fidelity to his master, between whom and that noblem n a very intimate friendship had subsisted. Nothing could be more agreeable to me than this piece of intelligence, which banished all doubt of its being my friend, who had found means to frenchify his name as well as his behaviour, since we parted. As soon, therefore, as I was relieved, I went to his lodging according to a direction given me by the Swiss, and had the good fortune to find him at home. That I might surprise him the more, I concealed my name and business, and only desired the servant of the house, to tell Monsieur d'Estrapes, that I begged the honour of half an hour's conversation with him. He was confounded and dismayed at this message, when he understood it was sent by a soldier, though he was conscious to himself of no crime: all that he had heard of the Bastile appeared to his imagination with aggravated horror, and it was not before I had waited a considerable time that he had resolution enough to bid the servant shew me up stairs. When I entered his chamber, he returned my bow with great civility, and endeavoured with forced complaisance to disguise his fear, which appeared in the paleness of his face, the wildness of his looks, and the shaking of his limbs.—I was diverted at his consternation, which redoubled, when I told him (in French) I had business for his private ear, and demanded a particular audience. The valet being withdrawn, I asked in the same language, if his name was d'Estrapes, to which he answered, with a faultering tongue, "The same at your service."—"Are you a Frenchman?" said

faid I—" I have not the honour of being a Frenchman " born," replied he, " but I have an infinite veneration " for the country."—I then defired he would do me the honour to look at me, which he no ſooner did, than ſtruck with my appearance, he ſtarted back, and cried in Engliſh, " O Jeſus!—ſure it can't!—No, 'tis " impoſſible!"—I ſmiled at his interjections, ſaying, " I " ſuppoſe you are too much of a gentleman to own your " friend in adverſity."—When he heard me pronounce theſe words in our own language, he leaped upon me in a tranſport of joy, hung about my neck, kiſſed me from ear to ear, and blubbered like a great ſchool-boy who had been whipt. Then obſerving my dreſs, he ſet up his throat, crying, " O L—d! O L—d! that ever I ſhould " live to ſee my deareſt friend reduced to the condition " of a foot ſoldier in the French ſervice!—Wy did you " conſent to my leaving you?—But I know the reaſon—" you thought you had got more creditable friends, and " grew aſhamed of my acquaintance.—Ah! Lord help " us! though I was a little ſhort ſighted, I was not al-" together blind;—and though I did not complain, I " was not the leſs ſenſible of your unkindneſs, which " was indeed the only thing that induced me to ramble " abroad, the Lord knows whither; but I muſt own it " has been a lucky ramble for me, and ſo I forgive you, " and may God forgive you:—O L—d! O L—d! is it " come to this?"—I was nettled at the charge, which tho' juſt, I could not help thinking unſeaſonable, and told him with ſome tartneſs, that whether his ſuſpicions were well or ill grounded, he might have choſen a more convenient opportunity of introducing them: and that the queſtion now was, whether or no he found himſelf diſpoſed to lend me any aſſiſtance.—" Diſpoſed!" replied he with great emotion, " I thought you had known me ſo " well, as to aſſure yourſelf, without aſking, that I and all " that belongs to me are at your command. In the mean " time, you muſt dine with me, and I will tell you ſome-" thing that perhaps will not be diſpleaſing to you."—Then wringing my hand he ſaid, " It makes my heart " bleed to ſee you in that garb!"—I thanked him for his ſympathy, which, I obſerved, could not be unwel-come

come to a perſon who had not eaten a comfortable meal theſe ſeven months; but I had another requeſt to make, which I begged he would grant before dinner, and that was the loan of a ſhirt. For although my back had been a ſtranger to any comfort of this kind, my ſkin was not yet quite familiariſed to the want of it. He ſtared in my face with a woeful countenance at this declaration, which he could ſcarce believe until I explained it, by unbuttoning my coat, and diſcloſing my naked body; a circumſtance that ſhocked the tender-hearted Strap, who, with tears in his eyes, ran to a cheſt of drawers, and taking out ſome linen, preſented to me a very fine ruffled holland ſhirt, and cambric neck-cloth, aſſuring me he had three dozen of the ſame kind at my ſervice. I was raviſhed at this piece of good news, and having accommodated myſelf in a moment, hugged my benefactor for his generous offer, ſaying, I was overjoyed to find him undebauched by proſperity, which ſeldom fails of corrupting the heart.—He beſpoke for dinner ſome ſoup and bouille, a couple of pullets roaſted, and a diſh of aſparagus, and in the interim entertained me with biſcuit and burgundy; after which he intreated me to gratify his longing deſire of knowing every circumſtance of my fortune ſince his departure from London. This I complied with, beginning at the adventure of Gawkey, and relating every particular event in which I had been concerned from that day to the preſent hour. During the recital, my friend was ſtrongly affected, according to the various ſituations deſcribed; he ſtarted with ſurpriſe, glowed with indignation, gaped with curioſity, ſmiled with pleaſure, trembled with fear, and wept with ſorrow, as the viciſſitudes of my life inſpired theſe different paſſions; and when my hiſtory was ended, ſignified his amazement on the whole, by lifting up his eyes and hands, and proteſting, that though I was a young man, I had ſuffered more than all the bleſſed martyrs.

After dinner, I deſired, in my turn, to know the particulars of his peregrination; and he ſatisfied me in a few words, by giving me to underſtand that he had lived a year at Paris with his maſter, who, in that time, having acquired the language as well as the faſhionable exerciſes, to perfection, made the tour of France and Holland, during

ring which excurſion, he was ſo unfortunate as to meet with three of his own countrymen on their travels, in whoſe company he committed ſuch exceſſes, that his conſtitution failed, and he fell into a conſumption; that by the advice of phyſicians he went to Montpelier for the benefit of the good air, and recovered ſo well in ſix weeks, that he returned to Rheims, ſeemingly in good health, where he had not continued above a month, when he was ſeized with a looſeneſs, that carried him off in ten days, to the unſpeakable ſorrow of all who knew him, and eſpecially of Strap, who had been very happy in his ſervice, and given ſuch ſatisfaction, that his maſter on his death-bed recommended him to ſeveral perſons of diſtinction for his diligence, ſobriety, and affection, and left him by will, his wearing apparel, gold watch, ſword, rings, ready money, and all the moveables he had in France, to the value of three hundred pounds, "which "I now," ſaid he, "in the ſight of God and man, ſur-"render to your abſolute diſpoſal: here are my keys, "take them, I beſeech you, and God give you joy of the "poſſeſſion."—My brain was almoſt turned with this ſudden change of fortune, which I could ſcarce believe real; however, I poſitively refuſed this extravagant proffer of my friend, and put him in mind of my being a ſoldier; at which he ſtarted, crying "O diſo! that's true—We muſt "procure your diſcharge—I have ſome intereſt with a "nobleman who is able to do me that favour."—We conſulted about this affair, and it was determined, that Monſieur d'Eſtrapes ſhould wait upon the marquis in the morning, and tell him he had by accident found his brother, whom he had not ſeen for many years before, a private ſoldier in the regiment of Picardy, and implore that nobleman's intereſt for his diſcharge. In the mean time we enjoyed ourſelves over a bottle of good Burgundy, and ſpent the evening in concerting ſchemes for our future conduct, in caſe I ſhould be ſo lucky as to get rid of the army. The buſineſs was to make ourſelves eaſy for life, by means of his bravery, a talk very difficult, and, in the uſual method of carrying out money, altogether impracticable; ſo that after much canvaſſing, we could come to no reſolution that night, but when we parted, recommended

mended the matter to the ſerious attention of each other. As for my own part, I puzzled my imagination to no purpoſe: when I thought of turning merchant, the ſmallneſs of our ſtock, and the riſk of ſea, enemies, and markets, deterred me from that ſcheme. If I ſhould ſettle as a ſurgeon in my own country, I would find the buſineſs already overſtocked; or if I pretended to ſet up in England, muſt labour under want of friends, and powerful oppoſition, obſtacles unſurmountable by the moſt ſhining merit: neither would I ſucceed in my endeavours to riſe in the ſtate, inaſmuch as I could neither flatter nor pimp for courtiers, nor proſtitute my pen in defence of a wicked and contemptible adminiſtration. Before I could form one feaſible project, I fell aſleep, and my fancy was bleſſed with the image of the dear Narciſſa, who ſeemed to ſmile upon my paſſion, and offer her hand as a reward for all my toils.

Early in the morning, I went to the lodgings of my friend, whom I found exulting over his happy invention; for I no ſooner entered his apartment, than he addreſſed me in theſe words, with a ſmile of ſelf applauſe: "Well, "Mr Random, a lucky thought may come into a fool's "head ſometimes—I have hit it—I'll hold you a button "my plan is better than yours, for all your learning.—"But you ſhall have the preference in this as in all other "things; therefore proceed, and let us know the effects "of your meditation,—and then I will impart my own "ſimple excogitations." I told him, that not one thought occurred to me which deſerved the leaſt notice, and ſignified my impatience to be acquainted with the fruits of his reflection. "As we have not," ſaid he, "money "ſufficient to maintain us during a tedious expectation, "it is my opinion, that a bold push muſt be made, and "I ſee none ſo likely to ſucceed as your appearing in the "character of a gentleman, (which is your due) and "making your addreſſes to ſome lady of fortune who can "render you independent at once—Nay don't ſtare—I "affirm that this ſcheme is both prudent and honourable; for I would not have you throw yourſelf away "upon an old toaſt, whoſe dower, whoſe breath "would ſtink you into a conſumption in leſs than three

" months; neither would I adviſe you to aſſume the cha-
" racter of a wealthy ſquire, as your common fortune-
" hunters do, by which means many a poor lady is
" cheated into matrimony, and inſtead of enjoying the
" pomp and grandeur that was promiſed, ſees her dow-
" ry ſeized by her huſband's rapacious creditors, and her-
" ſelf reduced to miſery and deſpair. No, I know you
" have a ſoul that diſdains ſuch impoſition; and are maſ-
" ter of qualifications both of mind and body, which
" alone entitle you to a match, that will ſet you above
" the world. I have cloathes in my poſſeſſion, that a
" Duke need not be aſhamed to wear. I believe they
" will fit you as they are—If not, there are plenty of
" tailors in France. Let us take a ſhort trip to Paris,
" and provide ourſelves in all other neceſſaries, then ſet
" out for England, where I intend to do myſelf the ho-
" nour of attending you in quality of valet. This will
" ſave you the expence of a ſervant, ſhaving and dreſſing;
" and I doubt not but, by the bleſſing of God, we ſhall
" bring matters to a ſpeedy and fortunate iſſue." Extra-
vagant as this propoſal was, I liſtened to it with pleaſure, becauſe it flattered my vanity, and indulged a ridiculous hope I began to entertain of inſpiring Narciſſa with a mutual flame.

After breakfaſt, Monſieur d'Eſtrapes went to pay his devoirs to the Marquis, and was ſo ſucceſsful in his application, that I obtained a diſcharge in a few days, upon which we ſet out for Paris. Here I had time to reflect and congratulate myſelf upon this ſudden tranſition of fate, which, to bear with moderation, required ſome degree of philoſophy and ſelf-denial. This will be more obvious, if I give a detail of the particulars, to the quiet poſſeſſion of which I was raiſed in an inſtant, from the moſt abject miſery and contempt. My wardrobe conſiſted of five faſhionable coats full mounted, two of which were plain, one of cut velvet, one trimmed with gold, and another with ſilver lace; two frocks, one a white drab with large plate buttons, and the other of blue, with ſmall buttons; one waiſt-coat of gold brocade; one of blue tartan embroidered with ſilver; one of green ilk, bound with broad-figured gold lace; one of black ilk

with figures; one of white fattin; one of black cloth, and one of fcarlet; fix pair of cloth breeches; one pair of crimfon, and another of black velvet; twelve pair of white filk ftockings, as many of black filk, and the fame number of fine cotton; one hat, laced with gold *point d'Eſpagne*, another with filver lace fcolloped, a third with gold binding, and a fourth plain; three dozen of fine ruffled fhirts; as many neckcloths; one dozen of cambrics handkerchiefs, and the like number of filk. The other moveables which I poſſeſſed by the generoſity and friendſhip of Strap, were, a gold watch with a chaſed caſe, two valuable diamond rings, two mourning fwords, one with a filver handle, and a fourth cut ſteel inlaid with gold; a diamond ſtock-buckle, and a ſet of ſtone buckles for the knees and ſhoes; a pair of filver mounted piſtols with rich houſings, a gold-headed cane, and a ſnuff-box of tortoiſe-ſhell mounted with gold, having the picture of a lady in the lid. The gentleman left many other things of value, which my friend had converted into caſh before I met with him, ſo that over and above theſe particulars, our ſtock in ready money amounted to ſomething more than two hundred pounds.

Thus equipt, I put on the gentleman of figure, and attended by my honeſt friend, who was contented with the ſtation of my valet, I viſited the Louvre, examined the gallery of Luxemburgh, and appeared at Verſailles, where I had the honour to ſee his Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty eat a conſiderable quantity of olives. During the month I ſpent at Paris, I went ſeveral times to court, the Italian opera, and play-houſe, danced at the maſquerade, and in ſhort ſaw every thing remarkable in and about the capital. After which we ſet out for England by the way of Flanders, paſſed through Peronne, Ghent, and Bruges, and took ſhipping at Oſtend, from whence in fourteen hours we arrived at Deal, hired a poſt-chaiſe, and in twelve hours more got safe to London; having diſpoſed of our heavy baggage in the waggon.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLV.

I inquire about my uncle, and understand he has gone to sea—take lodgings at Charing-cross—*go to the play, where I meet with an adventure—I go to an ordinary; the guests described—become acquainted with* Medlar *and Doctor* Wagtail.

AS soon as we alighted at the inn, I dispatched Strap to enquire about my uncle, at the Sampson and Lion in Wapping; and he returned in a little time with an account of Mr Bowling's having gone to sea, mate of a merchant ship, after a long and unsuccessful application and attendance at the admiralty; where it seems the interest he depended upon was not sufficient to reinstate him, or recover the pay that was due to him when he quitted the Thunder.

Next day I hired very handsome lodgings not far from Charing-cross; and in the evening dressed myself in a plain suit of the true Paris cut, and appeared in a front box at the play, where I saw a good deal of company, and had vanity enough to make me believe that I was observed with an uncommon degree of attention and applause. This silly conceit interested me so much, that I was guilty of a thousand ridiculous coquetries, and I dare say, how favourable soever the thoughts of the company might be at my first appearance, they were soon changed by my absurd behaviour into pity or contempt. —I got up and sat down, covered and uncovered my head twenty times between the acts; pulled forth my watch, clapped it to my ear, wound it up, &c. gave the hearing an air; adjusted my cravat, snuffed the candle, that I might make an ostentation of my operations, wiped my nose with a handkerchief, &c. [illegible] my cane, and [illegible] many more [illegible] of which, [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

the people around me; but was reſtrained by the fear of being cenſured for my aſſurance, as well as by reflecting that I was more entitled to a compliment of this kind from them than they to ſuch condeſcenſion from a ſtranger like me. How often did I redden at the frequent whiſpers and loud laughter of my fellow beaux, which I imagined were excited by me! and how often did I envy the happy indifference of thoſe choice ſpirits who beheld the diſtreſs of the ſcene, without diſcovering the leaſt ſymptom of approbation or concern! My attention was engaged in ſpite of myſelf, and I could not help weeping with the heroine of the ſtage; though I practiſed a great many ſhifts to conceal this impolite piece of weakneſs. When the play was ended, I ſat waiting for an opportunity of handing ſome lady to her coach; but every one was attended by ſuch a number of officious gallants, that for a long time I was baulked in my expectation. At length, however, I perceived a very handſome creature, genteelly dreſſed, ſitting by herſelf in a box, at ſome diſtance from me; upon which I went up to her, and offered my ſervice. She ſeemed to be in ſome confuſion, thanked me for my complaiſance, and with a tender look declined giving me the trouble; looking at her watch, and teſtifying her ſurpriſe at the negligence of her footman, whom ſhe had ordered to have a chair ready for her at that hour. I repeated my entreaty with all the eloquence and compliment I was maſter of, and in the event, ſhe was prevailed upon to accept of a propoſal I made to ſend my ſervant for a chair or coach. Accordingly, Strap was diſpatched for that purpoſe, and returned without either, there being none to be found; by this time the play-houſe was quite empty, and we were obliged to retire. As I led her through the paſſage, I obſerved five or ſix young fellows of faſhion, ſtanding in a corner, one of whom, as I thought, tipt my charmer the wink, and when we were paſt, I heard them ſet up the loud laugh. This aroused my attention, and I was reſolved to be fully ſatisfied of the lady's character before I ſhould have any further converſation with her. As no convenience appeared, I propoſed that I ſhould conduct her to a tavern, where we

might ſtay a few minutes, until my ſervant could fetch a coach from the Strand. She ſeemed particularly ſhy of truſting herſelf in a tavern with a ſtranger; but at laſt yielded to my pathetic remonſtrances, rather than endanger her health, by remaining in a cold damp thoroughfare. Having thus far ſucceeded, I begged to know what wine ſhe would be pleaſed to drink a glaſs of; but ſhe profeſſed the greateſt averſion to all ſorts of ſtrong liquors; and it was with much difficulty that I could perſuade her to eat a jelly. In the mean time, I endeavoured to alleviate the uneaſineſs ſhe diſcovered, by ſaying all the agreeable things I could think of; at which ſhe would often ſigh, and regard me with a languiſhing look, that ſeemed too near a-kin to the lewd leer of a courtezan. This diſcovery added to my former ſuſpicion, while it put me upon my guard againſt her arts, directed me of reſerve, and enabled me to entertain her with more gaiety and freedom. In the courſe of our converſation, I preſſed her to allow me the honour of waiting upon her next day, at her lodging, which ſhe, with many apologies, refuſed, leſt it ſhould give umbrage to Sir John, who was of a diſpoſition apt to be fretted with trifles. This information, by which I was to underſtand that her huſband was a knight, did not check my addreſſes, which became more and more importunate, and I was even hardy enough to ravish a kiſs. But, O heavens! inſtead of banqueting on the ambroſial flavour, that her delicacy and complexion promiſed, I was almoſt ſuffocated with the fumes of Geneva! An exhalation of this kind from a mouth which had juſt before declaimed an utter abhorrence of all ſpirituous liquors, not only changed my doubts into certainty, but my raptures into horror; and it would have been impoſſible for me to have preſerved common complaiſance five minutes longer, when my ſervant returned with a coach. I took the ſole advantage of this occaſion, and preſented my hand to the lady, who put in practice against me the whole artillery of her charms, ogling, languiſhing, ſighing, and ſmiling, with [illegible] ſhe [illegible] ſwore [illegible]

ed her into the coach with an intention to take my leave immediately. She gueſſed my deſign, and invited me to her houſe, whiſpering, that now Sir John was gone to bed, ſhe could have the pleaſure of my converſation for half an hour without interruption. I told her there was no mortification I would not undergo, rather than endanger the repoſe of her ladyſhip; and bidding the coachman drive on, wiſhed her good night. She loſt all temper at my indifference, and ſtopping the coach at the diſtance of about twenty yards from me, popped out her head, and bawled with the lungs of a fiſh-woman, "D—n "you, you dog, won't you pay the coach hire?" I made no anſwer: upon which ſhe held forth againſt me with an eloquence peculiar to herſelf; calling me pitiful fellow, ſcoundrel, and an hundred ſuch appellations; and concluded, with an oath, that for all my appearance, ſhe believed I had got no money in my pocket.

Having thus vented her indignation, ſhe ordered the coachman to proceed, and I returned to the tavern, where I beſpoke ſomething for ſupper, very well pleaſed at the iſſue of this adventure. I diſpenſed with the attendance of the waiter at table, on pretence that my own ſervant was preſent, and when we were alone, ſaid to Strap; "Well, Monſieur d'Eſtrapes, what d'ye think of this "lady?" My friend, who had not opened his mouth ſince her departure, could make no other reply than the monoſyllable, "Think!" which he pronounced with a note of fear and aſtoniſhment. Surpriſed at this emphaſis I ſurveyed my valet, and perceiving a wildneſs in his looks, aſked if he had ſeen his grandfather's ghoſt?—"Ghoſt! (ſaid he) I am ſure I have ſeen a devil incar-"nate! Who would have thought that ſo much deviliſh malice and libidinoſity could lurk under ſuch "ſweetneſs of countenance and modeſty of behaviour? "Ah! God help us! *Timeo malla ſidei—miratus ne crederis "cælo*—but we ought to fall down on our knees and "thank God for delivering us from the jaws of that prieſt-"eſs of pricture." I was pretty much of Strap's opinion, and though I did not believe myſelf in any danger from the allurements of that fine lady, I determined to act with great circumſpection for the future, and from all

commerce of that kind, as equally prejudicial to my purſe and conſtitution.

My next care was to introduce myſelf into a ſet of good acquaintance; for which purpoſe I frequented a certain coffee-houſe, noted for the reſort of good company, Engliſh as well as foreigners, where my appearance procured all the civilities and advances I could deſire. There being an ordinary in the ſame houſe, I went up ſtairs to dinner with the other gueſts, and found myſelf at table with thirteen people, the greateſt part of whom were better dreſſed than myſelf. The converſation, which was moſtly carried on in French, turned chiefly on politics; and I ſoon found the whole company was in the French intereſt, myſelf excepted, and a teſty old gentleman, who contradicted every thing that was advanced in favour of his Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, with a ſurlineſs truly Engliſh. But this truſty patriot, who had never been out of his own country, and drew all his maxims and notions from prejudice and hearſay, was very unequal to his antagoniſts, who were ſuperior to him in learning and experience, and often took the liberty of travellers, in aſſerting things which were not ſtrictly true, becauſe they thought themſelves in no danger of being detected by him. The claim of the king of Spain to the Auſtrian dominions in Italy, was fully explained and vindicated, by a perſon who ſat oppoſite to me, and by the ſolemnity of his manner, and the richneſs of his apparel, ſeemed to be a foreign ambaſſador. This diſſertation introduced another on the Pragmatic Sanction, handled with great warmth, by a young gentleman at my right-hand, dreſſed in a green frock trimmed with gold, who juſtified the French king for his breach of that contract; and affirmed that he could not have obſerved it, without injuring his own glory. Although I was not at all convinced by this gentleman's arguments, I could not help admiring his vivacity, which I imagined muſt be the effect of his illuſtrious birth, and noble education, and accordingly rated him in my conjecture as a young prince on his travels. The diſcourſe was afterwards ſhifted by an old gentleman of a very martial appearance, to the laſt campaign, when the battle of Dettingen was fought over

again

again, with ſo many circumſtances to the honour of the French, and diſadvantage of the allies, that I began to entertain ſome doubts of my having been there in perſon; and took the liberty to mention ſome objections to what he advanced. This introduced a diſpute which laſted a good while, to the mortification of all preſent; and was at laſt referred to the determination of a grave perſon, whom they ſtiled Doctor, and who, under a ſhew of great moderation, decided it againſt me, with ſo little regard to truth, that I taxed him with partiality in pretty ſevere terms, to the no ſmall entertainment of the true Engliſh politician, who rejoiced at my defence of a cauſe he had too often eſpouſed without ſucceſs: my opponent, pleaſed with the victory he had gained, affected a great deal of candour, and told me he would not have been ſo poſitive, if he had not been at great pains to inform himſelf of each particular. "Indeed (ſays he) I am convinced that the previous ſteps conſidered, things could not happen otherwiſe; for we generals who have ſeen ſervice, though we may not be on the ſpot ourſelves, know by the leaſt ſketch of the diſpoſition, what muſt be the event." He then conſidered, with great freedom, every circumſtance of the conduct of thoſe who commanded the allies; from thence made a tranſition to the miniſtry, whom he honoured with many invectives, for employing people who had neither experience nor capacity, to the prejudice of old officers who had been diſtinguiſhed for both; chopt many ſtrokes of his own importance, and concluded with obſerving, that the French and Spaniſh [illegible] were [illegible] generals of merit; the good [illegible] conquests they gain, and the [illegible] of their troops, which are at the ſame time better diſciplined and paid than any ſoldiers in the world. This [illegible] furniſhed the green-boy with an opportunity of launching out in the praiſe of French government in general, civil as well as military; on which occaſion he made many odious compariſons to the diſadvantage of the Engliſh. Every body allowed all the encomiums he made, and the doctor [illegible] that, in ſhort, the people in France were [illegible] the happieſt ſubjects in the world. I

was so much astonished and confounded at their infatuation and effrontery, that I had not power to utter one word in opposition to their assertions; but my morose associate could not put up with the indignity that was offered to old England, and therefore with a satirical grin addressed himself to the general in these words: "Sir, "Sir, I have often heard it said, *She's a villainous bird "that befouls her own nest.* As for what those people "who are foreigners, say, I don't mind it, they know "no better; but you who were bred and born, and "have got your bread under the English government, "should have more regard to gratitude as well as truth, "in censuring your native country. If the ministry have "thought fit to lay you aside, I suppose they have their "own reasons for so doing; and you ought to remember that you still live on the bounty of the nation. As "for these gentlemen, (meaning the prince and ambassador) who make so free with our constitution, laws, and "genius of our people, I think they might shew a little "more respect for their benefactors, who, I must own, "are to blame in harbouring, protecting and encouraging "such ungrateful vagrants as they are." At these words the chevalier in green started up in a great passion, and laying his hand on the hilt of his hanger, exclaimed, "Ha! "*foutre!*" The Englishman, on the other hand, grasping his cane, cried, "Don't *foutre* me, sirrah, or by G—d I'll "knock you down." The company interposed, the Frenchman sat down again, and his antagonist proceeded.—"Lookee, Monsieur, you know very well that had you "dared to speak so freely of the administration of your "own country in Paris, as you have of ours in London, "you would have been sent to the Bastile without ceremony, where you might have rotted in a dungeon, "and never seen the light of the sun again. Now, Sir, "take my word for it, although our constitution screens "us from oppression, we want not laws to chastise the "authors of seditious discourse; and if I hear another "syllable out of your mouth, in contempt or prejudice "of this kingdom, I will give you a convincing proof "of what I advance, and have you laid by the heels for "your presumption." This declaration had an effect on

the company, as ſudden as ſurpriſing. The young prince became ſupple as a ſpaniel, the ambaſſador trembled, the general ſat ſilent and abaſhed, and the doctor, who, it ſeems, had felt the rod of power, grew pale as death, and aſſured us all, that he had no intention to affront any perſon or people. "Your principles, doctor, (re-"ſumed the old gentleman) are no ſecret—I have nothing "to ſay upon that head; but am very much ſurpriſed "that a man who deſpiſes us ſo much, ſhould notwith-"ſtanding live among us, when he has no viſible motive "for ſo doing. Why don't you take up your habitation "in your beloved France, where you may rail at Eng-"land without cenſure?" To this the doctor thought fit to make no reply; and an unſocial ſilence enſued; which I perceiving, took notice, that it was pity ſuch idle diſputes, maintained very often for whim or diverſion, ſhould create any miſunderſtanding among gentlemen of good ſenſe! and propoſed to drink down all animoſity in another bottle. This motion was applauded by the whole company: the wine was brought, and the Engliſh champion declaring he had no ſpleen againſt any man for differing in opinion from him, any more than for difference of complexion, drank to the good health of all preſent; the compliment was returned, and the converſation once more became unreſerved, though more general than before. Among other topics, the ſubject of war was introduced, on which the general declaimed with great eloquence, recounting many of his own exploits by way of illuſtration. In the courſe of this harangue he happened to mention the word *epaulment*, upon which the teſty gentleman aſked the meaning of that term.—"I'll tell "you what an epaulment is, (replied he.)—I never ſaw "an epaulment but once—and that was at the ſiege of "Namur—In the council of war, Monſieur Cohorn, the "famous engineer, affirmed that the place could not be "taken.—Yes, (ſaid the Prince of Vaudemont,) it may "be taken by an epaulment. This was immediately put "in execution, and in twenty-four hours Marſhal Boufflers was fain to capitulate." Here he made a full ſtop, and the old gentleman repeated the queſtion, "But, pray, "what is an epaulment?" To this the officer made no

immedi-

immediate reply, but rung the bell and called for a bill, which being brought, he threw down his proportion of the reckoning, and telling the company he ſhould ſhew them what an empaviment is, when his Majeſty thought fit to intruſt him with the command of our army abroad, ſtrutted away with great dignity. I could not imagine why he was ſo ſhy of explaining one of the moſt ſimple terms of fortification; which I forthwith deſcribed as a ſide-work compoſed of earth, gabions, or faſcines: but I was very much ſurpriſed when I afterwards underſtood that his reſerve proceeded from his ignorance. Having paid our bill, we adjourned to the coffee-room, where my fellow-labourer inſiſted on treating me with a diſh, giving me to underſtand at the ſame time, that I had acquired his good opinion, both with reſpect to my principles and intellects. I thanked him for his compliment, and profeſſing myſelf an utter ſtranger in this part of the world, begged he would have the goodneſs to inform me of the quality and characters of the people who dined above. This requeſt was a real favour to one of his diſpoſition, which was no leſs communicative than curious; he therefore complied with great ſatisfaction, and let me know, to my extreme aſtoniſhment, that the ſuppoſed young Prince was a dancer on one of the theatres; and the ambaſſador no other than a fiddler belonging to the opera. "The doctor (ſaid he) is a Roman Catholic Prieſt, who "ſometimes appears in the character of an officer, and "aſſumes the name of captain; but more generally takes "the garb, title and behaviour of a phyſician, in which "capacity he wheedles himſelf into the confidence of "weak-minded people, and by arguments no leſs ſpecious than falſe, converts them from their religion and "allegiance. He has been in the hands of juſtice more "than once for ſuch practices; but he is a ſly dog, and "manages matters with ſuch art, that hitherto he has "eſcaped for a ſhort impriſonment. As for the general, "you may ſee he has owed his promotion more to his "intereſt than to his capacity; and now that the eyes of "the miniſtry are opened, his friends dead, or become "inconſiderable, he is ſtruck off the liſt, and obliged to "put up with a yearly penſion; in conſequence of this

" reduction, he is become malecontent, and inveighs a-
" gainſt the government in all companies with ſo little
" diſcretion, that I am ſurpriſed at the lenity of the ad-
" miniſtration in overlooking his inſolence; but the truth
" of the matter is, he owes his ſafety to his weakneſs
" and want of importance. He has ſeen a little, and but
" a little ſervice; and yet if you will take his word for
" it, there has not been a great action performed in the
" field ſince the revolution, in which he was not princi-
" pally concerned. When a ſtory is told of any great
" general, he immediately matches it with one of him-
" ſelf, though he is often unhappy in his invention, and
" commits ſuch groſs blunders in the detail, that every
" body is in pain for him. Cæſar, Pompey, and Alex-
" ander the Great are continually in his mouth; and as
" he reads a good deal without any judgment to digeſt
" it, his ideas are confuſed, and his harangues as unin-
" telligible as infinite; for once he begins, there is no
" chance of his leaving off ſpeaking, while one perſon
" remains to yield attention; therefore the only expedi-
" ent I know, of putting a ſtop to his loquacity, is to
" lay hold of ſome incongruity he has uttered, and de-
" mand an explanation; or aſk the meaning of ſome
" difficult term that he knows by name only; this will
" effectually put him to ſilence, if not to flight, as it hap-
" pened when I enquired about an epaulment. Had he
" been acquainted with the ſignification of that word,
" his triumph would have been intolerable, and we muſt
" have quitted the field firſt or been worried with impert-
" tinence." Having thus gratified my curioſity, the old gentleman began to diſcover his own, in queſtions relating to myſelf, to which I thought proper to return ambiguous anſwers. " I preſume, Sir, (ſaid he,) you have
" travelled."—I anſwered, " Yes."—" I dare ſay; you
" would find it very expenſive" (ſaid he.) I replied, "To
" be ſure one cannot travel without money."—" That I
" know by experience (ſaid he,) for I myſelf take a trip
" to Bath or Tunbridge every ſeaſon: and one muſt pay
" ſauce for what he has upon the road as well in other
" countries as in this—That's a very pretty ſtone in your
" ring,—give me leave, Sir,—the French have attained

" to

" to a wonderful ſkill in making compoſitions of that " kind.—Why now, this looks almoſt as well as a dia- " mond."—" Almoſt as well, Sir, (ſaid I,) why not al- " together? I am ſure if you underſtand any thing of " jewels, you muſt perceive at firſt ſight, that this ſtone " is a real diamond, and that of a very fine water.— " Take it in your hand and examine it." He did ſo, with ſome confuſion, and returned it, ſaying,—" I aſk " your pardon, I ſee it is a true brilliant of immenſe va- " lue." I imagined his reſpect for me increaſed after this enquiry; therefore, to captivate his eſteem the more, I told him, I would ſhew him a ſeal of compoſition, engraved after a very valuable antique; upon which I pul- led out my watch with a rich gold chain, adorned with three ſeals ſet in gold, and an opal ring. He viewed each of them with great eagerneſs, handled the chain, admired the chaſed caſe, and obſerved, that the whole muſt have coſt me a vaſt ſum of money. I affected indifference, and replied in a careleſs manner, " Some trifle of " ſixty or ſeventy guineas." Upon which he ſtared in my face for ſome time, and then aſked if I was an Engliſhman—I anſwered in the negative. " You are from " Ireland, then Sir, I preſume, (ſaid he.)" I made the ſame reply. " Oh! perhaps (ſaid he,) you were born " in one of our ſettlements abroad." I ſtill anſwered, No—He ſeemed very much ſurpriſed, and ſaid, he was ſure I was not a foreigner. I made no reply, but left him upon the tenter-hooks of impatient uncertainty. He could not contain his anxiety, but aſked pardon for the liberty he had taken, and to encourage me the more to diſcloſe my ſituation, diſplayed his own without reſerve. " I am (ſaid he) a ſingle man, I have a conſiderable an- " nuity on which I live according to my own inclina- " tion, and make the ends of the year meet very com- " fortably. As I have no eſtate to leave behind me, I " am not troubled with the importunate officiouſneſs of " relations, or legacy hunters; and I conſider the world " as made for me, not me for the world: it is my max- " im, therefore, to collect while I can, and let futurity " think for itſelf." While he thus indulged his own talkative vein, and at the ſame time, no doubt, expected a retaliation

retaliation from me, a young man entered, dreſſed in black velvet and an enormous tye-wig, with an air in which natural levity and affected ſolemnity were ſo jumbled together, that on the whole he appeared a burleſque on all decorum. This ridiculous oddity danced up to the table at which we ſat, and after a thouſand grimaces, aſked my friend by the name of Mr Medlar, if we were not engaged upon buſineſs. My companion put on a ſurly countenance, and replied, "No great buſineſs, doctor, "—but however."—"O then (cried the phyſician,) I "muſt beg your indulgence a little; pray pardon me, "gentlemen,—Sir (ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to me,) "your moſt humble ſervant, I hope you will forgive me, "Sir,—I muſt beg the favour to ſit—Sir—Sir, I have "ſomething of conſequence to impart to my friend Mr "Medlar,—Sir, I hope you will excuſe my freedom in "whiſpering, Sir." Before I had time to give this complaiſant perſon my permiſſion, Mr Medlar cried, "I'll "have no whiſpering—if you have any thing to ſay to "me, ſpeak with an audible voice." The doctor ſeemed a little diſconcerted at this exclamation, and turning again to me, made a thouſand apologies for pretending to make a myſtery of any thing, which he ſaid was owing to his ignorance of my connection with Mr Medlar; but now he underſtood I was a friend, he would communicate what he had to ſay in my hearing. He then began, after two or three hems, in this manner:—"You muſt "know, Sir, I am juſt come from dinner, at my Lady "Hazel's (then addreſſing himſelf to me,) a lady of "quality, Sir, at whoſe table I have the honour of "dining four times. There was my lady Stately, and "my lady Lemon, and Mrs Dainty, and Miſs Biddy "Giglet, upon my word a very good-natured young la"dy with a very pretty fortune. Sir.—There was alſo my "lord Swindle, Sir John Swing, and Maſter Billy Cha"ter, who is actually a very facetious young gentleman. "No, Sir, her ladyſhip ſeeing me exceſſively fatigued, for "ſhe was the laſt of fifteen patients (people of diſtinc"tion, Sir,) whom I had viſited this forenoon,—inſiſted "upon my trying dinner—though, upon my word, I pro"teſt I had no appetite; however, in compliance with

"her

" her ladyſhip's requeſt, Sir, I ſat down, and the converſa-
" tion turning on different ſubjects, among other things,
" Mr Chatter aſked very earneſtly when I ſaw Mr Med-
" lar? I told him I had not had the pleaſure of ſeeing
" you theſe nineteen hours and a half; for you may re-
" member, Sir, it was nearly about that time, I won't be
" poſitive as to a minute. No! (ſays he.) then I deſire
" you will go to his lodgings immediately after dinner,
" and ſee what is the matter with him, for he muſt cer-
" tainly be very bad from having ate laſt night ſuch a
" vaſt quantity of raw oyſters." The cruſty gentleman, who from the ſolemnity of his delivery expected ſomething extraordinary, no ſooner heard his concluſion, than he ſtarted up in a teſty humour, crying, "Pſhaw, pſhaw!
" d—n your oyſters;" and walked away after a ſhort compliment of "Your ſervant, Sir," to me. The doctor got up alſo, ſaying, "I vow and proteſt, upon my
" word, I am actually amazed." And followed Mr Medlar to the bar, which was hard by, where he was paying for the coffee; there he whiſpered ſo loud that I could overhear, "Pray who is this gentlemen?" His friend replied haſtily, "I might have known that before now, if
" it had not been for your impertinent intruſion,"—and walked away very much diſappointed. The ceremonious phyſician returned immediately and ſat down by me, aſking a thouſand pardons for leaving me alone; and giving me to underſtand, that what he had communicated to Mr Medlar, at the bar, was an affair of the laſt importance, that would admit of no delay. He then called for ſome coffee, and launched out into the virtues of that berry, which, he ſaid, in cold phlegmatic conſtitutions, like his, diſpelled the ſuperfluous moiſture, and braced the relaxed nerves. He let me know, that it was not generally known to the ancients; and derived its name from an Arabian word, which I might eaſily perceive by the ſound and termination. From this topic he tranſported in diſquiſitions to the verb *drink*, which he obſerved was improperly applied to the taking of coffee, in as much as people did not drink, but ſip or ſipple that liquor; that the genuine meaning of drinking is to quench one's thirſt, or commit a debauch by two or three [illegible] Latin

word, which conveyed the same idea, was *bibere* or *potare*; and that of the Greeks *pinein* or *poteein*; though he was apt to believe they were indifferently used on different occasions; for example, to drink a vast quantity, or, as the vulgar express it, to drink an ocean of liquor, was in Latin *potare*, and in Greek *poteein*: and, on the other hand, to use it moderately, was *bibere* and *pinein*; that this was only a conjecture of his own, which, however, seemed to be supported by the word *bibulous*, which is particularly applied to the pores of the skin, that can only drink a very small quantity of the circumambient moisture, by reason of the smallness of their diameters;—whereas, from the verb *poteein* is derived the substantive *potamos*, which signifies a river, or vast quantity of liquor. I could not help smiling at this learned and important investigation; and to recommend myself the more to my new acquaintance, whose disposition by this time I was well informed of, I observed, that what he alledged, did not, to the best of my remembrance, appear in the writings of the ancients; for Horace uses the words *poto* and *bibo* indifferently for the same purpose, as in the twentieth Ode of his first Book.

Vile potabis modicis Sabinum cantharis——
——Et prælo domitam calena tu bibes uvam.

That I had never heard of the verb *poteein*, but that *potamos*, *potema*, and *potos*, were derived from *pino*, *posi*, *peto-ka*; in consequence of which, the Greek poets never use any other word for festival drinking. Homer describes Nestor at his cups in these words:

Nestora d'ouk elathen gerale minunta peremenai,

And Anacreon mentions it on the same occasion, almost in every page,

Pon'i d' oinon ê dun
Oinon pinemen oinon.
Oi de' ago de pinon.

And in a thousand other places. The doctor, who, doubtless, intended by his criticism to give me an high idea of his erudition, was infinitely surprised to find his ill-conceal-ed

ed by one of my appearance; and, after a conſiderable pauſe, cried, "Upon my word, you are in the right, "Sir,—I find I have not conſidered this affair with my "uſual accuracy." Then accoſting me in Latin, which he ſpoke very well, the converſation was maintained full two hours on a variety of ſubjects, in that language; and indeed he ſpoke ſo judiciouſly, that I was convinced, notwithſtanding his whimſical appearance, and attention to trifles, of his being a man of extenſive knowledge, eſpecially in books; he looked upon me, as I afterwards underſtood from Mr Medlar, as a prodigy in learning, and propoſed that very night, if I was not engaged, to introduce me to ſeveral young gentlemen of fortune and faſhion, with whom he had an appointment at the Bedford Coffee-houſe.

CHAP. XLVI.

Wagtail introduces me to a ſet of fine gentlemen, with whom I ſpend the evening at the tavern—our converſation—the characters of my new companions—the doctor is repaid—the iſſue of our debauch.

I ACCEPTED his offer with pleaſure, and we went thither in a hackney coach, where I ſaw a great number of gay figures fluttering about, moſt of whom ſpoke to the doctor with great familiarity. Among the reſt, ſtood a group of them around the fire, whom I immediately knew to be the very perſons who had the night before, by their laughing, alarmed my ſuſpicions of the lady who had put herſelf under my protection. They no ſooner perceived me enter with Dr Wagtail, (for that was my companion's name,) than they tittered and whiſpered to one another; and I was not a little mortified to find that theſe were the gentlemen to whoſe acquaintance he deſigned to recommend me; for when he obſerved them together, he told me who they were, and I deſired to know by what name he would introduce me. I quiſtioned him in that particular, and he anſwered with great gravity, ſaying, "Gentlemen, your moſt obedient.—Give

" me leave to introduce my friend Mr Random to your " ſociety." Then turning to me, " Mr Random, this is " Mr Bragwell—Mr Banter, Sir—Mr Chatter—my friend, " Mr Slyboot, and Mr Ranter, Sir." I ſaluted each of them in order, and when I came to take Mr Slyboot by the hand, I perceived him thruſt his tongue in his cheek, to the no ſmall entertainment of the company; but I did not think proper to take any notice of it on this occaſion. Mr Ranter too, (who I afterwards learned was a player,) diſplayed his talents, by mimicking my air, features, and voice, while he returned my compliment: this I ſhould not have been ſo ſenſible of, had I not ſeen him behave in the ſame manner to my friend Wagtail, when he made up to them at firſt. But for once I let him enjoy the fruits of his dexterity without queſtion or controul, reſolved, however, to chaſtiſe his inſolence at a more convenient opportunity. Mr Slyboot gueſſing I was a ſtranger, aſked if I had lately been in France; and when I anſwered in the affirmative, enquired if I had ſeen the Luxemburgh gallery; I told him I had conſidered it more than once with great attention: upon this a converſation enſued, in which I diſcovered him to be a painter. While we were diſcourſing upon the particular pieces of this famous collection, I overheard Banter aſk Dr Wagtail, where he had picked up this Mr Random? To which queſtion the phyſician anſwered; " Upon my word, a " mighty pretty ſort of a gentleman—a man of fortune, " Sir,—he has made the grand tour—and ſeen the beſt " company in Europe, Sir."—" What, he told you ſo, " I ſuppoſe?" ſaid the other, " I take him to be neither " more nor leſs than a French *valet de chambre*."—" O! " barbarous, barbarous!" cried the doctor, " this is ac- " tually, upon my word, altogether unaccountable. I " know all his family perfectly well, Sir—He's of the " Randoms in the north—a very ancient houſe, Sir, and " a diſtant relation of mine." I was extremely nettled at the conjecture of Mr Banter, and began to entertain a very indifferent opinion of my company in general; but as I might poſſibly, by their means, acquire a more extenſive and agreeable acquaintance, I determined to bear theſe little mortifications as long as I could, without in-

juring

juring the dignity of my character. After having talked for ſome time upon the weather, plays, politics, and other coffee-houſe ſubjects, it was propoſed that we ſhould ſpend the evening at a noted tavern in the neighbourhood, whither we repaired in a body. Having taken poſſeſſion of a room, called for French wine, and beſpoke ſupper, the glaſs went about pretty freely, and the characters of my aſſociates opened upon me more and more. It ſoon appeared that the doctor was entertained as a butt for the painter and player to exerciſe their wit upon, for the diverſion of the company. Mr Banter began the game, by aſking him what was good for hoarſeneſs, lowneſs of ſpirits, and indigeſtion, he being troubled with all theſe complaints to a very great degree. Wagtail immediately undertook to explain the nature of his caſe, and in a very prolix manner, harangued upon prognoſtics, diagnoſtics, ſymptomatics, therapeutics, inanition, and repletion; then calculated the force of the ſtomach and lungs in their reſpective operations; aſcribed the player's malady to a diſorder in theſe organs proceeding from hard drinking and vociferation, and preſcribed a courſe of ſtomachics, with abſtinence from venery, wine, loud ſpeaking, laughing, ſinging, coughing, ſneezing, or hallooing. "Pah, "pah," cried Banter, interrupting him, "the remedy "is worſe than the diſeaſe—I wiſh I knew where to "find ſome tinder-water."—"Tinder-water!" ſaid the Doctor, "upon my word I don't apprehend you, "Mr Banter."—"Water extracted from tinder," replied the other, "an univerſal ſpecific for all diſtempers incident to man. It was invented by a learned "German monk, who, for a valuable conſideration, imparted the ſecret to Paracelſus." "Pardon me," cried the painter, "it was firſt uſed by Solomon, as appears "from a Greek manuſcript, in his own hand-writing, "lately found at the foot of mount Lebanon, by a peaſant who was digging for potatoes." "Well," ſaid Wagtail, "in all my vaſt reading, I never met with ſuch "a preparation! neither did I know till this minute, "that Solomon underſtood Greek, or that potatoes grew "in Paleſtine." Here Banter interpoſed, ſaying, he was ſurpriſed Doctor Wagtail ſhould make the leaſt doubt

of Solomon's underſtanding Greek, when he is repreſented to us as the wiſeſt and beſt educated prince in the world; and as for potatoes, they were tranſplanted thither from Ireland, in the time of the Cruſades, by ſome knights of that country. "I profeſs," ſaid the doctor, "there is nothing more likely—I would actually give a "vaſt ſum for a ſight of that manuſcript, which muſt be "ineſtimable—and if I underſtood the proceſs, would "ſet about it immediately." The player aſſured him that the proceſs was very ſimple—that he muſt cram a hundred weight of dry tinder in a glaſs retort, and diſtilling it by the force of animal heat, it would yield half a ſcruple of inſipid water, one drop of which is a full doſe. "Upon my integrity!" exclaimed the credulous doctor, "this is amazing and extraordinary! that a *caput mor-* "*tuum* ſhall yield any water at all—I muſt own, I have "always been an enemy to ſpecifics, which I thought "inconſiſtent with the nature of the animal econo-"my; but certainly the authority of Solomon is not "to be queſtioned—I wonder where I ſhall find a glaſs re-"tort large enough to contain ſuch a vaſt quantity of tin-"der, the conſumption of which muſt undoubtedly raiſe "the price of paper—or where ſhall I find animal heat "ſufficient, even to warm ſuch a maſs?" Slyboot informed him that he might have a retort blown for him as big as a church, and that the eaſieſt method for raiſing the vapour by animal heat, would be to place it in the middle of an infirmary for feveriſh perſons, who might lie upon matreſſes around, and in contact with it. He had no ſooner pronounced theſe words, than Wagtail exclaimed in a rapture! "An admirable expedient, "as I hope to be ſaved! I will poſitively put it in prac-"tice." This ſimplicity of the phyſician furniſhed excellent diverſion for the company, who in their turns ſneered at him in ironical compliments, which his vanity ſwallowed as the true ſentiments of their hearts. Mr Chatter, impatient of ſo long a ſilence, now broke out, and entertained us with a catalogue of all the people who danced at the laſt Hampſtead aſſembly, with a moſt circumſtantial account of the dreſs and ornaments of each, from the lappet of the ladies to the ſhoe-buckles of the

men;

men; concluding with telling Bragwell, that his miſtreſs Melinda was there, and ſeemed to miſs him; and ſoliciting his company at the next occaſion of that kind. "No, no, damme," ſaid Bragwell, "I have ſomething "elſe to mind than dangling after a parcel of giddy-"headed girls;—beſides, you know my temper is ſo un-"ruly, that I am apt to involve myſelf in ſcrapes, when "a woman is concerned. The laſt time I was there, I "had an affair with Tom Trippet." "O! I remem-"ber that," cried Banter, "you lugged out before the la-"dies; and I commend you for ſo doing, becauſe you had "an opportunity of ſhewing your manhood, without "running any riſk." "Riſk!" ſaid the other with a "fierce countenance, "d—n my blood! I fear no riſks. "I an't afraid of lugging out againſt any man that wears "a head, damme! 'tis well known I have drawn blood "more than once, and loſt ſome too; but what does "that ſignify?" The player begged this champion to employ him as his ſecond the next time he intended to kill, for he wanted to ſee a man die of a ſtab, that he might know how to act ſuch a part the more naturally on the ſtage. "Die!" replied the hero, "No, by "G—d! I know better things than to incur the verdict "of a Middleſex-jury. I ſhould look upon my fencing-"maſter to be an ignoramus ſon of a b—ch, if he had not "taught me to prick any part of my antagoniſt's body, "that I pleaſe to diſtinguiſh." "O ho!" cried Strapado, "if "that be the caſe, I have a favour to aſk: you muſt "know I am employed to paint a Jeſus on the croſs; "and my purpoſe is to repreſent him at that point of "time when the ſpear is thruſt into his ſide. Now I "ſhould be glad you would, in my preſence, pink ſome "impertinent fellow into convulſions, without endanger-"ing his life, that I may have an opportunity of taking "a good clever agony from nature: the doctor will direct "you where to enter, and how far to go; but pray let it "be as near the left ſide as poſſible." Wagtail, who took this propoſal ſeriouſly, obſerved, that it would be a very difficult matter to penetrate into the left ſide of the thorax, without hurting the heart, and of conſequence killing the patient; but he believed it was poſſible for a

man

man of a very nice hand, and exact knowledge of anatomy, to wound the diaphragma somewhere about the sk rts, which might induce a singultus, without being attended with death; that he was ready to demonstrate the insertion of that muscle to Mr Bragwell; but desired to have no concern with the experiment, which might essentially prejudice his reputation in case of a miscarriage. Bragwell was as much imposed upon by the painter's waggery as the doctor, and declined engaging in the affair, saying he had a very great regard for Mr Slyboot, but had laid it down as a maxim, never to fight except when his honour was engaged. A thousand jokes of this kind were passed; the wine circulated, supper was served in, we ate heartily, returned to the bottle, Bragwell became noisy and troublesome, Banter grew more and more severe, Banter rehearsed, Slyboot made faces at the whole company, I sung French catches, and Chatter kissed me with great affection; while the doctor with a woeful countenance, sat silent like a disciple of Pythagoras. At length it was proposed by Bragwell, that we should scour the laundress, beat the constable, maul the watch, and then reel soberly to bed.

While we deliberated upon this expedition, the waiter came into the room, and asked for doctor Wagtail: when he understood he was present, he told him there was a lady below to enquire for him; at which the physician started from his melancholy contemplation, and with a look of extreme confusion, assured the company he could not possibly be the person wanted, for he had no connection with any lady whatever, and bid the drawer tell her so.—"For shame!" cried Banter, "would you be "so impolite as to refuse a lady the hearing? perhaps "she comes for a consultation,—it must be some extra-"ordinary affair that brings a lady to a tavern at this time "o'night. Mr Banter, pray do the doctor's handsmains to "the lady, and squire her hither." The player immediately staggered out, and returned, leading in, with much ceremony, a tall strapping wench, whose appearance proclaimed her condition. We received her with the utmost solemnity, and with a good deal of intreaty she was persuaded to sit, when a profound silence ensued, during which she fixed

fixed her eyes, with a diſconſolate look, upon the doctor, who was utterly confounded at her behaviour, and returned her melancholy four-fold; at length, after a good many piteous ſighs, ſhe wiped her eyes, and accoſted him thus; "What! not one word of comfort? will "nothing ſoften that ſtony heart of thine? Not all my "tears! Not all my afflictions! Not the inevitable ruin "thou haſt brought upon me! Where are thy vows, "thou faithleſs, perjured man? Haſt thou no honour— "no conſcience—no remorſe for thy perfidious conduct "towards me?—anſwer me, wilt thou at laſt do me juſtice, "or muſt I have recourſe to heaven and hell for my re- "venge?" If poor Wagtail was amazed before ſhe ſpoke! what muſt his confuſion be on hearing this addreſs! His natural paleneſs changed into a ghaſtly clay colour, his eyes rolled, his lip trembled, and he anſwered in an accent not to be deſcribed: "Upon my word, honour, "and ſalvation, Madam, you are actually miſtaken in "my perſon. I have a moſt particular veneration for "your ſex, Madam, and am actually incapable of inju- "ring any lady in the ſmalleſt degree, Madam,—beſides, "Madam, to the beſt of my recollection, I never had "the honour of ſeeing you before, as I hope to be ſa- "ved, Madam."—"How, traitor (cried ſhe) doſt thou "diſown me, then?—Miſtaken! no,—too well I know "that fair bewitching face! too well I know that falſe "enchanting tongue! Alas! gentlemen, ſince the villain "compels me, by his unkindneſs, to expoſe myſelf and "him, know, that this betrayer, under the ſpecious "pretence of honourable addreſſes, won my heart, and "taking advantage of his conqueſt, robbed me of my "virgin treaſure, and afterwards abandoned me to my "fate! I am now four months gone with child by him, "turned out of doors by my relations, and left a prey "to miſery and want! Yes, thou Barbarian (ſhe ſaid, "turning to Wagtail) thou tiger, thou Succubus! too "well thou knowſt my ſituation—but I will tear out "thy falſe heart, and deliver the world from ſuch "a monſter." So ſaying, ſhe ſtarted forward at the Doctor, who, with incredible agility, ſkipped over the table, and got behind Bragwell, while the reſt of the com-

deavoured to appeaſe the furious heroine. Although every body in the company affected the utmoſt ſurpriſe, I could eaſily perceive it was a ſcheme concerted among them, to produce diverſion at the doctor's expence; and being under no concern about the conſequence, I entered into the confederacy, and enjoyed the diſtreſs of Wagtail, who, with tears in his eyes, begged the protection of the company, declaring himſelf as innocent of the crime laid to his charge as the fœtus in utero; and hinting, at the ſame time, that nature had not put it in his power to be guilty of ſuch a treſpaſs—"Nature! (cried the lady,) "there was no nature in the caſe—he abuſed me by the "help of charms and ſpells; elſe how is it poſſible, that "any woman could have liſtened to the addreſſes of "ſuch a ſcare-crow!—Were thoſe owliſh eyes made for "ogling; that carrion complexion to be admired; or that "mouth, like a horſe-ſhoe, to be kiſſed? No, no, you "owe your ſucceſs to your philtres, to your drugs and "incantations; and not to your natural talents, which "are in every reſpect mean and contemptible?" The Doctor now thought he had got an opportunity of vindicating himſelf effectually; and deſired the complainant to compoſe herſelf but for half an hour, in which he undertook to prove the abſurdity of believing in the power of incantations, which were only idle dreams of ignorance and ſuperſtition. He accordingly pronounced a very learned diſcourſe upon the nature of ideas, the powers and independence of the mind, the properties of ſtimulating medicines, the difference between a proneneſs to venery, which many ſimples would create, and a paſſion limited to one object, which can only be the reſult of ſenſe and reflection; and concluded with a pathetic remonſtrance, ſetting forth his unhappineſs of being perſecuted with the reſentment of a lady whom he had never injured, nor even ſeen before that occaſion, and whoſe faculties were, in all likelihood, ſo much impaired by her misfortunes, that an innocent perſon was in danger of being ruined by her diſorder. He had no ſooner finiſhed his harangue, than the forlorn proteſs began her lamentations afreſh, and cautioned the company againſt his eloquence, which, ſhe ſaid, was able to bias the moſt impartial

impartial bench in Chriſtendom. Banter adviſed him to eſpouſe her immediately, as the only means to ſalve his reputation, and offered to accompany him to the Fleet for that purpoſe: but Slyboot propoſed that a father ſhould be purchaſed for the child, and a comfortable alimony ſettled on the mother. Ranter promiſed to adopt the infant *gratis*. Wagtail was ready to worſhip him for his generoſity; and though he perſiſted in proteſting his innocence, condeſcended to every thing rather than his unblemiſhed character ſhould be called in queſtion. The lady rejected the expedient, and inſiſted on matrimony. Bragwell took up the cudgels for the Doctor, and undertook to rid him of her importunity for half a guinea; upon which Wagtail, with great eagerneſs, pulled out his purſe and put it into the hand of his friend, who taking half a piece out of it, gave it to the plaintiff, and bid her thank God for her good fortune. When ſhe had received this bounty, ſhe affected to weep, and begged, ſince the phyſician had renounced her, he would at leaſt vouchſafe her a parting kiſs; this he was prevailed upon to grant; with great reluctance, and went up, with his uſual ſolemnity, to ſalute her; when ſhe laid hold of his cheek with her teeth, and held faſt, while he roared with anguiſh, to the unſpeakable diverſion of all preſent. When ſhe thought proper to releaſe him, ſhe dropped a low courteſy to the company, and quitted the room; leaving the Doctor in the utmoſt horror, not ſo much on account of the pain, as the apprehenſion of the conſequence of the bite, for by this time he was convinced of her being mad. Banter preſcribed the actual cautery, and put the pocker in the fire to be heated, in order to ſear the place. The player was of opinion, that Bragwell ſhould ſcoop out the part affected with the point of his ſword; but the painter prevented both theſe dreadful operations, by recommending a balſam he had in his pocket, which never failed to cure the bite of a mad dog: with theſe words he pulled out a ſmall bladder full of black paint, with which he inſtantly anointed not only the ſore, but the greateſt part of the patient's face, and left it in a frightful condition. In ſhort, the poor creature was ſo harraſſed with fear and vexation, that I pi-

tied him extremely, and ſent him home in a chair, contrary to the inclination of every body preſent.

This freedom of mine gave umbrage to Bragwell, who teſtified his diſpleaſure, by ſwearing a few threats, without making any application; which was no ſooner perceived by Mr Slyboot, who ſat by me, than with a view of promoting a quarrel, he whiſpered to me, that he thought Bragwell uſed me very ill, but every man was the beſt judge of his own affairs. I anſwered aloud, that I would neither ſuffer Mr Bragwell nor him to uſe me ill with impunity, and that I ſtood in no need of his counſel in regard to the regulation of my conduct. He thought proper to aſk a thouſand pardons, and aſſured me he meant no offence; while Bragwell feigned himſelf aſleep, that he might not be obliged to take notice of what paſſed. But the player, who had more animal ſpirits, and leſs prudence than Slyboot, unwilling to let the affair reſt where he had dropt it, jogged Mr Bragwell, and told him ſoftly, that I called him names, and threatened to cudgel him. This I underſtood by his ſtarting up and crying, "Blood and wounds! you lie—No man durſt "treat me ſo ignominiouſly: Mr Random, did you call "me names, and threaten to drub me?" I denied the imputation, and propoſed to puniſh the ſcoundrel who endeavoured to foment diſturbance in the company. Bragwell ſignified his approbation, and drew his ſword; I did the ſame, and accoſted the actor in theſe words, "Lookee, Mr Ranter, I know you poſſeſs all the mi-"mickry and miſchievous qualities of an ape, becauſe I "have obſerved you put them all in practice more than "once to-night, on me and others; now I want to ſee "you reſemble one in nimbleneſs alſo; therefore I de-"ſire you to leap over this ſword without heſitation;" ſo ſaying, I held it parallel to the horizon, at the diſtance of about three feet from the floor, and called, "Once—"twice—thrice, and away;"—but inſtead of complying with my commands, he ſnatched his hat and hanger, and aſſuming the look, ſwagger, and phraſe of Piſtol, burſt out into the following exclamation, "Ha! muſt I then "perform inglorious prank, of Sylvan ape in mountain "foreſt caught! Death rock me aſleep, abridge my dole-

"ful

" ful days, and lay my head in fury's lap—Have we not " Hieren here?" This buffoonery did not anſwer his expectation, for by this time the company was bent on ſeeing him in a new character. Mr Banter deſired me to hold my ſword a foot or two higher, that he might have the better opportunity of exerting himſelf. The painter told him, if he performed well, he would recommend him as a vaulter to the proprietor of Sadler's Wells; and Bragwell crying, " Leap for the king," applied the point of his ſword to the player's poſteriors, with ſuch ſucceſs, that he ſprang over in a trice, and finding the door unguarded, vaniſhed in a twinkling; glad, no doubt, of having paid his ſhare of the reckoning ſo eaſily.

It being now near two o'clock in the morning, we diſcharged the bill, and ſallied out into the ſtreet. The painter ſlunk away without taking his leave.—Billy Chatter being unable to ſpeak or ſtand, was ſent to a Bagnio; and Banter and I accompanied Bragwell to Moll King's coffee-houſe, where, after he had kicked half a dozen hungry whores, we left him aſleep on a bench, and directed our courſe towards Charing-Croſs, near which place both he and I lodged.

The natural dryneſs of my companion being overcome by liquor, he honoured me by the way with many compliments and profeſſions of friendſhip, for which I made ſuitable acknowledgments, and told him, I thought myſelf happy in having, by my behaviour, removed the unfavourable opinion he entertained of me at firſt ſight. He was ſurpriſed at this declaration, and begged me to explain myſelf: Upon which I mentioned what I had overheard him ſay of me to Wagtail, in the coffee-houſe. He laughed, and made an apology for his freedom, aſſuring me, that my appearance had very much prepoſſeſſed him in my favour; and what he ſaid was only intended as a joke on the Doctor's ſolemnity. I was highly pleaſed at being undeceived in this particular, and not a little proud of the good opinion of this wit, who ſhook me by the hand at parting, and promiſed to meet me next day at the ordinary.

CHAP. XLVII.

Strap *communicates to me a conqueſt he had made on a chandler's widow—finds himſelf miſerably miſtaken—I go to an* Opera—*admire* Melinda—*am cautioned by* Banter *go to the Aſſembly at* Hampſtead—*dance with that young lady—receive an inſolent meſſage from* Bragwell, *whoſe mettle is ſoon cooled—am in favour with my miſtreſs, whom I viſit next day, and am bubbled out of eighteen guineas at cards.—*Strap *triumphs at my ſucceſs, but is aſtoniſhed at my expence—*Banter *comes to my lodging, is very ſarcaſtical at my expence, and borrows five guineas from me as a proof of his friendſhip.*

IN the morning before I got up, Strap came into my chamber, and finding me awake, hemmed ſeveral times, ſcratched his head, caſt his eyes upon the ground, and with a very fooliſh kind of a ſimper let me know he had ſomething to communicate. "By your counte-"nance," ſaid I, "I expect to hear good tidings."—"Indifferent," replied he, tittering, "that is, thereafter as ſhall be. You muſt know, I have ſome thoughts "of altering my condition."—"What!" cried I, aſtoniſhed, "a matrimonial ſcheme? O rare Strap! thou "haſt got the heels of me at laſt."—"N——no leſs, "I'll aſſure you," ſaid he, burſting into a laugh of ſelf-approbation, "a tallow-chandler's widow, that lives hard "by, has taken a liking to me.——A fine jolly dame, as "plump as a partridge. She has a well furniſhed houſe, "a brisk trade, and a good deal of the ready. I may "have her for the aſking. She told a friend of mine, a "brother footman, that ſhe would take me out of a "ſhinking-clout. But I refuſed to give my final anſwer, "till I knew your opinion of the matter." I congratulated Monſieur o'Ellrapes upon his conqueſt, and approved of the ſcheme, provided he could be aſſured of theſe circumſtances of her fortune; but adviſed him to do nothing raſhly, and give me an opportunity of ſeeing the lady before matters ſhould be brought to a concluſion. He aſſured me he would do nothing without my conſent

and

and approbation, and that very morning, while I was at breakfaſt, introduced his inamorata to my acquaintance. She was a ſhort thick woman, about the age of thirty-ſix, and had a particular prominence of belly, which I perceived at firſt ſight, not without ſome ſuſpicion of foul play. I deſired her, however, to ſit, and treated her with a diſh of tea; the diſcourſe turning on the good qualities of Strap, whom I repreſented as a prodigy of ſobriety, induſtry, and virtue. When ſhe took her leave, he followed her to the door, and returned licking his lips, and aſking if I did not think her a delicious creature. I made no myſtery of my apprehenſions, but declared my ſentiments of her without reſerve: at which he was not ſurpriſed, telling me he had obſerved the ſame ſymptom, but was informed by his friend that ſhe was only liver-grown, and would in a few months be as ſmall in the waiſt as ever. "Yes," ſaid I, "a few weeks, I believe "will do the buſineſs. In ſhort, Strap, it is my opinion, "that you are egregiouſly impoſed upon; and that this "friend is no other than a cheat who wants to palm his "trull upon you for a wife, that he may at once deli-"ver himſelf from the importunities of the mother, and "the expence of her banting; for which reaſon I would "not have you truſt implicitly to the report he makes "of her wealth, which is inconſiſtent with his behavi-"our; nor run your head precipitately into a nooſe, "that may afterwards exchanged for the hang-"man's." He looked very much ſtartled at my inſinuation, and promiſed to look before he leaped; ſaying with ſome heat, "Odd, if I find his intention is "to betray me, we ſhall ſee which of us is the better "man." My prediction was verified in leſs than a fortnight; her gave birth to a baby, to the unſpeakable amazement of Strap, who was before this happened, inclinable to believe I had refined a little too much in my penetration. His falſe friend diſappeared; and in a few days after, an execution was iſſued againſt her goods and houſehold furniture, which were ſeized by the creditors.

Meanwhile I met with my friend Hunter at the ordinary, and in the evening went to the opera with him and

Mr

Mr Chatter, who pointed out Melinda in one of the boxes, and offered to introduce me to her, obſerving at the ſame time, that ſhe was a reigning toaſt worth ten thouſand pounds. This piece of information made my heart bound with joy, and I diſcovered great eagerneſs to accept the propoſal: upon which he aſſured me I ſhould dance with her at the next aſſembly, if he had any influence in that quarter; ſo ſaying, he went round, ſpoke to her ſome minutes, and, as I imagined, pointed at me; then returning, told me, to my inexpreſſible pleaſure, that I might depend upon what he had promiſed, for ſhe was now engaged as my partner. Banter, in a whiſper, gave me to underſtand that ſhe was an incorrigible coquette, who would grant the ſame favour to any young fellow in England, of a tolerable appearance, merely to engage him among the herd of her admirers, that ſhe might have the pleaſure of ſeeing them increaſe daily; that ſhe was of a cold inſenſible diſpoſition, dead to every paſſion but vanity, and ſo blind to merit, that he would lay any wager, the wealthieſt fool would carry her at laſt. I attributed a good deal of this intelligence to the ſatirical turn of my friend, or reſentment for having himſelf ſuffered a rebuff from the lady in queſtion; and at any rate truſted ſo much to my own accompliſhments, as to believe no woman could reſiſt the ardour of my addreſſes.

Full of this confidence, I repaired to Hampſtead, in company with Billy Chatter, my Lord Hobble, and doctor Wagtail. Here I ſaw a very brilliant aſſembly, before whom I had the honour to walk a minuet with Melinda, who charmed me with her frank manner of receiving me, and eaſineſs of behaviour. Before the country [illegible] I received a meſſage by a perſon I did not [illegible] Bragwell, who was preſent, importing, that [illegible] who ſaw him preſumed to dance with Melinda, [illegible] were in perſon; and that I would do well to relinquiſh her without noiſe, becauſe he had a mind to [illegible] my dance with her. This extraordinary [illegible], which was delivered in the lady's hearing, did [illegible] me, who by this time was pretty well [illegible] with the character of my rival. I there-

fore

fore, without the leaſt ſymptom of concern, bid the gentleman tell Mr Bragwell, that while I was ſo happy as to obtain the lady's conſent, I ſhould not be ſolicitous about his; and deſired the bearer himſelf to bring me no ſuch impertinent meſſages for the future. Melinda affected a ſort of confuſion, and pretended to wonder that Mr Bragwell ſhould give himſelf ſuch liberties, with regard to her, who had no manner of connection with the fellow.

I laid hold of this opportunity to diſplay my valour, and offered to call him to an account for his inſolence, which ſhe abſolutely refuſed, under pretence of conſulting my ſafety; though I could perceive by the ſparkling of her eyes, that ſhe would not have thought herſelf affronted in being the ſubject of a duel. I was by no means pleaſed with this diſcovery of her thoughts, which not only argued the moſt unjuſtifiable vanity, but likewiſe the moſt barbarous indifference; however, I was allured by her fortune, and reſolved to gratify her pride, in making her the occaſion of a public quarrel between me and Bragwell, who, I was pretty certain, would never drive matters to a dangerous extremity.

While we danced together, I obſerved this formidable rival at one end of the room, encircled with a cluſter of beaux, to whom he talked with great vehemence, caſting many big looks at me from time to time: I gueſſed the ſubject of his diſcourſe, and as ſoon as I had handed my partner to her ſeat, ſtrutted up to the place where he ſtood, and cocking my hat in his face, demanded aloud, if he had any thing to ſay to me. He anſwered with a ſullen tone, "No, Sir, at preſent, Sir," and turned about upon his heel. "Well," ſaid I, "you know where I am to be found at any time." His companions ſtared at one another, and I returned to the lady, whoſe features brightened at my approach, and immediately a whiſper ran through the whole room; after which ſo many eyes were turned upon me, that I was ready to ſink with confuſion. When the ball broke up, I led her to her coach, and, like a true French gallant, would have got up behind it, in order to protect her from violence on the road; but ſhe abſolutely refuſed my offer, and

[illegible]

preſſed her concern that there was not an empty ſeat for me within it.

Next day in the afternoon, I waited on her at her lodgings, by permiſſion, in company with Chatter, and was very civilly received by her mother, with whom ſhe lived; there were a good many faſhionable people preſent, chiefly young fellows; and immediately after tea, a couple of card tables were ſet, at one of which I had the honour to play with Melinda, who in leſs than three hours made ſhift to plunder me of eight guineas. I was well enough content to loſe a little money with a good grace, that I might have an opportunity to ſay ſoft things in the mean time, which are ſtill more welcome, when attended with good luck; but I was by no means ſatisfied with her fair play, a circumſtance that ſhocked me not a little, and greatly impaired my opinion of her diſintereſtedneſs and delicacy. However, I was reſolved to profit by this behaviour, and treat her in my turn with leſs ceremony; accordingly I laid cloſe ſiege to her, and finding her not at all diſguſted with the groſs incenſe I offered, that very night made a declaration of love in plain terms. She received my addreſſes with great gaiety, and pretended to laugh them off, but at the ſame time treated me with ſuch particular complacency, that I was perſuaded I had made a conqueſt of her heart, and concluded myſelf the happieſt man alive. Elevated with theſe flattering ideas, I ſat down again to cards, after ſupper, and with great chearfulneſs ſuffered myſelf to be cheated of ten guineas more.

It was late before I took my leave, after being favoured with a general invitation; and when I got into bed, the adventures of the day hindered me from ſleeping. Sometimes I pleaſed myſelf with the hopes of poſſeſſing a fine woman with ten thouſand pounds; then I would ruminate on the character I had heard of her from Banter, and compare it with the circumſtances of her conduct towards me, which ſeemed to bear too great a reſemblance to the picture he had drawn. This introduced a melancholy reflection on the expence I had undergone, and the ſcanty ſtock of my funds to ſupport it, which, by the bye, [illegible] my own. In ſhort, I found myſelf

myſelf involved in doubts and perplexities, that kept me awake the greateſt part of the night.

In the morning, Strap, with whom I had not converſed theſe two days, preſented himſelf with the utenſils for ſhaving me; upon which, I aſked his opinion of the lady whom he had ſeen me conduct to her coach at Hampſtead. "Odd! ſhe's a delicious creature (cried "he,) and, as I am informed, a great fortune. I am "ſorry you did not inſiſt on going home with her. I "dare ſay ſhe would not have refuſed your company; "for ſhe ſeems to be a good-humoured ſoul." "There's "a time for all things (ſaid I.) You muſt know, Strap, "I was in company with her till one o'clock this morn-"ing." I had no ſooner pronounced theſe words, than he began to caper about the room, and ſnap his fingers, crying in a tranſport, "The day's our own!—the day's "our own!" I gave him to underſtand that his triumph was a little premature, and that I had more difficulties to ſurmount than he was aware of; then I recounted to him the intelligence I had received from Banter. At which he changed colour, ſhook his head, and obſerved there was no faith in woman. I told him, I was reſolved to make a bold puſh notwithſtanding, although I foreſaw it would lead me into a great expence; and bid him gueſs the ſum I had loſt laſt night at cards. He ſcratched his chin, and profeſſed his abhorrence of cards, the very name of which being mentioned made him ſweat with vexation, as it recalled the money-dropper to his remembrance: "But however, (ſaid he,) you have to do "with other gueſs-people now. Why, I ſuppoſe, if you "had a bad run laſt night, you would ſcarce come off "for leſs than ten or twelve ſhillings." I was mortified at this piece of ſimplicity, which I imagined, at that time, was all affected, by way of reprimand for my folly; and aſked with ſome heat, if he thought I had ſpent the evening in a cellar with chairmen and bunters; giving him to know, at the ſame time, that my expence amounted to eighteen guineas. It would require the pencil of Hogarth to expreſs the aſtoniſhment and concern of Strap, on hearing this piece of news; the baſon in which he was preparing the lather for my chin dropped out of his

hands, and he remained ſome time immoveable in that ludicrous attitude, with his mouth open, and his eyes thruſt forward conſiderably beyond their ſtation; but remembering my diſpoſition, which was touchy and impatient of controul, he ſmothered his chagrin, and attempted to recollect himſelf. With this view he endeavoured to laugh, but in ſpite of his teeth, broke out into a whimper, took up his waſh-ball and pewter-pot, ſcrubbed my beard with the one, and diſcharged the other upon my face. I took no notice of his confuſion, but after he had fully recovered himſelf, put him in mind of his right, and aſſured him of my readineſs to ſurrender his effects whenever he ſhould think proper to demand them. He was nettled at my inſinuation, which he thought proceeded from my diſtruſt of his friendſhip; and begged I would never talk to him in that ſtrain again, unleſs I had a mind to break his heart.

This good creature's unalterable friendſhip for me, affected me with the moſt grateful ſentiments, and acted as a ſpur to my reſolution of acquiring a fortune, that I might have it in my power to manifeſt my generoſity in my turn. For this purpoſe, I determined to bring matters to a ſpeedy concluſion with Melinda; well knowing that a few ſuch nights as the laſt would effectually incapacitate me from proſecuting that, or any other advantageous amour.

While my meditation was buſied in planning out my future conduct, Mr Banter favoured me with a viſit; and after breakfaſt, aſked me how I had paſſed the preceding evening? I anſwered, I was very agreeably entertained at a private houſe, "Yes," ſaid he, with a ſarcaſtic ſmile, "you deſerved ſomething extraordinary for "the price you paid." I was ſurpriſed at his remark, and pretended ignorance of his meaning, "Come, come, "Random," continued he, "you need not make a myſ"tery of it to me, the whole town has it.—I wiſh that "fooliſh affair between you and Bragwell at Hampſtead "had been leſs public. It has ſet all the buſy-bodies at "work to find out your real character and ſituation; and "you cannot imagine what conjectures have already cir"culated here at your expence: one ſuſpects you to be

a Jeſuit

"a Jeſuit in diſguiſe; another thinks you to be an agent "for the Pretender; a third believes you to be an up- "ſtart gameſter, becauſe nobody knows any thing of "your family or fortune; a fourth is of opinion that "you are an Iriſh fortune-hunter." This laſt hypothe- ſis touched me ſo near, that to conceal my confuſion, I was fain to interrupt his detail, and damn the world for an envious meddling community, that would not ſuffer a gentleman to live without moleſtation. He took no no- tice of this apoſtrophe, but went on: "For my own part, "I neither know, nor deſire to know, who, or what you "are; this I am certain of, that few people make a myſ- "tery of their origin and ſituation, who can boaſt of any "thing advantageous in either; and my own opinion of "the matter is, that you have raiſed yourſelf by your "induſtry, from nothing to the appearance you now main- "tain, and which you endeavour to ſupport by ſome "matrimonial ſcheme." Here he fixed his eyes ſted- faſtly upon me, and perceiving my face covered with bluſhes, told me, now he was confirmed in his opinion: "Look ye, Random," ſaid he, "I have divined your "plan, and am confident it will never ſucceed.—You "are too honeſt and too ignorant of the town, to prac- "tiſe the neceſſary cheats of your profeſſion, and detect "the conſpiracies that will be formed againſt you.—Be- "ſides, you are downright baſhful—what the devil! ſet "up for a fortune-hunter, before you have conquered "the ſenſe of ſhame! Perhaps you are entitled by your "merit, and I believe you are, to a richer and better "wife than Melinda; but take my word for it, ſhe is not "to be won at that rate; or, if you are ſo lucky as to "carry her, between you and me you may ſay, as Teague "did, *By my ſoul, I have gained a loſs!* She would take "care to ſpend her own fortune in a twinkling, and "ſoon make you ſick of her extravagance." I was a- larmed by his diſcourſe, while I reſented the freedom of it, and expreſſed my diſguſt by telling him, he was miſtaken in my intentions, and deſired he would give me leave to regulate my conduct according to the dictates of my own reaſon. He made an apology for the liberty he had taken, and aſcribed it to the warmth of his friend-

ſhip for me; as an uncommon inſtance of which he borrowed five guineas, aſſuring me, there were very few people in the world whom he would ſo far favour with his confidence; I gave him the money, and profeſſed myſelf ſo well convinced of his ſincerity, that he had no occaſion to put it to ſuch extraordinary proofs for the future. "I thought," ſaid he, "to have aſked five pieces "more, but hearing you were bubbled of eighteen laſt "night, I preſumed you might be out of caſh, and re-"ſolved to model my demand accordingly." I could not help admiring the cavalier behaviour of this ſpark, of whom I deſired to know his reaſon for ſaying I was bubbled. Whereupon he gave me to underſtand, that before he came to my lodgings he had beat up Tom Toſſle, who having been preſent, informed him of the particulars, rehearſed all the fine things I ſaid to Melinda, with which he propoſed to entertain the town; and, among other circumſtances, aſſured him, my miſtreſs cheated with ſo little art, that no body but a mere novice could have been impoſed upon.

The thoughts of becoming a ſubject of raillery for coxcombs, and loſing my money to boot, ſtung me to the quick; but I made a virtue of my indignation, and ſwore that no man ſhould with impunity, either aſperſe the character of Melinda, or turn my behaviour into ridicule. He replied in a dry manner, that I would find it an Herculean taſk to chaſtiſe every body who ſhould laugh at my expence; and as for the character of Melinda, he did not ſee how it could ſuffer by what was laid to her charge; for that cheating at cards, ſo far from being reckoned a blemiſh among people of faſhion, was looked upon as an honourable indication of ſuperior genius and addreſs. "But let us wave this ſubject," ſaid he, "and "go to the coffee-houſe, in order to make a party for "dinner."

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVIII.

We repair to the coffee-houſe, where we overhear a curious diſpute between Wagtail *and* Medlar, *which is referred to our deciſion—the doctor gives us an account of his experiment*—Medlar *is roaſted by* Banter *at the ordinary—the old gentleman's advice to me.*

BEING as willing to drop the theme, as he to propoſe it, I accompanied him thither, where we found Mr Medlar and doctor Wagtail, diſputing upon the word Cuſtard, which the phyſician affirmed ſhould be ſpelled with a G, becauſe it was derived from the Latin verb *guſtare*, "to taſte." But Medlar pleaded cuſtom in behalf of C, obſerving, that by the doctor's rule, we ought to change pudding into budding, becauſe it is derived from the French word *boudin*; and in that caſe, why not retain the original orthography and pronunciation of all the foreign words we have adopted; by which means, our language would become a diſſonant jargon without ſtandard or propriety? The controverſy was referred to us; and Banter, notwithſtanding his real opinion to the contrary, decided in favour of Wagtail: upon which the peeviſh annuitant aroſe, and uttering the monoſyllable, *piſh!* with great emphaſis, removed to another table.

We then inquired of the doctor, what progreſs he had made in the experiment of diſtilling tinder water; and he told us, he had been at all the glaſs-houſes about town, but could find nobody who would undertake to blow a glaſs retort large enough to hold the third part of the quantity preſcribed; but he intended to try the proceſs on as much as would produce five drops, which would be ſufficient to prove the ſpecific, and then he would make it a parliamentary affair; that he had already purchaſed a conſiderable weight of rags, in reducing of which to tinder, he had met with a misfortune which had obliged him to change his lodgings; for he had gathered them on a heap on the floor, and ſet fire to them with a candle, on the ſuppoſition that the board would ſuſtain no damage, becauſe it is the nature of flame to aſcend; but by ſome very extraordinary accident, the whole was inflamed,

vaded, and began to blaze with great violence, which diſordered him ſo much, that he had not preſence of mind enough to call for aſſiſtance, and the whole houſe muſt have been conſumed with him in the midſt of it, had not the ſmoke, that rolled out of the windows in clouds, alarmed the neighbourhood, and brought people to his ſuccour: That he had loſt a pair of black velvet breeches and a tye-wig in the hurry, beſides the expence of the rags, which were rendered uſeleſs by the water uſed to quench the flame, and the damage of the floor, which he was compelled to repair. That his landlord, believing him diſtracted, had inſiſted on his quitting his apartment at a minute's warning, which put him to incredible inconvenience; but now he was ſettled in a very comfortable houſe, and had the uſe of a large paved yard for preparing his tinder: ſo that he hoped in a very ſhort time to reap the fruits of his labour.

After having congratulated the doctor on his proſpect, and read the papers, we repaired to an auction of pictures, where we entertained ourſelves an hour or two; from thence we adjourned to the Mall, and after two or three turns, went back to dinner, Banter aſſuring us, that he intended to roaſt Medlar at the ordinary; and indeed we were no ſooner ſet, than this Cynic began to execute his purpoſe, by telling the old gentleman he looked extremely well, conſidering the little ſleep he had enjoyed laſt night. To this compliment Medlar made no reply, but by a ſtare, accompanied with a ſignificant grin; and Banter went on thus: "I don't know "whether moſt to admire the charity of your mind, or "the vigour of your body. Upon my ſoul, Mr Med- "lar, you do generous things with the beſt taſte of any "man I know! You extend your compaſſion to real ob- "jects, and exact only ſuch returns as they are capable "of making. You muſt know, gentlemen, (ſaid he, "turning to the company) I had been up moſt part of "the night with a friend who is bad of a fever, and on "my return home this morning, I chanced to paſs by a "gin-ſhop, ſtill open, whence iſſued a confuſed noiſe of "mirth and jollity: upon which I popped in my head, "and perceived Mr Medlar dancing bare-headed in the midſt

" midſt of ten or twenty ragged bunters, who rejoiced " at his expence. But indeed, Mr Medlar, you ought " not to ſacrifice your conſtitution to your benevolence. " Conſider you grow old apace, and therefore ought to " have a reverend care of your health, which muſt cer- " tainly be very much impaired by theſe nocturnal expe- " ditions." The teſty ſenior could no longer contain himſelf, but cried haſtily, " 'Tis well known that your " tongue is no ſlander." " I think (ſaid the other) you " might ſpare that obſervation, as you are very ſenſible " that my tongue has done you ſignal ſervice on many " occaſions. You may remember, that when you made " your addreſſes to the fat widow, who kept a public " houſe at Iſlington, there was a report ſpread very much " to the prejudice of your manhood; which coming to " the ears of your miſtreſs, you were diſcarded immedi- " ately; and I brought matters to a reconciliation, by " aſſuring her you had three baſtards at nurſe in the " country; how you ruined your own affairs afterwards, " it is neither my buſineſs nor inclination to relate." This anecdote, which had no other foundation than in Banter's own invention, afforded a good deal of mirth to every body preſent, and provoked Mr Medlar beyond all diſſerance; ſo that he ſtarted up in a mighty paſſion, and forgetting that his mouth was full, beſpattered thoſe who ſat next him, while he diſcharged his indignation in a volley of oaths, and called Banter inſignificant puppy, impertinent jackanapes, and an hundred ſuch appellations; telling the company he had invented theſe falſe malicious aſperſions, becauſe he would not lend him money to ſquander away upon rooks and whores. " A very like- " ly ſtory, (ſaid Banter,) that I ſhould attempt to bor- " row money of a man who is obliged to practiſe a thou- " ſand ſhifts to make his weekly allowance hold out till " Saturday's night. Sometimes he ſups four and twenty " hours at a time, by which means he ſaves three meals, " beſides coffee houſe expence. Sometimes he is fain " to put up with bread and cheeſe and ſmall beer for " dinner, and ſometimes he regales on two penny-worth " of ox-cheek in a cellar.' " " You are a lying miſcreant " (cried Medlar in an extaſy of rage) I can always com-

" mand

" mand money enough to pay your tailor's bill, which " I am ſure is no trifle; and I have a good mind to give " you a convincing proof of my circumſtances by proſe- " cuting you for defamation, ſirrah." By this time the violence of his wrath had deprived him of his appetite, and he ſat ſilent unable to ſwallow one mouthful, while his tormentor enjoyed his mortification, and increaſed his chagrin, by adviſing him to lay in plentifully for his next day's faſt.

Dinner being ended, we came down ſtairs to the coffee-room, and Banter went away to keep an appointment, ſaying, he ſuppoſed he ſhould ſee Wagtail and me in the evening at the Bedford coffee-houſe. He was no ſooner gone, than the old gentleman took me aſide, and ſaid he was ſorry to ſee me ſo intimate with that fellow, who was one of the moſt graceleſs rakes about town, and had already waſted a good eſtate and conſtitution upon harlots. That he had been the ruin of many a young man, by introducing them into debauched company, and ſetting a lewd example of all manner of wickedneſs; and, that unleſs I was on my guard, he would ſtrip me in a ſhort time both of my money and reputation. I thanked him for his information, and promiſed to conduct myſelf accordingly, wiſhing, however, his caution had been a few hours more early, by which means I might have ſaved five guineas. Notwithſtanding this intelligence, I was inclinable to impute ſome part of the charge to Medlar's revenge for the liberties taken with him at dinner; and therefore, as ſoon as I could diſengage myſelf, applied to Wagtail for his opinion of the character in queſtion; reſolved to compare their accounts, allowing for the prejudice of each, and form my judgment upon both without adhering ſtrictly to either. The doctor aſſured me that he was a very pretty gentleman, of family and fortune; a ſcholar, a wit, a critic, and perfectly well acquainted with the town; that his honour and courage were unqueſtionable, though ſome extravagancies he had been guilty of, and his talent for ſatire, had procured him enemies, and made ſome people ſhy of his acquaintance. From theſe different ſketches, I concluded that Banter was a young fellow of ſome parts, who had ſpent his fortune,

tune, but retained his appetites, and fallen out with the world becauſe he could not enjoy it to his wiſh.

I went to the Bedford coffee-houſe in the evening, where I met my friends, from thence proceeded to the play, and afterwards carried them home to my lodgings, where we ſupped with great harmony and ſatisfaction.

CHAP. XLIX.

I receive a challenge—the conſequences of it—the quarrel being made up, I am put in arreſt, by the care and affection of Strap—*but immediately releaſed upon explaining my affair—the behaviour of* Mr O'Regan *and his two friends—I viſit* Melinda, *whom I divert with an account of the duel—I propoſe marriage—ſhe refers the matter to her mother, of whom I make a ſolemn demand of her daughter— the old lady's behaviour—I am diſcarded, reſent their diſdain.*

WHEN I was ready to go abroad next day, Strap brought me a letter, directed *To Mr Random, Eſq; Thoſe*—Which upon opening, I found contained a challenge, couched in theſe very extraordinary terms:

" SIR,

" WHEREAS I am informed that you make love to " Miſs Melinda Gooſetrap, this is to let you " know, that ſhe is under promiſe of marriage to me; " and that I am at this preſent writing, at the back of " Montague-houſe, with a pair of good piſtols in my " hand, and if you will keep your appointment, I will " make your tongue confeſs (after the breath is out of " your body) that you do not deſerve her as well as

" Yours, &c.

" ROURK O'REGAN."

I gueſſed from the ſtile and ſubſcription of this billet, that my rival was a true Mileſian, and was not a lit-

tle uneaſy at the contents, eſpecially that part, where he aſſerts his right to my miſtreſs by promiſe, a circumſtance I did not know how to reconcile to her penetration. However, this was no time for me to decline the invitation, becauſe the ſucceſs of my addreſſes might in a great meaſure depend upon my behaviour in that affair. I therefore immediately loaded my piſtols, and betook myſelf in a hackney-coach to the place appointed, where I found a tall, raw-boned man, with a hard-featured countenance, and black buſhy beard, walking by himſelf, wrapped up in a ſhabby great coat, over which his hair deſcended in a leathern queue from his head, that was covered with a greaſy hat trimmed with a tarniſhed *point d'eſpagne*. He no ſooner perceived me advancing, than, without any preamble, he pulled a piſtol from his boſom, and preſenting at me, ſnapt it. Alarmed at this rude ſalutation, I made a ſtand, and before he could adjuſt his other piece, fired one of mine at him, without doing any damage. By this time he was ready to fire with his ſecond, that flaſhed in the pan without going off: upon which he called, with a true Tipperary cadence, "Fire "away, honey," and began to hammer his flint with great deliberation. But I was reſolved to make uſe of the advantage fortune had given me; and therefore ſtept up, without throwing away my fire, deſiring him to aſk his life, or prepare for another world; but this ſtout Hibernian refuſed to condeſcend, and complained bitterly of my having quitted my ground before he could return my ſhot, ſaying, I ought to go back to my ſtation, and let him have an equal chance with me. I endeavoured to perſuade him that I had given him a double chance already; and it was my buſineſs to prevent him from enjoying a third; but now, ſince I had an opportunity, I demanded a parley, and deſired to know his condition, and reaſon for calling me to the field, who, to the beſt of my remembrance, ſo far from having done him an injury, had never before ſeen him. He told me, that he was a gentleman of fortune, who had ſpent all he had, and hearing that Melinda had got ten thouſand pounds, he intended to make himſelf maſter of that ſum by eſpouſing her, and was determined, in an honourable way,

to

to cut the throats of all thoſe that ſtood between him and his hopes. I then demanded to know the foundation of his hopes; and now that I had ſeen him, being more and more aſtoniſhed at the circumſtance of the promiſe, deſired he would explain that myſtery. He gave me to underſtand, that he truſted entirely to his birth and perſonal merit; that he had frequently wrote to Melinda, ſetting forth his claim and pretenſions, but ſhe was never kind enough to ſend an anſwer, or even to admit him into her preſence; and that the promiſe he mentioned in his letter, was made by his friend Mr Gaghagan, who aſſured him, that no woman could reſiſt a man of his appearance. I could not forbear laughing to exceſs at the ſimplicity of my rival, who did not ſeem to reliſh my mirth, but began to be very ſerious: upon which I endeavoured to appeaſe him by giving him my word and honour, that ſo far from prejudicing his addreſſes to the lady, I would repreſent him to her in the moſt favourable light I could, with any regard to truth; but he muſt not be ſurpriſed if ſhe ſhould remain blind to his deſerts, for nothing was more capricious than a woman's mind, and the affection of that ſex was ſeldom purchaſed with virtue alone. That my declaration might have the better effect, I took notice of his diſhabille, and profeſſing ſorrow at ſeeing a gentleman reduced, ſlipped two guineas into his hand, at the ſight of which, he threw away his piſtols, and hugging me in his arms, cried, "Arrah, by "Jeſus, now you are the beſt friend I have met with "theſe ſeven long years." When I had ſuffered ſome minutes in his embrace, he quitted me, and picking up his ruſty arms, wiſhed the devil might burn him, if ever he ſhould give me any further trouble about womankind.

The quarrel being thus amicably compoſed, I begged leave to look at his piſtols, which I found ſo greaſy and ſo foul, that I believe it was happy for him neither of them was diſcharged, for one of them would certainly have ſplit in the going off, and he would in all probability have loſt his hand in the exploſion; but what gave me a lively idea of the man's character was to find upon examination, that one of them had been loaded

without being primed, and the other primed without a charge.

While we walked homeward together, I expreſſed a deſire of knowing my new friend's hiſtory; and he informed me of his having ſerved in the German army as a volunteer againſt the Turks; that for his behaviour at the ſiege of Belgrade, he had been honoured with an enſign's commiſſion, and afterwards promoted to the rank of lieutenant, in which ſtation, it was his misfortune to affront his captain, who challenged him to the field, and was killed in the duel, upon which he was obliged to retreat;—that he had been in England ſome years ſoliciting his friends for proviſion in the Britiſh army; but being hitherto unſucceſsful, he was deſired by Mr Gaghagan to turn his thoughts to matrimony, and make his fortune by an advantageous match; in conſequence of which advice, he had made up to Melinda; and having heard, by means of an Iriſh footman in the family, that I was her chief favourite, had called me out in hopes of removing, by my death, the greateſt obſtruction to his deſires; but now he was convinced of my honour and generoſity, he ſwore by the bleſſed Virgin, he would think of her no more if there was not another woman in the world. As a further proof of his veracity, which I did not at all doubt, he opened an old iron ſnuff-box, and pulled out his commiſſion in the Imperial army, and his captain's challenge, which he preſerved as teſtimonials of his character. I was ſo well convinced of this poor man's honeſty and courage, that I determined to ſpeak in his behalf to ſome of my acquaintance, who might recommend his caſe to the conſideration of thoſe who could provide for him; and in the mean time to accommodate him with a few cloaths, by which his appearance would be much mended, and himſelf enabled to renew his ſolicitations in perſon.

As we walked along, converſing ſociably together, we were met by a file of muſqueteers, and Strap at their head, who no ſooner approached, than with a frantic look, he cried, "Seize them!——In the name of God! ſeize them!"—We were accordingly ſurrounded, and I put in arreſt by the corporal, who was commanding officer;

ficer; but captain O'Regan diſengaged himſelf, and ran with ſuch ſpeed towards Tottenham-court road, that he was out of ſight in a moment. When my arms were delivered up, and myſelf ſecured, Strap became a little more compoſed, and aſked pardon for the liberty he had taken, which he hoped I would excuſe, as it proceeded from his affection: he then told me that, ſuſpecting the letter (which by the bye was brought by the author himſelf,) contained ſomething extraordinary, he had peeped through the key-hole, and ſeen me load my piſtols; upon which he ran down to Whitehall, and applied to the officer on guard for a party to put me in arreſt; but before he returned, I was gone in a coach; that he had enquired which way I went, and having heard that duels were commonly fought at the back of Montague-houſe, he conducted the guard to this place, where he thanked God for having found me ſafe and ſound. I let him know, that I forgave his officious concern for once, but cautioned him in pretty ſevere terms from making me the ſubject of idle converſation for the future; then, turning to the corporal, I thanked him for his care, and gave him a crown to drink with his men, aſſuring him that the rencontre was over long before he came up, and every thing compromiſed, as he might have obſerved by our behaviour; as a farther proof of which, he would find upon examination, that one of my piſtols had been diſcharged; but this civil perſon, without giving himſelf or me any further trouble, received the bounty with a thouſand bows and acknowledgments, and returning the piſtols releaſed me immediately.

He was not gone an hundred yards when my friend O'Regan came up, in order to reſcue me, with two Tatterdemalions whom he had engaged for that purpoſe, about the purlieus of St Giles's: one of them was armed with a muſquet that wanted a lock, and another with a ruſty broad-ſword; but their dreſs ſurpaſſed all deſcription. When he underſtood I was already free, he made an apology for his abrupt departure, and introduced me to his two companions: firſt, to counſellor Fitzclabber, who he told me was then employed in compiling a hiſtory of the kings of Munſter, from Iriſh manuſcripts; and

and then to his friend Mr Gaghagan, who was a profound philoſopher and politician, and had projected many excellent ſchemes for the good of his country. But it ſeems theſe literati had been very ill rewarded for their ingenuous labours; for between them both, there was but one ſhirt, and half a pair of breeches. I thanked them very kindly for their readineſs to aſſiſt me, and having offered my ſervice in my turn, wiſhed them a good morrow, deſiring O'Regan to accompany me to my lodgings, where he was fitted with decent cloaths from my wardrobe, ſo much to his ſatisfaction, that he ſwore eternal gratitude and friendſhip to me, and at my requeſt recounted all the particulars of his life.

In the afternoon I waited on Melinda, who received me with great kindneſs and familiarity, and laughed exceſſively at my adventure with the Iriſhman, to whoſe wiſhes ſhe was no ſtranger, having more than a dozen letters in her poſſeſſion, which he had wrote to her on the ſubject of love, and which, for my entertainment, ſhe ſubmitted to my peruſal. Having made ourſelves merry at the expence of this poor admirer, I ſeized the opportunity of her mother's going out of the room, and introduced my own paſſion, which I recommended to her with all the ardour and eloquence I was maſter of. —I flattered, ſighed, ſwore, intreated, and acted a thouſand extravagancies in hopes of making ſome impreſſion on her heart; but ſhe heard every thing I ſaid without diſcovering the leaſt emotion, and other company came in before ſhe would vouchſafe one ſerious reply. After tea, the cards were brought in, according to cuſtom, and it was my good fortune to have Melinda for my partner; by which means, inſtead of loſing, I came off with five guineas clear gain.

I ſoon became acquainted with a good many people of faſhion, and ſpent my time in the modiſh diverſions of the town, ſuch as plays, operas, maſquerades, drums, aſſemblies and puppet ſhows; chiefly in company with Melinda, whom I cultivated with all the eagerneſs and addreſs that my proſpect could inſpire, and my education afford; I ſpared neither my perſon nor my purſe, to gratify her vanity and pride; my rivals were intimidated, and indeed

indeed outſhone; but, after all, I began to fear that the dear creature had not a heart to loſe. At laſt, finding myſelf unable to ſupport the expence of this amour much longer, I was determined to bring the matter to a criſis; and one evening, while we were *tête a tête*, complained of her indifference, deſcribed the tortures of ſuſpence to a love-ſick mind, and preſſed her to diſcloſe her ſentiments of matrimony and me, with ſuch earneſtneſs, that ſhe could not with all her art ſhift the ſubject; but was obliged to come to an eclairciſſement. She let me know with a careleſs air, that ſhe had no objection to my perſon, and if I could ſatisfy her mother in other particulars, I ſhould not find her averſe to the match; but ſhe was reſolved to do nothing in an affair of ſuch momentous concern, without the advice and conſent of her parent. This was not a very agreeable declaration to me, whoſe aim had been to win her inclination firſt, and then ſecure my conqueſt by a private marriage, to which I flattered myſelf ſhe would expreſs no reluctance. That I might not, however, deſert my cauſe before it was deſperate, I waited on the mother, and with great formality demanded the daughter in marriage: the good lady, who was a very notable woman, behaved with great ſtate and civility; thanked me for the honour I intended her family, and ſaid, ſhe did not doubt that I was in all reſpects qualified to make a woman happy; but it concerned her as a parent, anxious about the welfare of her child, to enquire into the particulars of my fortune, and know what ſettlement I propoſed to make. To this intimation, which would have utterly diſconcerted me, if I had not expected it, I replied without heſitation, that though my fortune was very ſmall, I was a gentleman by birth and education, would maintain her daughter in the ſphere of a gentlewoman, and ſettle her own dowry on her and her heirs for ever. This careful matron did not ſeem to reliſh my propoſal, but obſerved with a demure countenance, that there was no neceſſity for ſettling that upon her child which was her own already; however, if I pleaſed, her lawyer ſhould confer with mine upon the matter; and in the mean time, ſhe deſired I would favour her with the peruſal of my rent-roll. Notwithſtanding the

vexation

vexation I was under, I could ſcarce forbear laughing in her face, at the mention of my rent-roll, which was indeed a ſevere piece of ſatire upon my pretenſions. I frankly owned I had no land eſtate; and told her, that I could not exactly ſpecify the ſum I was maſter of, until I had regulated my affairs, which were at preſent in ſome diſorder; but that I would take an opportunity of ſatisfying her on that head very ſoon.

It was not long before I took my leave; and returned to my lodgings in a very melancholy mood, perſuaded that I had nothing more to expect from that quarter: I was confirmed in this opinion next day, when I went back with a view of explaining myſelf more fully to the old gentlewoman; and was told by the footman that his ladies were not at home, although I had ſeen Melinda through the blinds at a parlour window, as I went up to the door. Incenſed at this affront, I quitted the door, without ſaying one word, and as I repaſſed the parlour, bowed to Miſs, who ſtill remained in the ſame ſituation, ſecurely ſcreened, as ſhe thought, from my view.

This diſappointment gave me more uneaſineſs on Strap's account than my own; for I was in no danger of dying for love of Melinda; on the contrary, the remembrance of my charming Narciſſa was a continual check upon my conſcience, during the whole courſe of my addreſſes; and perhaps contributed to the bad ſucceſs of my ſcheme, by controuling my raptures, and condemning my deſign.

There was a neceſſity for acquainting my companion with every thing that happened to me, and I performed this piece of duty in an affected paſſion, ſwearing I would be his pack-horſe no longer, and deſiring him to take the management of his affairs into his own hand. This fineſſe had the deſired effect, for inſtead of grumbling over my miſcarriage, Strap was frightened at the paſſion I feigned, and begged me for the love of God to be appeaſed; obſerving, that although we had ſuffered a great loſs, it was not irreparable; and if fortune frowned to-day, ſhe might perhaps ſmile to-morrow. I pretended to acquieſce in his remarks, praiſe his equanimity, and promiſe to improve by misfortune. He, on the other hand, pretended

to be perfectly well ſatisfied with my conduct, and conjured me to follow the dictates of my own reflection; but in ſpite of all his affectation, I could perceive his inward affliction, and his viſage ſenſibly encreaſed in longitude from that day.

CHAP. L.

I long to be revenged on Melinda—*apply to* Banter *for his aſſiſtance—he contrives a ſcheme for that purpoſe, which is put in execution with great ſucceſs—I make an attempt on the heart of Miſs* Gripewell, *but am diſappointed—grow melancholy at my diſappointment, and have recourſe to the bottle—receive a billet-doux—am raviſhed with the contents—find myſelf involved in an intrigue, which I imagined would make my fortune—am confounded at my miſtake, which baniſhes all thoughts of matrimony.*

IN the mean time, my attention was wholly engroſſed in ſearch of another miſtreſs, and the deſire of being revenged on Melinda, in both which ſchemes I was very much aſſiſted by Billy Chatter, who was ſuch a neceſſary creature among the ladies, that in all private dances he engaged the men. To him therefore I applied, deſiring he would introduce me to a partner of ſome figure, at the next private aſſembly, for the ſake of a frolic, the intention of which I would afterwards communicate. Billy, who had heard ſomething of a difference between Melinda and me, immediately ſmoaked part of my deſign, and thinking I only wanted to alarm her jealouſy a little, promiſed to gratify my deſire, by matching me with a partner worth thirty thouſand pounds, whom the ladies of this end of the town had lately taken into their management and protection. Upon further inquiry, I found this perſon's name was Miſs Biddy Gripewell; that her father, who had been a pawn-broker, died inteſtate, by which means all his ſubſtance deſcended to this daughter, who was ſo little a favourite, that could the old man have prevailed with his own rapacious diſpoſition, to part with as much money as would have paid the expence of a will,

ſhe would not have inherited the ſixth part of his fortune; that during his life, ſo far from being educated in a way ſuitable to ſuch great expectations, ſhe was obliged to live like a ſervant wench, and do the moſt menial offices in the family. But his funeral was no ſooner performed, than ſhe aſſumed the fine lady, and found ſo many people of both ſexes to flatter, careſs, and inſtruct her, that, for want of diſcretion and experience, ſhe was grown inſufferably vain and arrogant, and pretended to no leſs than a duke or earl at leaſt, for her huſband;—that ſhe had the misfortune to be neglected by the Engliſh quality, but a certain poor Scottiſh lord was then making intereſt to be introduced to her acquaintance. In the mean time, ſhe was fallen into the hands of a notable lady, who had already diſpoſed of her to a lieutenant of foot, a diſtant relation of her ladyſhip's, though Miſs, as yet, knew nothing of the affair;—and laſtly, that if I propoſed to dance with her, I muſt give him leave to repreſent me as a knight or foreign count at leaſt. I was raviſhed at this piece of information, and conſented, for one night, to perſonate a French marquis, that I might the eaſier fulfil my revenge.

Having made the appointment with Chatter, I went to Banter's lodging, having by this time conceived a great opinion of his penetration and knowledge; and after I had enjoined ſecrecy, told him every circumſtance of my diſgrace with Melinda, and imparted the plan I had projected to mortify that proud coquette, deſiring his advice in improving, and aſſiſtance in executing the ſcheme. Nothing could be more agreeable to his miſanthropical temper, than an account of her behaviour and my reſentment. He applauded my reſolution, and propoſed that I ſhould not only provide myſelf in a proper partner, but alſo procure ſuch an one for Miſs Gooſetrap, as would infallibly intail upon her the ridicule of all her acquaintance: For this purpoſe he mentioned his barber, who, he ſaid, was an exceeding coxcomb, lately come from Paris, whoſe abſurd affectation and grimace would eaſily paſs upon her, for the ſprightly politeneſs of a gentleman improved by travel. I hugged him for this hint, and he aſſured me, it would be no difficult matter to make

him

him believe, that Melinda having ſeen him by accident, was captivated by his appearance, and longed for his acquaintance. He actually engaged him on this pretence, and painted his good fortune in ſuch colours, that the poor ſhaver was quite beſide himſelf with joy. He was immediately fitted with a tawdry ſuit of clothes belonging to Banter, and by him recommended to Chatter, as a very pretty fellow, juſt returned from his travels. Maſter Billy, who acted as a gentleman-uſher to a great many of the fair ſex in and about town, undertook, at once, to beſpeak Melinda in his behalf; and every thing happened according to my wiſh.

At the time appointed, I appeared, dreſſed to the beſt advantage; and in the character of Marquis, had the honour of opening the ball with the rich heireſs, who attracted the eyes of the whole company, by the prodigious number of jewels with which ſhe was adorned. Among others, I perceived Melinda; who could no more conceal her envy than aſtoniſhment at my ſucceſs: Her curioſity was ſtill more flagrant and tormenting, for ſhe had never ſeen Miſs Gripewell before: and Chatter, who alone could give her any ſatisfaction on that head, was engaged in converſation at the other end of the room. I obſerved her impatience, and exulted in her chagrin; and after my partner was ſet, took the opportunity of paſſing by her to make a ſlight bow without ſtopping; which compleated my triumph and her indignation. She changed colour, bridled up, aſſumed an air of diſdain, and flirted her fan with ſuch fury, that it went to pieces in a moment, to the no ſmall entertainment of thoſe who ſat near and obſerved her.

At length the metamorphoſed barber took her out, and acted his part with ſuch ridiculous extravagance, that the mirth of the whole company was excited at his expence, and his partner ſo much aſhamed, that before the country dances began, ſhe retired in great confuſion, under pretence of being taken ſuddenly ill, and was followed by her gallant, who, no doubt, imagined her indiſpoſition was nothing but love; and laid hold of the occaſion of conducting her home, to comfort her with an aſſurance of his entertaining a reciprocal paſſion. They

were no ſooner gone, than an inquiſitive whiſper of "Who is he?" ran round the room, and Chatter could give no other intelligence about him, than that he was a man of fortune, juſt returned from his travels: I, who alone was acquainted with his real quality, affected ignorance, well knowing, that female curioſity would not reſt ſatisfied with ſuch a general account, and that the diſcovery would proceed with a better grace from any body than me.

Meanwhile I was tempted by the richneſs of the prize to practiſe on Miſs Gripewell's heart, but ſoon found it too well fortified with pride and indifference to yield to any efforts in my own character, and I neither would nor could preſerve the title I had borrowed longer than that night.

As I expected, every thing came to light next day. The barber, in pure ſimplicity of heart, detected himſelf to Melinda, and diſcovered the foundation of his hopes; ſhe ſickened at the affront, and was aſhamed to ſhew her face in public for many weeks after this accident. Poor Chatter found it impoſſible to juſtify himſelf to her ſatisfaction; was in utter diſgrace with Miſs Gripewell, for having impoſed me upon her as a nobleman; and ſuffered very much in his character and influence among the ladies in general.

Finding my finances diminiſhed more than one half, and my project as little advanced as on the firſt day of my arrival in town, I began to deſpair of my ſucceſs, and grew melancholy at the proſpect of approaching want. To diſpel the horrors of this fiend, I had recourſe to the bottle, and kept more company than ever. I became particularly attached to the play-houſe, converſed with the actors behind the ſcenes, got acquainted with a body of templars, and in a ſhort time commenced a profeſſed wit and critic. Indeed I may ſay, without vanity, that I was much better qualified than any one of my companions, who were, generally ſpeaking, of all the creatures I ever converſed with, the moſt ignorant and aſſuming. By means of theſe avocations I got the better of care, and learned to ſeparate my ideas in ſuch a manner, that whenever I was attacked by a gloomy reflection, I could ſhove it

aſide,

aſide, and call in ſome agreeable reverie to my aſſiſtance. This was not the caſe with Strap, who practiſed a thouſand ſhifts to conceal the ſorrow that preyed upon his carcaſe, and reduced him to the reſemblance of a mere ſkeleton.

While I thus poſted, in a thoughtleſs manner, towards poverty, I one day received by the penny-poſt, a letter written in a woman's hand, containing a great many high-flown compliments, warm proteſtations of love, couched in a very poetical ſtile, an earneſt deſire of knowing whether or not my heart was engaged, by leaving an anſwer at a certain place, directed to R. B. and the whole ſubſcribed, "Your incognita." I was tranſported with joy on reading the contents of this billet-doux, which I admired as a maſter piece of tenderneſs and elegance, and was already up to the ears in love with the author, whom my imagination repreſented as a lady of fortune in the bloom of youth and beauty. Elevated with this conjecture, I went to work, and exhauſted my invention in compoſing an anſwer ſuitable to the ſublimity of her ſtile, and the ardour of her ſentiments. I expreſſed my admiration of her wit, in terms the moſt hyperbolical, and while I acknowledged myſelf unworthy of her regard, declared myſelf enamoured of her underſtanding; and in the moſt pathetic manner, implored the honour of an interview. Having finiſhed this performance, and communicated it to Strap, who ſkipped about for joy, I diſpatched him with it to the place appointed, which was the houſe of a milliner not far from Bond-ſtreet, and deſired him to keep watch near the door for ſome time, that he might diſcover the perſon who would call for it. In leſs than an hour he returned, with a joyful countenance, and told me, that ſoon after he had delivered the letter a chairman was called, to whom it was given, with directions to carry it to the houſe of a rich gentleman in the neighbourhood, whither he (Strap) followed him, and ſaw it put into the hands of a waiting-woman, who paid the meſſenger and ſhut the door: that upon enquiry at an ale-houſe hard by, where he called for a pint of beer, he underſtood, that the gentleman to whom the houſe belonged, had an only daughter, very handſome, who

who would inherit his whole eſtate; and who certainly was the author of the billet I had received. I was of the ſame opinion, and hugging myſelf in the happy proſpect, dreſſed immediately, and paſſed in great ſtate by the houſe that contained my unknown admirer. Nor was my vanity diſappointed; for I perceived a beautiful young creature ſtanding at one of the windows of the dining-room, who, I imagined, obſerved me with more than common curioſity. That I might indulge her view, and at the ſame time feaſt my own, I affected to ſtop, and give orders to Strap in the ſtreet, juſt oppoſite to her ſtation, by which means I had an opportunity of ſeeing her more diſtinctly, and of congratulating myſelf on having made a conqueſt of ſo much perfection. In a few moments ſhe retired, and I betook myſelf to the ordinary in a rapture of hope, which deprived me of my appetite for that meal, and ſent me home in the evening to indulge my contemplation.

Early next day, I was favoured with another epiſtle from my unknown charmer, ſignifying her unutterable joy at the receipt of mine, which, while it made a tender of my heart, convinced her of the value of it. Above all things, ſhe profeſſed extreme pleaſure in finding me ſo much attached to her underſtanding; a circumſtance that not only flattered her in the moſt ſenſible part, but at the ſame time argued my own ſagacity. As for the interview I deſired, ſhe aſſured me, that I could not be more eager for ſuch an occaſion than ſhe; but ſhe muſt not only ſacrifice a little more to decorum, but be ſatisfied of my honourable intentions, before ſhe could grant that requeſt: mean while, ſhe gave me to underſtand, that although ſhe might owe ſome deference to the opinion of certain perſons, ſhe was reſolved, in an affair that ſo nearly concerned her happineſs, to conſult her own inclination preferable to the advice of the whole world; eſpecially as ſhe was urged to ſuch condeſcenſion by no conſideration of fortune, what ſhe depended upon, being her own without reſtriction or controul. Struck with admiration at the philoſophy and ſelf-denial of my miſtreſs, who ſeemed inſenſible of the beauty ſhe poſſeſſed; and in particular, ravithed with that piece of intelligence, by which

which I learned her fortune was independent, I reſumed the pen, launched out into encomiums on the dignity of her ſentiments, affected to undervalue the charms of external beauty, pretended to ground my paſſion on the qualities of her mind, complained of her rigour, in ſacrificing my repoſe to an over-ſcrupulous regard to decorum, and declared the purity of my deſigns in the moſt ſolemn and pathetic vows. This performance being ſealed and directed, was ſent to the place appointed, by Strap, who, that we might be ſtill the more confirmed in our belief, renewed his watch, and in a little time brought back the ſame information as before, with this addition, that Miſs Sparkle, (the name of my ſuppoſed correſpondent) looking out at the window, no ſooner ſaw the meſſenger arrive, than ſhe ſhut the caſement in a ſort of beautiful confuſion, and diſappeared; eager, no doubt, to hear from the dear object of her love.

My doubts now vaniſhed, the long-expected port appeared, and I looked upon myſelf as perfectly ſecure of that happineſs I had been in queſt of ſo long. After dinner, I ſauntered in company with doctor Wagtail to that part of the town in which my inamorata lived; and as he was a mere regiſter, enquired of him into the name, character, and fortune, of every body who poſſeſſed a good houſe in the ſtreets through which we paſſed. When it came to his turn to mention Sir John Sparkle, he repreſented him as a man of an immenſe eſtate and narrow diſpoſition, who mewed up his only child, a fine young lady, from the converſation of mankind, under the ſtrict watch and inſpection of an old governante, who was either ſo honeſt, envious, or inſatiable, that no body had been, as yet, able to make her a friend, or get acceſs to her charge, though numbers attempted it every day; not ſo much on account of her expectations from her father, who being a widower, might marry again, and have ſons, as for a fortune of twelve thouſand pounds left her by an uncle, of which ſhe could not be deprived. This piece of news exactly tallying with the laſt part of the letter I had been honoured with in the morning, had ſuch an effect on me, that any man, except Wagtail, might have obſerved my emotion; but his attention was

too much engroſſed on the contemplation of his own importance, to be affected with the deportment of any other body, unleſs it happened to be ſo particular that he could not help taking notice of it.

When I had diſengaged myſelf from him, whoſe converſation grew inſipid to me, I went home, and made Strap acquainted with the fruits of my reſearches. This faithful Squire was almoſt choaked with tranſport, and even wept for joy; but whether on account of himſelf or me I ſhall not pretend to determine. Next day a third *billet-doux* was brought to me, containing many expreſſions of tenderneſs, mingled with ſome affecting doubts about the artifice of man, the inconſtancy of youth, and the jealouſy often attending the moſt ſincere paſſion; withal deſiring I would excuſe her, if ſhe ſhould try me a little longer, before ſhe declared herſelf beyond the power of retracting. Theſe intereſting ſcruples added fuel to flame, and impatience to my hope; I redoubled my complaint of her indifference, and preſſed her to an aſſignation with ſuch fervid intreaties, that in a few days ſhe conſented to meet me at the houſe of that milliner who had forwarded all my letters. During the interval between the date of her promiſe and the hour of appointment, my pride ſoared beyond all reaſon and deſcription; I loſt all remembrance of the gentle Narciſſa, and my thoughts were wholly employed in planning triumphs over the malice and contempt of the world.

At length the happy hour arrived, I flew to the place of rendezvous, and was conducted into an apartment, where I had not waited ten minutes, when I heard the ruſtling of ſilk, and the ſound of feet aſcending the ſtairs: my heart took the alarm, and beat quick, my cheeks glowed, my nerves thrilled, and my knees ſhook with extacy! I perceived the door opening, ſaw a gold brocade petticoat advance, and ſprang forward to embrace my charmer. Heaven and earth! how ſhall I paint my ſituation, when I found Mrs Sparkle converted into a wrinkled hag turned of ſeventy! I was ſtruck dumb with amazement and petrified with horror! This ancient Urganda perceived my diſorder, and approaching with a languiſhing air, ſeized my hand, aſking in a ſqueaking tone, if I

was indiſpoſed. Her monſtrous affectation compleated the diſguſt I had conceived for her at her firſt appearance; and it was a long time before I could command myſelf ſo much as to behave with common civility: at length, however, I recollected myſelf, and pronounced an apology for my behaviour, which, I ſaid, proceeded from a dizzineſs that ſeized me all on a ſudden. My hoary Dulcinea, who, no doubt, had been alarmed at my confuſion, no ſooner learned the cauſe to which I now aſcribed it, than ſhe diſcovered her joy in a thouſand amorous coquetries, and aſſumed the ſprightly arts of a girl of ſixteen. One while ſhe ogled me with her dim eyes, quenched in rheum; then, as if ſhe was aſhamed of that freedom, ſhe affected to look down, bluſh, and play with her fan, then toſs her head, that I might not perceive a palſy that ſhook it, aſk ſome childiſh queſtions with a liſping accent, giggle and grin with her mouth ſhut, to conceal the ravages of time upon her teeth, leer upon me again, ſigh pitifully, fling herſelf about in her chair to ſhew her agility, and act a great many more abſurdities that youth and beauty can only excuſe. Shocked as I was at my diſappointment, my diſpoſition was incapable of affronting any perſon who loved me; I therefore endeavoured to put a good face on the matter for the preſent, reſolving to drop the whole affair as ſoon as I could get clear of her company; with this view, I uttered ſome civil things, and in particular deſired to know the name and condition of the lady who had honoured me ſo much. She told me her name was Withers; that ſhe lived with Sir John Sparkle, in quality of governeſs to his only daughter, in which ſituation the had picked up a competency ſufficiency to make her eaſy for life; and that ſhe had the pleaſure of ſeeing me at church, where my appearance and deportment made ſuch an impreſſion upon her heart, that ſhe could enjoy no eaſe until ſhe had enquired into my character, which ſhe found ſo amiable in all reſpects, that ſhe yielded to the violence of her inclination, and ventured to declare her paſſion, with too little regard, perhaps, to the decorum of her ſex; but ſhe hoped I would forgive a tranſport, of which I myſelf was, in ſome meaſure, the cauſe, and impute her intruſion to

the irreſiſtible dictates of love. No decayed rake ever ſwallowed a bolus with more reluctance than I felt in making a reply ſuitable to the compliment, when, inſtead of the jewel, I found the crazy caſket only in my power; and yet my hopes began to revive a little, when I conſidered, that by carrying on the appearance of an intrigue with the duenna, I might poſſibly get acceſs to her charge. Encouraged by this ſuggeſtion, my temper grew more ſerene, my reſerve wore off. I talked *en cavalier*, and even made love to this antiquated coquette, who ſeemed extremely happy in her adorer, and ſpread all her allurements to make her imagined conqueſt more ſecure. The good woman of the houſe treated us with tea and ſweatmeats, and afterwards withdrew, like a civil experienced matron as ſhe was. Left thus to our mutual endearments, Miſs Withers (for ſhe was ſtill a maiden) began to talk of matrimony, and expreſſed ſo much impatience in all her behaviour, that, had ſhe been fifty years younger, I might poſſibly have gratified her longing without having recourſe to the church; but this my virtue as well as intereſt forbade. When the inclinations of an old maid ſettle upon a young fellow, he is perſecuted with her addreſſes; but ſhould he once grant her the favour, he will never be able to diſentangle himſelf from her importunities and reproaches. It was my buſineſs to defer the ceremony as long as poſſible, under the moſt ſpecious pretences, with a view of becoming acquainted with Miſs Sparkle, in the mean time; and I did not deſpair of ſucceſs, when I conſidered that in the courſe of our correſpondence I ſhould, in all probability, be invited to viſit my miſtreſs in her own apartment, and by that means have an opportunity of converſing with her charming ward. Pleaſed with this proſpect, my heart dilated with joy, I talked in raptures to the ſtale governante, and kiſſed her ſhrivelled hand with great devotion. She was ſo much tranſported with her good fortune, that ſhe could not contain her extaſy, but flew upon me like a tygreſs, and preſſed her ſkinny lips to mine; when (as it was no doubt concerted by her evil genius) a doſe of garlic ſhe had ſwallowed that morning to diſpel wind, I ſuppoſe, began to operate with ſuch a ſudden explotion, that human

human nature, circumſtanced as I was, could not endure the ſhock with any degree of temper. I loſt all patience and reflection, flung away from her in an inſtant, ſnatched my hat and cane, and ran down ſtairs as if the devil had me in purſuit, and could ſcarce reſtrain the convulſions of my bowels, which were grievouſly offended by the perfume that aſſaulted me. Strap, who waited my return with impatience, ſeeing me arrive in the utmoſt diſorder, ſtood motionleſs with apprehenſion, and durſt not inquire into the cauſe.

After I had waſhed my mouth more than once, and recruited my ſpirits with a glaſs of wine, I recounted to him every particular of what had happened; to which he made no other reply for ſome time, than lifting up his eyes, claſping his hands, and utterring a hollow groan. At length he obſerved, in a melancholy tone, that it was a thouſand pities my organs were ſo delicate as to be offended with the ſmell of garlic: "Ah! God help us "(ſaid he) 'tis not the ſteams of garlic, no, nor of "ſomething elſe, that would give me the leaſt uneaſi-"neſs--ſee what it is to be a cobler's ſon." I replied haſtily, "I wiſh then you would go and retrieve my "miſcarriage." At this he ſtarted, forced a ſmile, and left the room, ſhaking his head. Whether the old gentlewoman reſented my abrupt departure ſo much, that her love changed into diſdain, or was aſhamed to ſee me on account of her infirmity, I know not, but I was never troubled again with her paſſion.

CHAP. XLVII.

I cultivate an acquaintance with two noblemen—am introduced to Earl Strutwell—*his kind promise and invitation—the behaviour of his porter and lackey—he receives me with an appearance of uncommon affection—undertakes to speak in my behalf to the minister—informs me of his success, and wishes me joy—introduces a conversation about* Petronius Arbiter—*falls in love with my watch, which I pray upon him—I make a present of a diamond ring to Lord* Straddle—*impart my good fortune to* Strap, *and* Banter, *who disabuses me, to my utter mortification.*

BAFFLED hitherto in my matrimonial schemes, I began to question my talents for the science of fortune-hunting, and to bend my thoughts towards some employment under the government. With the view of procuring which, I cultivated the acquaintance of lords Straddle and Swillpot, whose fathers were men of interest at court. I found these young noblemen as open to my advances as I could desire: I accompanied them in their midnight rambles, and often dined with them at taverns, where I had the honour of paying the reckoning.

I one day took the opportunity, while I was loaded with protestations of friendship, to disclose my desire of being settled in some sinecure, and to solicit their influence in my behalf. Swillpot squeezing my hand, said, I might depend upon his service, by G—d. The other swore that no man would be more proud than he to run of my errands. Encouraged by these declarations, I ventured to express an inclination to be introduced to their fathers, who were able to do my business at once. Swillpot frankly owned he had not spoke to his father these three years; and Straddle assured me his father having lately disobliged the minister by subscribing his name to a protest in the House of Peers, was thereby rendered incapable of serving his friends at present; but he undertook to make me acquainted with Earl Strutwell, who was hand and glove with a certain person who ruled the roast.

roaſt. This offer I embraced with many acknowledgments, and plied him ſo cloſely, in ſpite of a thouſand evations, that he found himſelf under a neceſſity of keeping his word, and actually carried me to the levee of this great man, where he left me in a crowd of fellow-dependents, and was uſhered to a particular cloſet audience; from whence in a few minutes, he returned with his Lordſhip, who took me by the hand, aſſured me he would do me all the ſervice he could, and deſired to ſee me often. I was charmed with my reception, and altho' I had heard that a courtier's promiſe was not to be depended upon, I thought I diſcovered ſo much ſweetneſs of temper in this earl's countenance, that I did not doubt of profiting by his protection. I reſolved, therefore, to avail myſelf of his permiſſion, and waited on him next audience-day, when I was favoured with a particular ſmile, ſqueeze of the hand, and a whiſper, ſignifying that he wanted half an hour's converſation with me *tête a tête*, when he ſhould be diſengaged, and for that purpoſe deſired me to come and drink a diſh of chocolate with him to-morrow morning. The invitation, which did not a little flatter my vanity and expectation, I took care to obſerve, and went to his Lordſhip's houſe at the time appointed. Having rapped at the gate, the porter unbolted and kept it half open, placing himſelf in the gap, like ſoldiers in a breach, to diſpute my paſſage. I demanded to know if his lord was ſtirring? He anſwered with a ſurly aſpect, "No." "At what hour does he com-"monly riſe?" (ſaid I.) "Sometimes ſooner ſome-"times later," (ſaid he, cloſing the door upon me by degrees.) I then told him I was come by his Lordſhip's own appointment; to which this Cerberus replied, "I have re-"ceived no orders about the matter;" and was upon the point of ſhutting me out, when I recollected myſelf all of a ſudden, and ſlipping a crown into his hand, begged as a favour that he would inquire and let me know whether or not the Earl was up. The grim janitor relented at the touch of my money, which he took with all the indifference of a tax-gatherer, and ſhewed me into a parlour, where, he ſaid, I might amuſe myſelf till ſuch time as his Lordſhip would be awake. I had not ſat ten minutes

nutes in this place, when a footman entered, and without ſpeaking ſtared at me. I interpreted this piece of his behaviour into "Pray, Sir, what is your buſineſs?" and aſked the ſame queſtion I had put to the porter, when I accoſted him firſt. The lackey made the ſame reply, and diſappeared before I could get any further intelligence. In a little time he returned on pretence of poking the fire, and looked at me again with great earneſtneſs; upon which I began to perceive his meaning, and tipping him with half-a-crown, deſired he would be ſo good as to fall upon ſome method of letting the Earl know that I was in the houſe. He made a low bow, and ſaid, "Yes, Sir," and vaniſhed. This bounty was not thrown away, for in an inſtant he came back, and conducted me to a chamber, where I was received with great kindneſs and familiarity by his Lordſhip, whom I found juſt riſen, in his morning gown and ſlippers. After breakfaſt, he entered into a particular converſation with me about my travels, the remarks I had made abroad, and examined me to the full extent of my underſtanding. My anſwers ſeemed to pleaſe him very much, he frequently ſqueezed my hand, and looking at me with a ſingular complacency in his countenance, bid me depend upon his good offices with the miniſtry in my behalf. "Young "men of your qualifications (ſaid he) ought to be che- "riſhed by every adminiſtration. For my own part, I "ſee ſo little merit in the world, that I have laid it "down as a maxim, to encourage the leaſt appearance "of genius and virtue, to the utmoſt of my power. You "have a great deal of both; and will not fail of ma- "king a figure one day, if I am not miſtaken; but "you muſt lay your account with mounting by gradual "ſteps to the ſummit of your fortune. *Rome was not* "*built in a day.* As you underſtand the languages per- "fectly well, how would you like to croſs the ſea, as ſe- "cretary to an embaſſy?" I aſſured his Lordſhip with great eagerneſs, that nothing could be more agreeable to my inclination; upon which he bid me make myſelf eaſy, my buſineſs was done, for he had a place of that kind in his view. This piece of generoſity affected me ſo much, that I was unable for ſome time to expreſs my gratitude, which

which at length broke out in acknowledgments of my own unworthineſs, and encomiums on his benevolence. I could not help even ſhedding tears at the goodneſs of this noble Lord, who no ſooner perceived them, than he caught me in his arms, hugged and kiſſed me with a ſeemingly paternal affection. Confounded at this uncommon inſtance of fondneſs for a ſtranger, I remained a few moments ſilent and aſhamed, then got up and took my leave, after he had aſſured me that he would ſpeak to the miniſter in my favour, that very day; and deſired that I would not for the future give myſelf the trouble of attending at his levee, but come at the ſame hour every day, when he was at leiſure, which was three times a-week.

Though my hopes were now very ſanguine, I determined to conceal my proſpect from every body, even from Strap, until I ſhould be more certain of ſucceſs; and in the mean time give my patron no reſpite from my ſolicitations. When I renewed my viſit, I found the ſtreet door opened to me as if by enchantment; but in my paſſage towards the preſence-room, I was met by the *valet de chambre*, who caſt ſome furious looks at me, the meaning of which I could not comprehend. The Earl ſaluted me at entrance with a tender embrace, and wiſhed me joy of his ſucceſs with the premier, who, he ſaid, had preferred his recommendation to that of two other noblemen very urgent in behalf of their reſpective friends, and abſolutely promiſed that I ſhould go to a certain foreign court in quality of ſecretary to an ambaſſador and plenipotentiary, who would ſet out in a few weeks, on ſome affair of vaſt importance to the nation. I was thunderſtruck with my good fortune, and could make no other reply, than kneel and attempt to kiſs my benefactor's hand, which he would not permit, but raiſing me up, preſſed me to his breaſt with ſurpriſing emotion, and told me he had now taken upon himſelf the care of making my fortune. What inhanced the value of the benefit ſtill the more, was his making light of the favour, and ſhifting the converſation to another ſubject: among other topics of diſcourſe, that of the *Belles Lettres* was introduced, upon which his lordſhip held forth with great

taſte

taſte and erudition, and diſcovered an intimate knowledge of the authors of antiquity. " Here's a book," ſaid he, taking one from his boſom, " written with great elo- " gance and ſpirit, and though the ſubject may give of- " fence to ſome narrow-minded people, the author will " always be held in eſteem by every perſon of wit and " learning." So ſaying, he put into my hand Petronius Arbiter, and aſked my opinion of his wit and manner. I told him, that in my opinion, he wrote with great eaſe and vivacity, but was withal ſo lewd and indecent, that he ought to find no quarter or protection among people of morals and taſte. " I own," replied the Earl, " that " his taſte in love is generally decried, and indeed con- " demned by our laws: but perhaps that may be more " owing to prejudice and miſapprehenſion, than to true " reaſon and deliberation. The beſt man among the an- " cients is ſaid to have entertained that paſſion; one of " the wiſeſt of their legiſlators has permitted the indul- " gence of it in his commonwealth; the moſt celebrated " poets have not ſcrupled to avow it at this day; it pre- " vails not only all over the Eaſt, but in moſt parts of " Europe; in our own country it gains ground apace, " and in all probability will become in a ſhort time, a " more faſhionable vice than ſimple fornication. Indeed " there is ſomething to be ſaid in vindication of it; for " notwithſtanding the ſeverity of the law againſt of- " fenders in this way, it muſt be confeſſed that the prac- " tice of this paſſion is unattended with that curſe and " burthen upon ſociety, which proceeds from a race of " miſerable deſerted baſtards, who are either murdered " by their parents, deſerted to the utmoſt want and " wretchedneſs, or bred up to prey upon the common- " wealth; and it likewiſe prevents the debauchery of " many a young maiden, and the proſtitution of honeſt " men's wives; not to mention the conſideration of " health, which is much leſs liable to be impaired in the " gratification of this appetite, than in the exceſſes of " common venery, which by ruining the conſtitutions " of our youngmen, has produced a puny progeny, that " degenerates from generation to generation: Nay, I " have been told, that there is another more perni-

cious

"more powerful than all theſe, that induces people to "cultivate this inclination; namely, the exquiſite plea-"ſure attending its ſucceſs."

From this diſcourſe, I began to be apprehenſive that his Lordſhip, finding I had travelled, was afraid I might have been infected with this ſpurious and ſordid deſire abroad, and took this method of ſounding my ſentiments on the ſubject. Fired at this ſuppoſed ſuſpicion, I argued againſt it with great warmth, as an appetite unnatural, abſurd, and of pernicious conſequence; and declared my utter deteſtation and abhorrence of it in theſe lines of the ſatiriſt:

"Eternal infamy the wretch confound,
"Who planted firſt this vice on Britiſh ground!
"A vice! that, 'ſpite of ſenſe and nature reigns,
"And poiſons genial love, and manhood ſtains!"

The Earl ſmiled at my indignation, told me he was glad to find my opinion of the matter ſo conformable to his own, and that what he had advanced was only to provoke me to an anſwer, with which he profeſſed himſelf perfectly well pleaſed.

After I had enjoyed a long audience, I happened to look at my watch, in order to regulate my motions by it; and his Lordſhip obſerving the chaſed caſe, deſired to ſee the device, and examine the execution, which he approved with ſome expreſſions of admiration. Conſidering the obligations I lay under to his Lordſhip, I thought there could not be a fitter opportunity than the preſent to manifeſt in ſome ſhape my gratitude; I therefore begged he would do me the honour to accept of the watch as a ſmall teſtimony of the ſenſe I had of his Lordſhip's generoſity; but he refuſed it in a peremptory manner, and ſaid he was ſorry I ſhould entertain ſuch a mercenary opinion of him, obſerving at the ſame time, that it was the moſt beautiful piece of workmanſhip he had ever ſeen, and deſiring to know where he could have ſuch another. I begged a thouſand pardons for the freedom I had taken, which I hoped he would impute to nothing elſe than the higheſt veneration for his perſon—let him know that

as it came to my hand by accident in France, I could give him no information about the maker, for there was no name on the inſide; and once more humbly intreated that he would indulge me ſo far as to uſe it for my ſake. He was ſtill poſitive in refuſing it; but was pleaſed to thank me for my generous offer, ſaying, it was a preſent that no nobleman need be aſhamed of receiving; though he was reſolved to ſhew his diſintereſtedneſs with regard to me, for whom he had conceived a particular friendſhip; and inſiſted (if I was willing to part with the watch) upon knowing what it coſt, that he might at leaſt indemnify me by refunding the money. On the other hand, I aſſured his Lordſhip, that I would look upon it as an uncommon mark of diſtinction, if he would take it without further queſtion; and rather than diſoblige me, he was at laſt perſuaded to put it in his pocket, to my no ſmall ſatisfaction, who took my leave immediately, after having received a kind ſqueeze, and an injunction to depend upon his promiſe.

Buoyed up with my reception, my heart opened, I gave away a guinea among the lacqueys, who eſcorted me to the door, flew to the lodgings of my Lord Straddle, upon whom I forced my diamond ring, as an acknowledgment for the great ſervice he had done me, and from thence hied myſelf home, with an intent of ſharing my happineſs with honeſt Strap. I determined, however, to heighten his pleaſure by depreſſing his ſpirits at firſt, and then bringing in the good news with double reliſh. For this purpoſe, I affected the appearance of diſappointment and chagrin, and told him in an abrupt manner, that I had loſt the watch and diamond. Poor Hugh, who had been already haraſſed into a conſumption by intelligence of this ſort, no ſooner heard theſe words, than unable to contain himſelf, he cried with diſtraction in his looks, "God in heaven forbid!" I could carry on the farce no longer, but laughing in his face, told him every thing that had befallen, as before recited. His features were immediately unbended, and the tranſition was ſo affecting that he wept with joy, calling my Lord Strutwell by the appellations of Jewel, Phœnix, *rara avis*, and praiſing God that there was ſtill ſome virtue among our nobility

nobility. Our mutual congratulations being over, we gave way to our imagination, and anticipated our happineſs by proſecuting our ſucceſs through the different ſteps of promotion, till I arrived at the rank of a prime miniſter, and he to that of my firſt ſecretary.

Intoxicated with theſe ideas I went to the ordinary, where meeting with Banter, I communicated the whole affair in confidence to him, concluding with an aſſurance that I would do him all the ſervice in my power. He heard me to an end with great patience, then regarding me a good while with a look of diſdain, pronounced, "So your buſineſs is done you think?" "As good as "done, I believe," ſaid I. "I'll tell you," replied he, "what will do it more effectually—A halter:—'ſdeath! "if I had been ſuch a gull to two ſuch ſcoundrels as "Strutwell and Straddle, I would without any more a-"do tuck myſelf up." Shocked at this exclamation, I deſired him with ſome confuſion to explain himſelf. Upon which he gave me to underſtand, that Straddle was a poor contemptible wretch, who lived by borrowing and pimping to his fellow peers; that in conſequence of this laſt capacity, he had, doubtleſs, introduced me to Strutwell, who was ſo notorious for a paſſion for his own ſex, that he was amazed his character had never reached my ears; and that ſo far from being able to obtain for me the poſt he had promiſed, his intereſt at court was ſo low, that he could ſcarce provide for a ſuperannuated footman once a year, in Chelſea-hoſpital—that it was a common thing for him to amuſe ſtrangers whom his jackcalls run down, with ſuch aſſurances and careſſes as he had beſtowed on me, until he had ſtript them of their caſh, and every thing valuable about them;—very often of their chaſtity; and then leave them a prey to want and infamy;—that he allowed his ſervants no other wages than that part of the ſpoil which they could gain by their induſtry; and that the whole of his conduct towards me was ſo glaring, that nobody who knew any thing of mankind could have been impoſed upon by his inſinuations.

I leave the reader to judge how I reliſhed this piece of information, which precipitated me from the moſt exalted

pinnacle of hope, to the loweſt abyſs of deſpondence; and well nigh determined me to take Banter's advice, and finiſh my chagrin with a halter. I had no room to ſuſpect the veracity of my friend, becauſe, upon recollection, I found every circumſtance of Strutwell's behaviour, exactly tallying with the character he had deſcribed: His hugs, embraces, ſqueezes, and eager looks, were now no longer a myſtery; no more than his defence of Petronius, and the jealous frown of his *valet de chambre*, who, it ſeems was at preſent the favourite pathic of his lord.

CHAP. LII.

I attempt to recover my watch and jewel, but to no purpoſe —reſolve to revenge myſelf on Strutwell *by my importunity—am reduced to my laſt guinea—obliged to inform* Strap *of my neceſſity, who is almoſt diſtracted with the news—but nevertheleſs obliged to pawn my beſt ſword for preſent ſubſiſtence—that ſmall ſupply being exhauſted, I am almoſt ſtupified with my misfortunes—go to the gaming table, by the advice of* Banter, *and come off with unexpected ſucceſs —*Strap's *extaſy—Mrs* Gawky *waits upon me, profeſſes remorſe for her perfidy, and implores my aſſiſtance—I do myſelf a piece of juſtice by her means, and afterwards reconcile her to her father.*

I WAS ſo confounded that I could make no reply to Banter, who reproached me with great indignation, for having thrown away upon raſcals, that which, had it been converted into ready money, would have ſupported the rank of a gentleman for ſome months, and enabled me at the ſame time to oblige my friends. Stupified as I was, I could eaſily divine the ſource of his concern, but ſneaked away in a ſolitary manner, without yielding the leaſt anſwer to his expoſtulations; and began to deliberate with myſelf, in what manner I ſhould attempt to retrieve the moveables I had ſo fooliſhly loſt. I would have thought it no robbery to take them again by force, could I have done it without any danger of being detect-

ed;

ed; but as I could have no ſuch opportunity, I reſolved to work by fineſſe, and go immediately to the lodgings of Straddle, where I was ſo fortunate as to find him. "My Lord, (ſaid I,) I have juſt now recollected, that "the diamond I had the honour of preſenting to you, is "looſened a little in the ſocket, and there is a young fel-"low juſt arrived from Paris, who is reckoned the beſt "jeweller in Europe; I knew him in France, and if "your Lordſhip will give me leave, will carry the ring "to him to be ſet to rights." His Lordſhip was not to be caught in this ſnare—he thanked me for my offer, and let me know, that having himſelf obſerved the defect, he had already ſent it to his own jeweller to be mended. And indeed, by this time, I believe it was in the jeweller's hands, though not in order to be mended, for it ſtood in need of no alteration.

Baulked in this piece of politics, I curſed my ſimplicity; but reſolved to play a ſurer game with the Earl, which I thus deviſed. I did not doubt of being admitted into familiar converſation with him as before, and hoped by ſome means to get the watch into my hand, then on pretence of winding or playing with it, drop it on the floor, which in all probability would diſorder the work ſo as to ſtop its motion. This event would furniſh me with an opportunity of inſiſting upon carrying it away in order to be repaired; and had this happened, I ſhould have been in no hurry to bring it back. What pity it was I could not find an occaſion of putting this fine ſcheme in execution! When I went to renew my viſit to his Lordſhip, my acceſs to the parlour was as free as ever; but after I had waited ſome time, the *valet de chambre* came in with his Lord's compliments, and a deſire to ſee me to-morrow at his levee, being at preſent ſo much indiſpoſed that he could ſee no company. I interpreted his meſſage into a bad omen, and came away, muttering curſes againſt his Lordſhip's politeneſs, and ready to go to loggerheads with myſelf for being ſo egregiouſly duped. But that I might have ſome ſatisfaction for the loſs I had ſuſtained, I beſieged him cloſely at his levee, and perſecuted him with my ſolicitations; not without faint hopes indeed, of reaping ſomething more from

my

my induſtry, than the bare pleaſure of making him uneaſy; though I could never obtain another private hearing during the whole courſe of my attendance; neither had I reſolution enough to undeceive Strap, whoſe looks, in a little time, were ſo whetted with impatience, that whenever I came home, his eyes devoured me, as it were, with eagerneſs of attention.

At length, however, finding myſelf reduced to my laſt guinea, I was compelled to diſcloſe my neceſſity, though I endeavoured to ſweeten the diſcovery by rehearſing to him the daily aſſurances I received from my patron. But theſe promiſes were not of efficacy ſufficient to ſupport the ſpirits of my friend, who no ſooner underſtood the lowneſs of my finances, than uttering a dreadful groan, he exclaimed, "In the name of God, what ſhall we do?" In order to comfort him, I ſaid that many of my acquaintance, who were in a worſe condition than we, ſupported, notwithſtanding, the character and appearance of gentlemen; and adviſing him to thank God that we had as yet incurred no debt, propoſed he ſhould pawn my ſword of ſteel inlaid with gold, and truſt to my diſcretion for the reſt. This expedient was wormwood and gall to poor Strap, who, in ſpite of his invincible affection for me, ſtill retained notions of œconomy and expence ſuitable to the narrowneſs of his education; nevertheleſs, he complied with my requeſt, and raiſed ſeven pieces on the ſword in a twinkling. This ſupply, inconſiderable as it was, made me as happy for the preſent as if I had had five hundred pounds in bank; for by this time I was ſo well ſkilled in procraſtinating every troubleſome reflection, that the proſpect of want ſeldom affected me very much, let it be never ſo near. And now, indeed, it was nearer than I imagined; for my landlord having occaſion for money, put me in mind of my being indebted to him five guineas in lodging; and telling me that he had a ſum to make up, begged I would excuſe his importunity and diſcharge the debt. Though I could ill ſpare ſo much cath, my pride took the reſolution of diſburſing it, which I did in a cavalier manner, after he had written a diſcharge, telling him with an air of ſcorn and reſentment, I ſaw he was reſolved that I ſhould not be long in his books; while

while Strap, who ſtood by, and knew my circumſtances, wrung his hands in ſecret, gnawed his nether lip, and turned yellow with deſpair. Whatever appearance of indifference my vanity enabled me to put on, I was thunderſtruck with this demand, which I had no ſooner ſatisfied, than I haſted into company, with a view of beguiling my cares with converſation, or drowning them in wine.

After dinner, a party was accordingly made in the coffee-houſe, from whence we adjourned to the tavern, where, inſtead of ſharing the mirth of the company, I was as much chagrined at their good humour as a damned ſoul in hell would be at a glimpſe of heaven. In vain did I ſwallow bumper after bumper! the wine had loſt its effect upon me, and ſo far from raiſing my dejected ſpirits, could not even lay me aſleep. Banter, who was the only intimate I had (Strap excepted) perceived my anxiety, and when we broke up, reproached me with puſillanimity, for being caſt down at any diſappointment that ſuch a raſcal as Strutwell could be the occaſion of. I told him I did not at all ſee how Strutwell's being a raſcal alleviated my misfortune; and gave him to underſtand that my preſent grief did not ſo much proceed from that diſappointment, as from the low ebb of my fortune, which was ſunk to ſomething leſs than two guineas. At this declaration he cried, "Pſhaw! is that all?" and aſſured me there were a thouſand ways of living in town without fortune, he himſelf having ſubſiſted many years entirely by his wit. I expreſſed my eager deſire of being acquainted with ſome of theſe methods, and he, without further expoſtulation, bid me follow him. He conducted me to a houſe under the piazzas in Covent Garden, which we entered, and having delivered our ſwords to a grim fellow, who demanded them at the foot of the ſtaircaſe, aſcended to the ſecond ſtory, where I ſaw multitudes of people ſtanding round two gaming tables, loaded in a manner with gold and ſilver. My conductor let me know that this was the houſe of a worthy Scotch lord, who uſing the privilege of his peerage, had ſet up a public gaming table, from the profits of which he drew a comfortable livelihood. He then explained the differ-

ence between the *ſitters* and the *betters*; characteriſed the firſt as old rooks, and the laſt as bubbles; and adviſed me to try my fortune at the ſilver table, by betting a crown at a time. Before I would venture any thing, I conſidered the company more particularly, and there appeared ſuch a groupe of villainous faces, that I was ſtruck with horror and aſtoniſhment at the ſight! I ſignified my ſurpriſe to Banter, who whiſpered in my ear, that the bulk of thoſe preſent were ſharpers, highwaymen, and apprentices, who having embezzled their maſter's caſh, made a deſperate puſh in this place to make up their deficiencies. This account did not encourage me to hazard any part of my ſmall pittance; but at length being teized by the importunities of my friend, who aſſured me there was no danger of being ill uſed, people being hired by the owner to ſee juſtice done to every body; I began by riſquing one ſhilling, and in leſs than an hour my winning amounted to thirty. Convinced by this time of the fairneſs of the game, and animated with ſucceſs, there was no need for any further perſuaſion to continue the play: I lent Banter (who ſeldom had any money in his pocket) a guinea, which he carried to the gold table and loſt in a moment. He would have borrowed another, but finding me deaf to his arguments, went away in a pet. Meanwhile my gain advanced to ſix pieces, and my deſire of more increaſed in proportion; ſo that I moved to the higher table, where I laid half a guinea on every throw, and fortune ſtill favouring me, I became a ſitter, in which capacity I remained until it was broad day; when I found myſelf, after many viciſſitudes, one hundred and fifty guineas in pocket.

Thinking it now high time to retire with my booty, I aſked if any body would take my place, and made a motion to riſe; upon which an old Gaſcon, who ſat oppoſite me, and of whom I had won a little money, ſtarted up with fury in his looks, crying, "*Reſtez, foutre, reſtez, il faut donner moi mon ravanchio!*" At the ſame time a Jew, who ſat near the other, inſinuated that I was more beholden to art than fortune, for what I had got; that he had obſerved me wipe the table very often, and that ſome of the diviſions ſeemed to be greater

This intimation produced a great deal of clamour againſt me, eſpecially among the loſers, who threatened with many oaths and imprecations, to take me up by a warrant as a ſharper, unleſs I would compromiſe the affair by refunding the greateſt part of my winning. Though I was far from being eaſy under this accuſation, I relied upon my innocence, threatened in my turn to proſecute the Jew for defamation, and boldly offered to ſubmit my cauſe to the examination of any juſtice in Weſtminſter; but they knew themſelves too well to put their characters on that iſſue, and finding I was not to be intimidated into any conceſſion, dropped their plea, and made way for me to withdraw. I would not however ſtir from the table until the Iſraelite had retracted what he had ſaid to my diſadvantage, and aſked pardon before the whole aſſembly.

As I marched out with my prize, I happened to tread upon the toes of a tall, raw-boned fellow, with a hooked noſe, fierce eyes, black, thick eye-brows, a pig-tail wig of the ſame colour, and a formidable hat pulled over his forehead, who ſtood gnawing his fingers in the crowd, and no ſooner felt the application of my ſhoe-heel, than he roared out in a tremendous voice, "Blood and wounds, "you ſon of a whore! what's that for?" I aſked pardon with a great deal of ſubmiſſion, and proteſted I had no intention of hurting him; but the more I humbled myſelf the more he ſtormed, and inſiſted upon gentlemanly ſatisfaction, at the ſame time provoking me with ſcandalous names, that I could not put up with; ſo that I gave a looſe to my paſſion, returned his Billingſgate, and challenged him to follow me down to the piazzas. His indignation cooling as mine warmed, he refuſed my invitation, ſaying, he would chuſe his own time, and returned towards the table muttering threats, which I neither dreaded nor diſtinctly heard: but deſcending with great deliberation, received my ſword from the door-keeper, whom I gratified with a guinea according to the cuſtom of the place, and went home in a rapture of joy.

My faithful valet, who had ſat up all night in the utmoſt uneaſineſs on my account, let me in with his face

beſlubbered with tears, and followed me to my chamber, where he ſtood ſilent like a condemned criminal, in expectation of hearing that every ſhilling was ſpent. I gueſſed the ſituation of his thoughts, and aſſuming a ſullen look, bid him fetch me ſome water to waſh. He replied, without lifting his eyes from the ground, "In my "ſimple conjecture, you have more occaſion for reſt, "not having, I ſuppoſe, ſlept theſe four and twenty "hours." "Bring me ſome water," (ſaid I in a peremptory tone:) upon which he ſneaked away ſhrugging his ſhoulders. Before he returned, I had ſpread my whole ſtock on the table in the moſt oſtentatious manner; ſo that when it firſt ſaluted his view, he ſtood like one entranced, and having rubbed his eyes more than once, to aſſure himſelf of his being awake, broke into "Lord "have mercy upon us, what a vaſt treaſure is here!" "'Tis all our own, Strap, (ſaid I,) take what is neceſſary, "and redeem the ſword immediately." He advanced towards the table, ſtopt ſhort by the way, looked at the money and me by turns, and with a wildneſs in his countenance produced from joy checked by diſtruſt, cried, "I dare ſay it is honeſtly come by." To remove his ſcruples, I made him acquainted with the whole ſtory of my ſucceſs, on hearing of which, he danced about the room, in an extaſy, crying, "God be praiſed! a white "ſtone! God be praiſed! a white ſtone!"—ſo that I was afraid the ſudden change of fortune had diſordered his intellects, and that he was run mad with joy. Extremely concerned at this event, I attempted to reaſon him out of his frenzy, but to no purpoſe, for without regarding what I ſaid, he continued to frisk up and down, and repeat his rhapſody of, "God be praiſed! a white "ſtone!" At laſt I roſe in the utmoſt conſternation, and laying violent hands upon him, put a ſtop to his extravagance, by fixing him down to a ſettee that was in the room. This conſtraint baniſhed his delirium; he ſtarted, as if juſt awoke, and terrified at my behaviour, cried, "What is the matter?" When he learned the cauſe of my apprehenſion, he was aſhamed of his tranſports, and told me that in mentioning the white ſtone, he alluded to the *Dies faſti* of the Romans, *albo lapide notati*.

Having

Having no inclination to ſleep, I ſecured my caſh, dreſſed, and was juſt going abroad, when the ſervant of the houſe told me, there was a gentlewoman at the door who wanted to ſpeak with me. Surpriſed at this information, I bid Strap ſhew her up, and in leſs than a minute ſaw a young woman of a ſhabby decayed appearance enter my room. After half-a-dozen curtſies, ſhe began to ſob, and told me her name was Gawky; upon which I immediately recollected the features of Miſs Lavement, who had been the firſt occaſion of my misfortunes. Tho' I had all the reaſon in the world to reſent her treacherous uſage of me, I was moved at her diſtreſs, and profeſſing my ſorrow at ſeeing her ſo reduced, deſired her to ſit, and inquired into the particulars of her ſituation. She fell upon her knees, and implored my forgiveneſs for the injuries ſhe had done me, proteſting before God, that ſhe was forced againſt her inclination, into that helliſh conſpiracy which had almoſt deprived me of my life, by the intreaties of her huſband, who having been afterwards renounced by his father on account of his marriage with her, and unable to ſupport a family on his pay, left his wife at her father's houſe, and went with the regiment to Germany, where he was broke for miſbehaviour at the battle of Dettingen; ſince which time ſhe had heard no tidings of him. She then gave me to underſtand, with many ſymptoms of penitence, that it was her misfortune to bear a child four months after marriage, by which her parents were ſo incenſed, that ſhe was turned out of doors with the infant, that died ſoon after; and had hitherto ſubſiſted in a miſerable indigent manner, on the extorted charity of a few friends, who were now quite tired of giving; that not knowing where or how to ſupport herſelf one day longer, ſhe had fled for ſuccour even to me, who of all mankind had the leaſt cauſe to afflict her, relying upon the generoſity of my diſpoſition, which, ſhe hoped, would be pleaſed with this opportunity of avenging itſelf in the nobleſt manner, on the wretch who had wronged me. I was very much affected with her diſcourſe, and having no cauſe to ſuſpect the ſincerity of her repentance, raiſed her up, freely pardoned all

ſhe had done againgſt me, and promiſed to befriend her as much as lay in my power.

Since my laſt arrival in London, I had made no advances to the apothecary, imagining it would be impoſſible for me to make my innocence appear, ſo unhappily was my accuſation circumſtanced: Strap indeed had laboured to juſtify me to the ſchoolmaſter; but ſo far from ſucceeding in his attempt, Mr Concordance dropt all correſpondence with him, becauſe he refuſed to quit his connection with me. Things being in this ſituation, I thought a fairer opportunity of vindicating my character could not offer than that which now preſented itſelf; therefore ſtipulated with Mrs Gawky, that before I yielded her the leaſt aſſiſtance, ſhe ſhould do me the juſtice to clear my reputation, by explaining upon oath before a magiſtrate the whole of the conſpiracy as it had been executed againſt me. When ſhe had given me this ſatisfaction, I preſented her with five guineas, a ſum ſo much above her expectation, that ſhe could ſcarce believe the evidence of her ſenſes, and was ready to worſhip me for my benevolence. The declaration ſigned with her own hand, I ſent to her father, who, upon recollecting and comparing the circumſtances of my charge, was convinced of my integrity, and waited on me next day, in company with his friend the ſchoolmaſter, to whom he had communicated my vindication. After mutual ſalutation Monſieur Lavement began a long apology for the unjuſt treatment I received; but I ſaved him a good deal of breath, by interrupting his harangue, and aſſuring him, that ſo far from entertaining any reſentment againſt him, I thought myſelf obliged to his lenity, which allowed me to eſcape, after ſuch ſtrong preſumptions of guilt appeared againſt me. Mr Concordance thinking it now his turn to ſpeak, obſerved, that Mr Random had too much candour and ſagacity to be diſobliged at their conduct, which, all things conſidered, could not have been otherwiſe, with any honeſty of intention. "Indeed, (ſaid he) if the plot had been unravelled to us "by any ſupernatural intelligence; if it had been whiſ-"pered by a genie, communicated by a dream, or revea-"led by an angel from on high, we ſhould have been to

"blame,

" blame in crediting ocular demonſtration; but as we " were left in the miſt of mortality, it cannot be excep- " ted we ſhould be incapable of impoſition. I do aſſure " you, Mr Random, no man on earth is more pleaſed " than I am at the triumph of your character; and as " the news of your misfortune panged me to the very " intrails, this manifeſtation of your innocence makes " my midrif quiver with joy." I thanked him for his concern, deſired them to undeceive thoſe of their acquaintance who judged harſhly of me, and having treated them with a glaſs of wine, repreſented to Lavement the deplorable condition of his daughter, and pleaded her cauſe ſo effectually, that he conſented to ſettle a ſmall annuity on her for life; but could not be perſuaded to take her home, becauſe her mother was ſo much incenſed that ſhe would never ſee her.

CHAP. LIII.

I purchaſe new cloathes—reprimand Strutwell *and* Straddle *—*Banter *propoſes another matrimonial ſcheme—I accept of his terms—ſet out for* Bath *in the ſtage-coach, with the young lady and her mother—the behaviour of an officer and a lawyer, our fellow-travellers deſcribed—a ſmart dialogue between my miſtreſs and the Captain.*

HAVING finiſhed this affair to my ſatisfaction, I found myſelf perfectly at eaſe, and looking upon the gaming-table as a certain reſource for a gentleman in want, became more gay than ever. Although my cloathes were almoſt as good as new, I grew aſhamed of wearing them, becauſe I thought every body by this time had got an inventory of my wardrobe. For which reaſon I diſpoſed of a good part of my apparel to a ſlopman in Monmouth-ſtreet, for half the value, and bought two new ſuits with the money. I likewiſe purchaſed a plain gold watch, deſpairing of recovering that which I had ſo foolihly given to Strutwell, whom, notwithſtanding, I ſtill continued to viſit at his lodgings with the ſame cordiality

he had mentioned ſet out with a ſecretary of his own chuſing. I thought myſelf then at liberty to expoſtulate with his Lordſhip, whom I treated with great freedom in a letter, for amuſing me with vain hopes, when he neither had the power nor inclination to provide for me. Nor was I leſs reſerved with Straddle, whom I in perſon reproached for miſrepreſenting to me the character of Strutwell, which I did not ſcruple to aver was infamous in every reſpect. He ſeemed very much enraged at my freedom; talked a great deal about his quality and honour, and began to make ſome compariſons, which I thought ſo injurious to mine, that I demanded an explanation with great warmth; and he was mean enough to equivocate, and condeſcend in ſuch a manner, that I left him with an hearty contempt of his behaviour.

About this time Banter, who had obſerved a ſurpriſing and ſudden alteration in my appearance and diſpoſition, began to inquire very minutely into the cauſe; and as I did not think fit to let him know the true ſtate of the affair, leſt he might make free with my purſe, on the ſtrength of having propoſed the ſcheme that filled it, I told him that I had received a ſmall ſupply from a relation in the country, who at the ſame time had promiſed to uſe all his intereſt (which was not ſmall) in ſoliciting ſome poſt for me, that would make me eaſy for life. "If that be the caſe (ſaid Banter) perhaps you won't "care to mortify yourſelf a little in making your for- "tune another way. I have a relation who is to ſet out "for Bath next week, with an only daughter, who being "ſickly and decrepid, intends to drink the waters for "the recovery of her health. Her father, who was a "rich Turkey-merchant, died about a year ago, and left "her with a fortune of twenty thouſand pounds, under "the ſole management of her mother, who is my kinſ- "woman. I would have put in for the plate myſelf, "but there is a breach at preſent between the old wo- "man and me. You muſt know that ſome time ago I "borrowed a ſmall ſum of her, and promiſed, it ſeems, "to pay it before a certain time; but being diſappointed "in my expectation of money from the country, the "day elapſed without my being able to take up my note;

"upon

" upon which ſhe wrote a peremptory letter, threatening
" ing to arreſt me, if I did not pay the debt immediate-
" ly. Nettled at this preciſe behaviour, I ſent a damned
" ſevere anſwer, which enraged her ſo much, that ſhe
" actually took out a writ againſt me. Whereupon, find-
" ing the thing grow ſerious, I got a friend to advance
" the money for me, diſcharged the debt, went to her
" houſe, and abuſed her for her unfriendly dealing. She
" was provoked by my reproaches, and ſcolded in her
" turn. The little deformed urchin joined her mother
" with ſuch virulence and volubility of tongue, that I
" was fain to make my retreat, after having been honour-
" ed with a great many ſcandalous epithets, which gave
" me plainly to underſtand that I had nothing to hope
" from the eſteem of the one, or the affection of the
" other. As they are both utter ſtrangers to life, it is
" a thouſand to one but the girl will be picked up by
" ſome ſcoundrel or other at Bath, if I don't provide
" for her otherwiſe. You are a well looking fellow,
" Random, and can behave as demurely as a quaker.
" Now if you will give me an obligation for five hundred
" pounds, to be paid ſix months after your marriage, I
" will put you in a method of carrying her in ſpite of
" all oppoſition."

This propoſal was too advantageous for me to be refuſed: the writing was immediately drawn and executed; and Banter giving me notice of the time when, and the ſtage-coach in which they were to ſet out, I beſpoke a place in the ſame convenience; and having hired a horſe for Strap, who was charmed with the project, ſet out accordingly.

As we embarked before day, I had not the pleaſure for ſome time of ſeeing Miſs Snapper (that was the name of my miſtreſs) nor even of perceiving the number and ſex of my fellow-travellers, although I gueſſed that the coach was full, by the difficulty I found in ſeating myſelf. The firſt five minutes paſſed in a general ſilence, when all of a ſudden, the coach reeling to one ſide, a boiſterous voice pronounced, "To the right and left, cover your flanks, damme! whiz!" I eaſily diſcovered by the tone and manner of this exclamation, that it was uttered by a ſon of

of Mars; neither was it hard to conceive the profeſſion of another perſon, who ſat oppoſite to me, and obſerved, that we ought to have been well ſatisfied of the ſecurity, before we entered upon the premiſes. Theſe two ſallies had not the deſired effect:—We continued a good while as mute as before, till at length the gentleman of the ſword, impatient of longer ſilence, made a ſecond effort, by ſwearing he had got into a meeting of quakers.—"I "believe ſo too (ſaid a ſhrill female voice, at my left "hand) for the ſpirit of folly begins to move." "Out "with it then, madam," (replied the ſoldier)—"You "ſeem to have no occaſion for a midwife," cried the lady. "D—n my blood! (exclaimed the other) a man "can't talk to a woman, but ſhe immediately thinks of "a midwife."—"True, Sir, (ſaid ſhe,) I long to be de-"livered."—"What! of a mouſe, madam?" ſaid he—"No, Sir, (ſaid ſhe,) of a fool."—"Are you far gone "with fool?" ſaid he—"Little more than two miles," ſaid ſhe—"By Gad, you're a wit, madam," cried the officer—"I wiſh I could with any juſtice return the com-"pliment, ſaid the lady.—"Zounds! I have done," ſaid he—"Your bolt is ſoon ſhot, according to the pro-"verb," ſaid ſhe. The warrior's powder was quite ſpent; the lawyer adviſed him to drop the proſecution; and a grave matron, who ſat on the left hand of the victorious wit, told her ſhe mu't not let her tongue run ſo faſt among ſtrangers. This reprimand, ſoftened with the appellation of child, convinced me that the ſatirical lady was no other than Miſs Snapper, and I reſolved to regulate my conduct accordingly. The champion finding himſelf ſo ſmartly handled, changed his battery, and began to expatiate on his own exploits. "You talk of ſhot, Madam, "(ſaid he,) damme! I have both given and received ſome "ſhot in my time. I was wounded in the ſhoulder by a "piſtol ball at Dettingen, where—I ſay nothing—but "by G—d! if it had not been for me—all's one for that "—I deſpiſe boaſting, d—me! whiz!" So ſaying, he whiſtled one part, and hummed another of the Black Joke; then addreſſing himſelf to the lawyer went on thus, "Wouldn't you think it damned hard, after having "at the riſk of your life recovered the ſtandard of a

" regiment, that had been loſt, to receive no preferment " for your pains! I don't chuſe to name no names, ſink " me! but, howſomever, this I will refer, by G—d, and " that is this, a muſqueteer of the French guards, ha- " ving taken a ſtandard from a certain coronet of a cer- " tain regiment, damme! was retreating with his prize " as faſt as his horſe's heels cou'd carry him, ſink me! " Upon which, I ſnatched up a firelock that belonged to " a dead man, damme! whiz! and ſhot his horſe under " him, d—n my blood! The fellow got upon his feet and " began to repoſe me, upon which I charged my bayonet " breaſt-high, and run him through the body by G—d! " One of his comrades coming to his aſſiſtance, ſhot me " in the ſhoulder, as I told you before; and another " gave me a confuſion on the head with the butt end of " his carbine; but, damme, that did not ſignify. I killed " one, put the other to flight, and taking up the ſtandard " carried it off very deliberately. But the beſt joke of " all was, the ſon of a b— of a coronet who had ſur- " rendered it in a cowardly manner, ſeeing it in my poſ- " ſeſſion, demanded it from me, in the front of the " line."—" D—n my blood, (ſays he,) where did you " find my ſtandard? (ſays he.)——D—n my blood (ſaid " I,) where (ſaid I,) did you loſe it? (ſaid I.)—That's " nothing to you, (ſays he,) 'tis my ſtandard, (ſays he,) " and by G—d I'll have it, (ſays he.)——D—n—tion " ſeize me, (ſays I,) if you ſhall, (ſays I,) till I have writ " delivered it to the general, (ſays I,) and accordingly I " went to the head quarters after the battle, and deliver- " ed it to my Lord Sw—r, who promiſed to do for me, " but I am no more than a poor lieutenant ſtill, d—n " my blood."

Having vented this repetition of expletives, the lawyer owned he had not been requited according to his deſerts; obſerved that the labourer is always worthy of his hire, and aſked if the promiſe was made before witneſſes, becauſe in that caſe the law would compel the general to perform it—but underſtanding that the promiſe was made during a *tête à tête*, over a bottle, without being reſtricted to time or terms, he pronounced it not valid in law, proceeded to inquire into the particulars of the battle,

and affirmed, that although the Engliſh had drawn themſelves into a premunire at firſt, the French managed their cauſe ſo lamely in the courſe of their diſpute, that they would have been utterly nonſuited, had they not obtained a noli proſequi. In ſpite of theſe enlivening touches, the converſation was like to ſuffer another long interruption; when the lieutenant, unwilling to conceal any of his accompliſhments that could be diſplayed in his preſent ſituation, offered to regale the company with a ſong; and interpreting our ſilence into a deſire of hearing, began to warble a faſhionable air, the firſt ſtanza of which he pronounced thus:

"Would you taſk the moon ty'd hair,
"To yon flagrant beau repair;
"Where waving with the poppling vow,
"The bantling fine will ſhelter you, &c."

The ſenſe of the reſt he perverted as he went on, with ſuch ſurpriſing facility, that I could not help thinking he had been at ſome pains to burleſque the performance. Miſs Snapper aſcribed it to the true cauſe, namely, ignorance; and when he aſked her how ſhe reliſhed the muſic, anſwered, in her opinion, the muſic and the words were much of a piece. "O! d—n my blood!" ſaid he, "I take that as a high compliment; for every body al-"lows the words are damnable fine." "They may be "ſo," replied the lady, "for aught I know, but they "are above my comprehenſion." "I an't obliged to find "you comprehenſion, Madam, curſe me!" cried he.—"No, nor to ſpeak ſenſe neither," ſaid ſhe.—"D—n my "heart," ſaid he, "I'll ſpeak what I pleaſe." Here the lawyer interpoſed, by telling him there were ſome things he muſt not ſpeak. And upon being defied to give an inſtance, mentioned Treaſon and Defamation. "As for "the king," cried the ſoldier, "God bleſs him—I eat "his bread, and have loſt blood in his cauſe, therefore "I have nothing to ſay to him—but by G—d, I dare "ſay any thing to any other man." "No," ſaid the lawyer, "you dare not call me a rogue." "Damme, "for what?" ſaid the other. "Becauſe," replied the counſellor, "I ſhould have a good action againſt you, and "recover".

"recover."—"Well, well," cried the officer, "if I "dare not call you rogue, I dare think you one, dam-"me!" This ſtroke of wit he accompanied with a loud laugh of ſelf-approbation, which unluckily did not affect the audience, but effectually ſilenced his antagoniſt, who did not open his mouth for the ſpace of an hour thereafter, except to clear his pipe with three *hemms*, which, however, produced nothing.

CHAP. LIV.

Day breaking, I have the pleaſure of viewing the perſon of Miſs Snapper, *whom I had not ſeen before—the ſoldier is witty upon me—is offended—talks much of his valour—is reprimanded by a grave gentlewoman—we are alarmed with the cry of highwaymen—I get out of the coach and ſtand on my own defence—they ride off without having attacked us—I purſue them—one of them is thrown from his horſe and taken—I return to the coach—am complimented by Miſs* Snapper—*the captain's behaviour on the occaſion—the prude reproaches me in a ſoliloquy—I upbraid her in the ſame manner—the behaviour of Mrs* Snapper *at breakfaſt, diſobliges me—the lawyer is witty on the officer, who threatens him.*

IN the mean time, day breaking in upon us, diſcovered to one another the faces of their fellow-travellers; and I had the good fortune to find my miſtreſs not quite ſo deformed nor diſagreeable as ſhe had been repreſented to me. Her head, indeed, bore ſome reſemblance to a hatchet, the edge being repreſented by her face; but ſhe had a certain delicacy in her complexion, and a great deal of vivacity in her eyes, which were very large and black, and though the protuberance of her breaſt, when conſidered alone, ſeemed to drag her forwards, it was eaſy to perceive an equivalent on her back which balanced the other, and kept her body in equilibrio. On the whole, I thought I ſhould have great reaſon to congratulate myſelf, if it ſhould be my fate to poſſeſs twenty thouſand pounds encumbered with ſuch a wife. I be-

gan therefore to deliberate about the moſt probable means of acquiring the conqueſt, and was ſo much engroſſed by this idea, that I ſcarce took any notice of the reſt of the people in the coach, but revolved my proſpect in ſilence; while the converſation was maintained as before, by the object of my hopes, the ſon of Mars, and the barriſter, who by this time had recollected himſelf, and talked in terms as much as ever. At length a diſpute happened, which ended in a wager, to be determined by me, who was ſo much abſorbed in contemplation, that I neither heard the reference nor the queſtion which was put to me by each in his turn. Affronted at my ſuppoſed contempt, the ſoldier, with great vociferation, ſwore, I was either dumb or deaf, if not both, and that I looked as if I could not ſay *Bob to a goſs*. Aroused at this obſervation, I fixed my eyes upon him, and pronounced with emphaſis the interjection *Bob!* Upon which he cocked his hat in a fierce manner, and cried, "Damme, Sir, "what d'ye mean by that?" Had I intended to anſwer him, which by the bye was not my deſign, I ſhould have been anticipated by Miſs, who told him, my meaning was to ſhew, that I could ſay Bob! to a gooſe; and laughed very heartily at my lucent reproof. Her explanation and mirth did not help to appeaſe his wrath, which broke out in ſeveral martial imprecations, ſuch as—"I do "not underſtand ſuch freedoms, damme!—D—n my "blood! I'm a gentleman, and bear the king's commiſ-"ſion.—'Sblood! ſome people deſerve to have their "noſes pulled for their impertinence." I then got to have checked theſe ebullitions by a frown; becauſe he had talked ſo much of his valour, that I had long ago rated him as a bully: but ſo far from anſwering my expectation, he took umbrage at the contraction of my brows, ſwore he did not value my ſulky look a fig's end, and proteſted he feared no man breathing. Miſs Snapper ſaid, ſhe was very glad to find herſelf in company with a man of ſo much courage, which ſhe did not doubt would protect us all from the attempts of highway-men during our journey. "Make yourſelf perfectly "eaſy on that head, Madam," replied the officer, "I "have got a pair of piſtols [illegible] which I [illegible]

" from a horſe officer at the battle of Dettingen—they " are double loaded, and if any highwayman in England " robs you of the value of a pin while I have the ho- " nour of being in your company, d—n my heart."— When he had expreſſed himſelf in this manner, a prim gentlewoman, who had ſat ſilent hitherto, opened her mouth, and ſaid, ſhe wondered how any man could be ſo rude as to pull out ſuch weapons before ladies. " Dam- " me, Madam," cried the champion, " if you are ſo " much afraid at ſight of a piſtol, how d'ye propoſe to " ſtand fire if there ſhould be occaſion?" She let him know, that if ſhe thought he could be ſo unmannerly as to uſe fire-arms in her preſence, whatever might be the occaſion, ſhe ſhould get out of the coach immediately, and walk to the next village, where ſhe might procure a convenience to herſelf. Before he could make any anſwer, my Dulcinea interpoſed, and obſerved, that ſo far from being offended at a gentleman's uſing his arms in his own defence, ſhe thought herſelf very lucky in being along with one by whoſe valour ſhe ſtood a good chance of ſaving herſelf from being rifled. The prude caſt a diſdainful look at Miſs, and ſaid, that people who have but little to loſe, are ſometimes the moſt ſolicitous about preſerving it. The old lady was affronted at this inuendo, and took notice, that people ought to be very well informed before they ſpeak ſlightly of other people's fortune, leſt they diſcover their own envy, and make themſelves ridiculous. The daughter declared, that ſhe did not pretend to vie with any body in point of riches; and if the lady who inſiſted on non-reſiſtance, would promiſe to indemnify us all for the loſs we ſhould ſuſtain; ſhe would be one of the firſt to perſuade the captain to ſubmiſſion, in caſe we ſhould be attacked. To this propoſal, reaſonable as it was, the reſerved lady made no other reply, than a ſcornful glance and a toſs of her head. I was very well pleaſed with the ſpirit of my miſtreſs; and even wiſhed for an opportunity of diſtinguiſhing my courage under her eye, which I believed could not fail of prepoſſeſſing her in my favour; when, all of a ſudden, Strap rode up to the coach door, and told us, in a great fright, that two men on horſe-back were croſſing the heath (for by this time we had

had paſſed Hounſlow,) and made directly towards us. This piece of information was no ſooner delivered, than Mrs Snapper began to ſcream, her daughter grew pale, the other lady pulled out her purſe to be in readineſs, the lawyer's teeth chattered, while he pronounced, "'Tis "no matter—We'll ſue the county and recover." The captain gave evident ſigns of confuſion; and I, after having commanded the coachman to ſtop, opened the door, jumped out, and invited the warrior to follow me. But finding him backward and aſtoniſhed, I took his piſtols, and giving them to Strap, who by this time had alighted, and trembled very much, I mounted on horſeback; and taking my own, (which I could better depend upon) from the holſters, cocked them both, and faced the robbers, who were now very near us. Seeing me ready to oppoſe them on horſeback, and another man armed a foot, they made a halt at ſome diſtance to reconnoitre us, and after having rode round us twice, myſelf ſtill facing about as they rode, went off the ſame way they came, at a hand gallop. A gentleman's ſervant coming up with a horſe at the ſame time, I offered him a crown to aſſiſt me in purſuing them, which he no ſooner accepted, than I armed him with the officer's piſtols, and we galloped after the thieves, who truſting to the ſwiftneſs of their horſes, ſtopped till we came within ſhot of them, and then firing at us, put their nags to the full ſpeed. We followed them as far as our beaſts could carry us, but not being ſo well mounted as they, our efforts would have been to little purpoſe, had not the horſe of one of them ſtumbled, and thrown his rider with ſuch violence over his head, that he lay ſenſeleſs when we came up, and was taken without the leaſt oppoſition, while his comrade conſulted his own ſafety in flight, without regarding the diſtreſs of his friend. We ſcarce had time to make ourſelves maſters of his arms, and tie his hands together, before he recovered his ſenſes; when, learning his ſituation, he affected ſurprize, demanded to know by what authority we uſed a gentleman in that manner, and had the impudence to threaten us with a proſecution for robbery. In the mean time, we perceived Strap coming up with a crowd of people armed with different kinds of weapons: and

and among the reſt a farmer, who no ſooner perceived the thief whom we had ſecured, than he cried with great emotion, "There's the fellow who robbed me an hour ago, of twenty pounds in a canvas bag." He was immediately ſearched, and the money found exactly as it had been deſcribed: upon which, we committed him to the charge of the country man, who carried him to the town of Hounſlow, which, it ſeems, the farmer had alarmed; and having ſatisfied the footman for his trouble, according to promiſe, I returned with Strap to the coach, where I found the captain and lawyer buſy in adminiſtring ſmelling bottles and cordials to the grave lady, who had gone into a fit at the noiſe of the firing.

When I had taken my ſeat, Miſs Snapper, who from the coach had ſeen every thing that happened, made me a compliment on my behaviour, and ſaid ſhe was glad to ſee me returned, without having received any injury; her mother too owned herſelf obliged to my reſolution: and the lawyer told me, that I was entitled by act of parliament to a reward of forty pounds, for having apprehended a highwayman. The ſoldier obſerved with a countenance in which impudence and ſhame ſtruggling, produced ſome diſorder, that if I had not been in ſuch a damned hurry to get out of the coach, he would have ſecured the rogues effectually, without all this buſtle and loſs of time, by a ſcheme which my heat and precipitation ruined. "For my own part," continued he, "I "am always extremely cool on theſe occaſions. "So it "appeared by your trembling," (ſaid the young lady) "Death and damnation!" cried he, "your ſex protects "you, Madam: if any man on earth durſt tell me ſo "much, I'd ſend him to hell, damn my heart! in an in- "ſtant." So ſaying, he fixed his eyes upon me, as daſhed if I had ſeen him tremble. I anſwered without heſitation, "Yes." "Damme, Sir," ſaid he, "d'ye doubt "my courage?" I replied, "Very much." This declaration quite diſconcerted him. He looked black, and pronounced with a faultering voice, "Oh! 'tis very "well, d—n my blood! I ſhall find a time." I ſignified my contempt of him, by turning my back upon

my cheek, which humbled him ſo much, that he ſcarce ſwore another oath aloud during the whole journey.

The preciſe lady having recruited her ſpirits by the help of ſome ſtrong waters, began a ſoliloquy, in which ſhe wondered that any man that pretended to maintain the character of a gentleman, could, for the ſake of a little paultry coin, throw perſons of honour into ſuch quandaries as might endanger their lives; and profeſſed her ſurpriſe, that women were not aſhamed to commend ſuch brutality. At the ſame time vowing, that for the future ſhe would never ſet foot in a Stage-coach, if a private convenience could be had for love or money.

Nettled at her remarks, I took the ſame method of conveying my ſentiments, and wondered in my turn, that any woman of common ſenſe ſhould be ſo unreaſonable as to expect that peoplewho had neither acquaintance nor connection with her, would tamely allow themſelves to be robbed and maltreated, merely to indulge her capricious humour. I likewiſe profeſſed my aſtoniſhment at her inſolence and ingratitude in taxing a perſon with brutality, who deſerved her approbation and acknowledgment; and vowed, that if ever we ſhould be aſſaulted again, I would leave her to the mercy of the ſpoiler, that ſhe might know the value of my protection.

This perſon of honour did not think fit to carry on the altercation any further, but ſeemed to chew the cud of her reſentment, with the creſt-fallen captain, while I entered into diſcourſe with my charmer, who was the more pleaſed with my converſation, as ſhe had conceived a very different opinion of my intellects from my former ſilence. I ſhould have had cauſe to be equally ſatisfied with the ſprightlineſs of her genius, could ſhe have curbed her imagination with judgment; but ſhe laboured under ſuch a profuſion of talk, that I dreaded her unruly tongue, and felt by anticipation the horrors of an eternal clack! However, when I conſidered on the other hand, the joys attending the poſſeſſion of twenty thouſand pounds, I forgot her imperfections, ſeized occaſion by the forelock, and endeavoured to inſinuate myſelf into her affection. The careful mother kept a ſtrict watch over her, and though ſhe could not help behaving civilly to me, took frequent

opportunities of diſcouraging our communication, by reprimanding her for being ſo free with ſtrangers, and telling her ſhe muſt learn to ſpeak leſs and think more. Abridged of the uſe of ſpeech, we converſed with our eyes, and I found the young lady very eloquent in this kind of diſcourſe. In ſhort, I had reaſon to believe, that ſhe was ſick of the old gentlewoman's tuition, and that I ſhould find it no difficult matter to ſuperſede her authority.

When we arrived at the place where we were to breakfaſt, I alighted, and helped my miſtreſs out of the coach, as well as her mother, who called for a private room, to which they withdrew, in order to eat by themſelves. As they retired together, I perceived that Miſs had got more twiſts from Nature, than I had before obſerved, being bent ſideways into the figure of an S, ſo that her progreſſion very much reſembled that of a crab. The prude alſo choſe the captain for her meſs-mate, and ordered breakfaſt for two only to be brought into another ſeparate room; while the lawyer and I, deſerted by the reſt of the company, were fain to put up with one another. I was a good deal chagrined at the ſtately reſerve of Mrs Sowpper, who I thought did not uſe me with all the complaiſance I deſerved; and my companion declared, that he had been a traveller theſe twenty years, and never knew the ſtage-coach rules ſo much infringed before. As for the honourable gentlewoman I could not conceive the meaning of her attachment to the lieutenant; and aſked the lawyer if he knew for which of the ſoldier's virtues ſhe admired him: the counſeller facetiouſly replied, "I ſuppoſe "the lady knows him to be an able contriver, and "wants him to make a ſtratagem with." I could not help laughing at the archneſs of the barriſter, who entertained me during breakfaſt with a great deal of talk of the ſame kind, at the expence of our fellow-travellers; and among other things told, he was ſorry to find the young lady addicted with ſuch immoderate vices.

When we had made an end of our repaſt, and paid our reckoning, we went into the room, took our places, and bribed the driver with the promiſe of a ſmall gratuity on the end of his fare, by hurrying them away with all poſſible ſpeed.

meal. This he performed to our ſatisfaction, after he had diſturbed their enjoyment with his importunate clamour. The mother and daughter obeyed the ſummons firſt, and coming to the coach-door, were obliged to deſire the coachman's aſſiſtance to get in, becauſe the lawyer and I had agreed to ſhew our reſentment by our neglect. They were no ſooner ſeated, than the captain appeared as much heated as if he had been purſued a dozen miles by an enemy; and immediately after him came the lady, not without ſome marks of diſorder. Having helped her up, he entered himſelf, growling a few oaths againſt the coachman for his impertinent interruption; and the lawyer comforted him by ſaying, that if he had ſuffered a *niſi prius* through the obſtinacy of the defendant, he would have an opportunity to join iſſue at the next ſtage. This laſt expreſſion gave offence to the grave gentlewoman, who told him, if ſhe was a man, ſhe would make him repent of ſuch obſcenity, and thanked God ſhe had never been in ſuch company before. At this inſinuation, the captain thought himſelf under a neceſſity of eſpouſing the lady's cauſe; and accordingly threatened to cut the lawyer's ears out of his head, if he ſhould give his tongue any ſuch liberties for the future. The poor counſellor begged pardon, and univerſal ſilence enſued.

CHAP.

CHAP. LV.

I reſolve to ingratiate myſelf with the mother, and am favoured by accident—the preciſe lady finds her huſband, and quits the coach—the Captain is diſappointed of his dinner—we arrive at Bath—*I accompany* Miſs Snapper *to the Long-room, where ſhe is attacked by* Beau N—ih, *and turns the laugh againſt him—I make love to her, and receive a check—ſquire her to an aſſembly, where I am bleſt with a ſight of my dear* Narciſſa, *which diſcompoſes me ſo much, that* Miſs Snapper, *obſerving my diſorder, is at pains to diſcover the cauſe—is piqued at the occaſion, and in our way home pays me a ſarcaſtic compliment—I am met by* Miſs Williams, *who is maid and confidante of* Narciſſa—*ſhe acquaints me with her lady's regard for me while under the diſguiſe of a ſervant, and deſcribes the tranſports of* Narciſſa, *on ſeeing me at the aſſembly in the character of a gentleman—I am ſurpriſed with an account of her aunt's marriage, and make an appointment to meet* Miſs Williams *next day.*

DURING this unſocial interval my pride and intereſt maintained a ſevere conflict, on the ſubject of Miſs Snapper, whom the one repreſented as unworthy of my notice, and the other propoſed as the object of my whole attention: the advantages and diſadvantages attending ſuch a match, were oppoſed to one another by my imagination; and at length, my judgment gave it ſo much in favour of the firſt, that I reſolved to proſecute my ſcheme, with all the addreſs in my power. I thought I perceived ſome concern in her countenance, occaſioned by my ſilence, which ſhe no doubt imputed to my diſguſt at her mother's behaviour; and as I believed the old woman could not fail of aſcribing my mute-neſs to the ſame motive, I determined to continue that ſullen conduct towards her, and fall upon ſome other method of manifeſting my eſteem for the daughter: nor was it difficult for me to make her acquainted with my ſentiments by the expreſſion of my looks, which I mo-

delled into the characters of humility and love; and which were anſwered by her with all the ſympathy and approbation I could deſire. But when I began to conſider, that without further opportunities of improving my ſucceſs, all the progreſs I had hitherto made could not much avail, and that ſuch opportunities could not be enjoyed without the mother's permiſſion; I concluded it would be requiſite to vanquiſh her coldneſs and ſuſpicion, by my aſſiduities and reſpectful behaviour on the road; and ſhe would in all likelihood invite me to viſit her at Bath, where I did not fear of being able to cultivate her acquaintance as much as would be neceſſary to the accompliſhment of my purpoſe. And, indeed, accident furniſhed me with an opportunity of obliging her ſo much, that ſhe could not with any appearance of good manners forbear to gratify my inclination.

When we arrived at our dining-place, we found all the eatables in the inn beſpoke by a certain nobleman, who had got the ſtart of us; and in all likelihood my miſtreſs and her mother muſt have dined with Duke Humphrey, had I not exerted myſelf in their behalf, and bribed the landlord with a glaſs of wine, to curtail his Lordſhip's entertainment of a couple of fowls and ſome bacon, which I ſent with my compliments to the ladies: they accepted my treat with a great many thanks, and deſired I would favour them with my company at dinner, where I amuſed the old gentlewoman ſo ſucceſsfully by maintaining a ſeemingly diſintereſted cafe in the midſt of my civility, that ſhe ſignified a deſire of being better acquainted, and hoped I would be ſo kind as to ſee her ſometimes at Bath. While I enjoyed myſelf in this manner, the pretty lady had the good fortune to meet with her huſband, who was no other than gentleman, or in other words, *valet de chambre* to the very nobleman whoſe coach ſtood at the door. Proud of the intereſt ſhe had in the houſe, ſhe affected to ſhew her power by introducing the Captain to her ſpouſe, as a perſon who had treated her with great civility; upon which he was invited to a ſhare of their dinner; while the poor lawyer finding himſelf utterly abandoned, made application to me, and was, through my interceſſion, admitted

mitted into our company. Having satisfied our appetites, and made ourselves very merry at the expence of the person of honour, the civil captain and complaisant husband, I did myself the pleasure of discharging the bill by stealth, for which I received a great many apologies and acknowledgments from my guests, and we re-embarked at the first warning. The officer was obliged at last to appease his hunger with a luncheon of bread and cheese, and a pint bottle of brandy, which he dispatched in the coach, cursing the inappetence of his Lordship, who had ordered dinner to be put back a whole hour.

Nothing remarkable happened during the remaining part of our journey, which was ended about twelve o'clock, when I waited on the ladies to the house of a relation, in which they intended to lodge, and passing that night in the inn, took lodgings next morning for myself.

The forenoon was spent in visiting every thing that was worth seeing in the place, which I did in company with a gentleman to whom Banter had given me a letter of introduction; and in the afternoon I waited on the ladies, and found Miss a good deal indisposed with the fatigues of the journey. As they foresaw they would have occasion for a male acquaintance to squire them at all public places, I was received with great cordiality, and had the mother's permission to conduct them next day to the Long-room, where we no sooner entered, than the eyes of every body present were turned upon us; and when we had suffered the martyrdom of their looks for some time, a whisper circulated at our expence, which was accompanied with many contemptuous smiles, and tittering observations, to my utter shame and confusion. I did not so much conduct as follow my charge to a place where she seated her mother and herself, with astonishing composure, notwithstanding the unmannerly behaviour of the whole company; which seemed to be assumed merely to put her out of countenance. The celebrated Mr N—th, who commonly attends in this place as master of the ceremonies, perceiving the disposition of the assembly, took upon himself the task of gratifying their ill nature still farther, by exposing my mistress to the

the edge of his wit. With this view he approached us with many bows and grimaces, and after having welcomed Miſs Snapper to the place, aſked her, in the hearing of all preſent, if ſhe could inform him of the name of Tobit's dog. I was ſo much incenſed at his inſolence, that I ſhould certainly have kicked him where he ſtood, without ceremony, had not the young lady prevented the effects of my indignation, by replying, with the utmoſt vivacity, "His name was N—ſh, and an impudent "dog he was." This repartee, ſo unexpected and juſt, raiſed ſuch an univerſal laugh at the aggreſſor, that all his aſſurance was inſufficient to ſupport him under their deriſion; ſo that after he had endeavoured to compoſe himſelf by taking ſnuff, and forcing a ſmile, he was obliged to ſneak off in a very ludicrous attitude; while my Dulcinea was applauded to the ſkies, for the brilliancy of her wit, and her acquaintance immediately courted by the beſt people of both ſexes in the room. This event, with which I was infinitely pleaſed at firſt, did not fail of alarming me, upon further reflection, when I conſidered, that the more ſhe was careſſed by perſons of diſtinction, the more her pride would be inflamed, and conſequently the obſtacles to my ſucceſs multiplied and enlarged. Nor were my preſaging fears untrue. That very night I perceived her a little intoxicated with the incenſe ſhe had received, and though ſhe ſtill behaved with a particular civility to me, I foreſaw, that as ſoon as her fortune ſhould be known, ſhe would be ſurrounded with a ſwarm of admirers, ſome one of whom might poſſibly, by excelling me in point of wealth, or in the arts of flattery and ſcandal, ſupplant me in her eſteem, and find means to make the mother of his party. I reſolved therefore to loſe no time, and being invited to ſpend the evening with them, found an opportunity in ſpite of the old gentlewoman's vigilance, to explain the meaning of my glances in the coach, by paying homage to her wit, and profeſſing myſelf enamoured of her perſon. She bluſhed at my declaration, and in a favourable manner diſapproved of the liberty I had taken, putting me in mind of our being ſtrangers to one another, and deſiring I would not be the means of interrupting our acquaintance,

quaintance, by any ſuch unſeaſonable ſtrokes of gallantry for the future. My ardour was effectually checked by this reprimand, which was, however, delivered in ſuch a gentle manner, that I had no cauſe to be diſobliged; and the arrival of her mother relieved me from a dilemma, in which I ſhould not have known how to demean myſelf a minute longer. Neither could I reſume the eaſineſs of carriage with which I came in, my miſtreſs acted on the reſerve, and the converſation beginning to flag, the old lady introduced her kinſwoman of the houſe, and propoſed a hand at whiſt.

While we amuſed ourſelves at this diverſion, I underſtood from the gentlewoman, that there was to be an aſſembly next night, at which I begged to have the honour of dancing with Miſs. She thanked me for the favour I intended her, aſſured me ſhe never did dance, but ſignified a deſire of ſeeing the company; upon which I offered my ſervice, and was accepted, not a little proud of being exempted from appearing with her, in a ſituation, that, notwithſtanding my profeſſion to the contrary, was not at all agreeable to my inclination.

Having ſupped, and continued the game, till ſuch time as the ſucceſſive yawns of the mother warned me to be gone, I took my leave, and went home, where I made Strap very happy with an account of my progreſs. Next day I put on my gayeſt apparel, and went to drink tea at Mrs Snapper's, according to appointment, when I found, to my inexpreſſible ſatisfaction, that ſhe was laid up with the tooth-ach, and that Miſs was to be intruſted to my care. Accordingly, we ſet out for the ball-room, pretty early in the evening, and took poſſeſſion of a commodious place, where we had not ſat longer than a quarter of an hour, when a gentleman dreſſed in a green frock came in, leading a young lady, whom I immediately diſcovered to be the adorable Narciſſa! Good Heaven! what were the thrillings of my ſoul at that inſtant! my reflection was overwhelmed with a torrent of agitation! my heart throbbed with ſurprizing violence! a ſudden miſt overſpread my eyes! my ears were invaded with a dreadful noiſe! I panted for want of breath, and in ſhort, was [illegible]

This firſt tumult ſubſiding, a crowd of flattering ideas ruſhed upon my imagination: every thing that was ſoft, ſenſible, and engaging in the character of that dear creature, recurred to my remembrance; and every favourable circumſtance of my own qualifications appeared in all the aggravation of ſelf-conceit, to heighten my expectation! Neither was this tranſport of long duration: the dread of her being already diſpoſed of, intervened, and over-caſt my enchanting reverie! My preſaging apprehenſion repreſented her encircled in the arms of ſome happy rival, and of conſequence for ever loſt to me! I was ſtung with this ſuggeſtion, and believing the perſon who conducted her to be the huſband of this amiable young lady, already devoted him to my fury, and ſtood up to mark him for my vengeance; when I recollected, to my unſpeakable joy, her brother the fox-hunter in the perſon of her gallant. Undeceived ſo much to my ſatisfaction in this particular, I gazed in a frenzy of delight on the irreſiſtible charms of his ſiſter, who no ſooner diſtinguiſhed me in the crowd, than her evident confuſion afforded a happy omen to my flame. At ſight of me ſhe ſtarted, the roſes inſtantly vaniſhed from her poliſhed cheeks, and returned in a moment with a double glow, that over-ſpread her lovely neck, while her enchanting boſom heaved with ſtrong emotion. I hailed theſe favourable ſymptoms, and lying in wait for her looks, did homage with my eyes. She ſeemed to approve my declaration, by the complacency of her aſpect, and I was ſo tranſported with the diſcovery, that, more than once, I was on the point of making up to her, and diſcloſing the throbbings of my heart in perſon, had not that profound veneration which her preſence always inſpired, reſtrained the unſeaſonable impulſe. My whole powers being engroſſed in this manner, it may be eaſily imagined how ill I entertained Miſs Snapper, on whom I could not now turn my eyes, without making compariſons very little to her advantage. It was not even in my power to return diſtinct anſwers to the queſtions ſhe aſked from time to time, ſo that ſhe could not help obſerving my abſence of behaviour; and, having a turn for obſervation, watched my glances, and tracing them to

the divine object, discovered the cause of my disorder. That she might, however, be convinced of the truth of her conjecture, she began to interrogate me with regard to Narcissa, and, notwithstanding all my endeavours to disengage my sentiments, perceived my attachment by my confusion. Upon which, she assumed a stateliness of behaviour, and sat silent during the remaining part of the entertainment. At any other time I should have been prodigiously alarmed at her suspicion, but at that instant, I was elevated by my passion above every other consideration. The mistress of my soul having retired with her mother, I discovered so much uneasiness at my situation, that Miss Snapper proposed to go home; and while I conducted her to her chair, told me she had too great a regard for me to keep me any longer in torment. I feigned ignorance of her meaning, and having seen her safely at her lodgings, took my leave, and went home in an extacy, where I disclosed every thing that had happened to my confident and humble servant Strap, who did not relish the accident so well as I expected; and observed, That a bird in hand is worth two in the bush. "But, however (said he) you know best, you know best." Next day as I went to the bath, in hopes of seeing or hearing some tidings of my fair enslaver, I was met by a gentlewoman, who having looked hard at me, cried, "O "Christ, Mr Random!" Surprised at this exclamation, I examined the countenance of the person who spoke, and immediately recognized my old sweet-heart and fellow-sufferer Miss Williams.

I was mightily pleased to find this unfortunate woman under such a decent appearance, and congratulating her on it, desired to know where I should have the pleasure of her company. She was extremely affected at the apparent coldness of my behaviour, and protested to know, that she, as yet, had no habitation that she could properly call her own; but was willing to accept of any place I would propose. I told her, that I was going to appear in public, and therefore could not receive her myself, but desired her to take a lodging for me, where, after every fatigue I should undergo, I might find one of her sex, ever happy in the service of a young lady, to

whom ſhe was recommended by a former miſtreſs deceaſed, into whoſe family ſhe had introduced herſelf by the honeſt deceit ſhe had concerted, while ſhe lived with me in the garret at London. She then expreſſed a vehement deſire to be acquainted with the viciſſitudes of my life ſince we parted, and aſcribed her curioſity to the concern ſhe had for my intereſt. I forthwith gratified her requeſt, and when I deſcribed my ſituation in Suſſex, perceived her to attend to my ſtory with particular eagerneſs. She interrupted me when I had finiſhed that period, "Good God! is it poſſible?" and then begged I would be ſo good as to continue my relation; which I did as briefly as I could, burning with impatience to know the cauſe of her ſurpriſe, about which I had already formed a very intereſting conjecture. Having therefore brought my adventures down to the preſent day, ſhe ſeemed very much affected with the different circumſtances of my fortune; and ſaying with a ſmile, ſhe believed my diſtreſſes were now at a period, proceeded to inform me, that the lady whom ſhe ſerved was no other than the charming Narciſſa, who had honoured her with her confidence for ſome time; that in conſequence of that truſt, ſhe had often repeated the ſtory of John Brown, with great admiration and regard; that ſhe loved to dwell upon the particulars of his character, and did not ſcruple to own a tender approbation of his flame. I became delirious with this piece of intelligence, ſtrained Miſs Williams in my embrace, called her the angel of my happineſs, and acted ſuch extravagancies, that ſhe would have been convinced of my ſincerity, had ſhe not been ſatisfied of my honour before. As ſoon as I was in a condition to yield attention, ſhe deſcribed the preſent ſituation of her miſtreſs, who had no ſooner come home the night before, than ſhe cloſetted her, and in a rapture of joy, gave her to know that ſhe had ſeen me at the ball, where I appeared in the character which ſhe always thought my due, with ſuch advantage of transformation, that unleſs my image had been engraven on her heart, it would have been impoſſible to know me for the perſon who had worn her aunt's livery: that by the language of my eyes, ſhe was aſſured of the continuance of my paſſion

tion for her, and consequently of my being unengaged to any other; and that though she did not doubt I would speedily fall upon some method of being introduced, she was impatient to hear of me; that she (Miss Williams) had been sent abroad this very morning on purpose to learn the name and character I at present bore. My bosom had been hitherto a stranger to such a flood of joy as now rushed upon it: my faculties were overborne by the tide; it was some time before I could open my mouth; and much longer ere I could utter a coherent sentence. At length, I fervently requested her to lead me immediately to the object of my adoration: but she resisted my importunity, and explained the danger of such premature conduct. "How favourable soever (said she) my lady's inclination towards you may be, this you may depend upon, that she will not commit the smallest trespass upon decorum, either in disclosing her own, or in receiving a declaration of your passion: and although the great veneration I have for you, has prompted me to reveal what she communicated to me in confidence, I know so well the severity of her sentiments with respect to the punctilios of her sex, that, if she should learn the least particle of it, she would not only dismiss me as a wretch unworthy of her benevolence, but also for ever shun the efforts of your love." I assented to the justness of her remonstrance, and desired she would assist me with her advice and direction: upon which, it was concerted between us, that, for the present, I should be contented with her telling Narcissa, that in the course of her inquiries, she could only learn my name: and that if in a day or two I could fall upon no other method of being made acquainted, she would deliver a letter from me, on pretence of consulting her happiness; and say that I met her in the street, and bribed her to that piece of service. Matters being thus adjusted, I kept my old acquaintance to breakfast, and learned from her conversation, that my rival Sir Timothy had drank himself into an apoplexy, of which he died five months ago; that the savage was still unmarried, and that his aunt had been seized with a whim which he little expected, and chosen the schoolmaster of the parish for her lord and husband:

but matrimony not agreeing with her conſtitution, ſhe had been hectick and dropſical a good while, and was now at Bath in order to drink the waters for the recovery of her health; that her niece had accompanied her thither at her requeſt, and attended her with the ſame affection as before, notwithſtanding the *faux pas* ſhe had committed: and that her nephew, who had been exaſperated at the loſs of her fortune, did not give his attendance out of good will, but purely to have an eye on his ſiſter, leſt ſhe ſhould likewiſe throw herſelf away, without his conſent or approbation. Having enjoyed ourſelves in this manner, and made an aſſignation to meet next day at a certain place, Miſs Williams took her leave; and Strap's looks being very inquiſitive about the nature of the communication ſubſiſting between us, I made him acquainted with the whole affair, to his great aſtoniſhment and ſatisfaction.

CHAP. LVI.

I become acquainted with Narciſſa's *brother, who invites me to his houſe—where I am introduced to that adorable creature—after dinner the ſquire retires to take his nap—* Freeman, *gueſſing the ſituation of my thoughts, withdraws likewiſe on pretence of buſineſs—I declare my paſſion for* Narciſſa *—am well received—charmed with her converſation—the ſquire detains us to ſupper—I elude his deſign by ſtratagem, and get home ſober.*

IN the afternoon I drank tea at the houſe of Mr Freeman, to whom I had been recommended by Banter; where I had not ſat five minutes, 'till the fox-hunter came in, and, by his familiar behaviour, appeared to be intimate with my friend. I was, at firſt, under ſome concern, leſt he ſhould recollect my features; but when I found myſelf introduced to him as a gentleman from London, without being diſcovered, I beheld the opportunity that brought me into his company; hoping that, in the

the courſe of our acquaintance, he would invite me to his houſe, nor were my hopes fruſtrated; for as we ſpent the evening together, he grew extremely fond of my converſation, aſked a great many childiſh queſtions about France and foreign parts; and ſeemed ſo highly entertained with my anſwers, that, in his cups, he ſhook me often by the hand, pronounced me an honeſt fellow, and, in fine, deſired our company at dinner the next day at his own houſe. My imagination was ſo much employed in anticipating the happineſs I was to enjoy the next day, that I ſlept very little that night; but getting up early in the morning, went to the place appointed, where I met my fine friend, and imparted to her my ſucceſs with the 'ſquire. She was very much pleaſed at the occaſion, which (ſhe ſaid) could not fail of being agreeable to Narciſſa, who, in ſpite of her paſſion for me, had mentioned ſome ſcruples relating to my true ſituation and character, which the delicacy of her ſentiments ſuggeſted, and which ſhe believed I would find it neceſſary to remove, tho' ſhe did not know how. I was a good deal ſtartled at this inſinuation, becauſe I foreſaw the difficulty I ſhould find in barely doing myſelf juſtice: for although it never was my intention to impoſe myſelf upon any woman, much leſs upon Narciſſa, as a man of fortune, I laid claim to the character of a gentleman, by birth, education, and behaviour; and yet (ſo unlucky had the circumſtances of my life fallen out) I ſhould find it a very hard matter to make good my pretenſions even to theſe, eſpecially to the laſt, which was the moſt eſſential. Miſs Williams was as ſenſible as I, of this my diſadvantage; but comforted me with obſerving, that whenever a woman has beſtowed her affections on a man, ſhe cannot help judging of him in all reſpects, with a partiality eaſily influenced in his favour; ſhe remarked, that although ſome ſituations of my life had been low, yet none of them had been infamous; that my indigence had been the crime, not of me, but of fortune; and that the mental I had undergone, by improving the faculties both of mind and body, qualified me the more for any dignified ſtation; and would, of conſequence, recommend me to the good graces of any ſenſible woman, ſhe therefore adviſed me to be always open and unreſerved

ved to the enquiries of my miſtreſs, without unneceſſarily betraying the meaneſt occurrences of my fate; and truſt to the ſtrength of her love and reflection for the reſt. The ſentiments of this ſenſible young woman on this, as well as on almoſt every other ſubject, perfectly agreed with mine; I thanked her for the care ſhe took of my intereſts, and promiſing to behave myſelf according to her direction, we parted, after ſhe had aſſured me, that I might depend upon her beſt offices with her miſtreſs, and that ſhe would, from time to time, communicate to me ſuch intelligence as ſhe could procure, relating to my flame. Having dreſſed myſelf to the beſt advantage, I waited for the time of dinner with the moſt fearful impatience; and as the hour drew nigh, my heart beat with ſuch increaſed velocity, and my ſpirits contracted ſuch diſorder, that I began to ſuſpect my reſolution, and even to wiſh myſelf diſengaged. At laſt Mr Freeman called at my lodgings in his way, and I accompanied him to the houſe where all my happineſs was depoſited. We were very kindly received by the ſquire, who ſat ſmoaking his pipe in a parlour, and aſked if we choſe to drink any thing before dinner; though I never had more occaſion for a cordial, I was aſhamed to accept his offer, which was alſo refuſed by my friend. We ſat down, however, and entered into converſation, which laſted half an hour, ſo that I had time to recollect myſelf; and (ſo capricious were my thoughts) even to hope that Narciſſa would not appear. When, all of a ſudden, a ſervant coming in gave us notice that dinner was upon the table. And my perturbation returned with ſuch violence, that I could ſcarce conceal it from the company, as I aſcended the ſtair-caſe. When I entered the dining-room, the firſt object that ſaluted my raviſhed eyes was the divine Narciſſa, bluſhing like Aurora, adorned with all the graces that meekneſs, innocence, and beauty can diffuſe! I was ſeized with a giddineſs, my knees tottered, and I ſcarce had ſtrength enough to perform the ceremony of ſalutation, when her brother, clapping me on the ſhoulder, cried, "Harraker Random, that there is my ſiſter,." I approached her with eagerneſs and fear; but in the moment of our embrace, my ſoul was agonized with rapture! It was

a lucky

a lucky circumſtance for us both, that my entertainer was not endowed with an uncommon ſtock of penetration; for our mutual confuſion was ſo manifeſt, that Mr Freeman perceived it, and as we went home together, congratulated me on my good fortune. But ſo far was Bruin from entertaining the leaſt ſuſpicion, that he encouraged me to begin a converſation with my miſtreſs in a language unknown to him, by telling her, that he had brought a gentleman (meaning me) who could gabber with her in French and other foreign lingos, as faſt as ſhe pleaſed: then turning to me, ſaid, "Odds bobs! I wiſh "you would hold diſcourſe with her, in your French or "Italiano; and tell me if ſhe underſtands it as well as ſhe "would be thought to do.—There's her aunt and ſhe "will chatter together whole days in it, and I can't have "a mouthful of Engliſh for love or money." I conſulted the looks of my amiable miſtreſs, and found her averſe to his propoſal, which indeed ſhe declined with a ſweetneſs of denial peculiar to herſelf, as a piece of diſreſpect to that part of the company which did not underſtand the language in queſtion. As I had the happineſs of ſitting oppoſite to her, I feaſted my eyes much more than my palate, which ſhe tempted in vain by the moſt delicious bits carved by her fair hand, and recommended by her perſuaſive tongue; but all my other appetites were ſwallowed up in this immenſity of my love, which I fed by gazing inceſſantly on the delightful object. Dinner was ſcarce ended, when the ſquire became very drowſy, and after ſeveral dreadful yawns, got up, ſtretched himſelf, took two or three turns across the room, begged we would allow him to take a ſhort nap, and having laid a ſtrong injunction on his ſiſter to detain us till his return, went to his repoſe without any farther ceremony. He had not been gone many minutes, when Freeman, gueſſing the ſituation of my heart, and thinking he could not do me a greater favour, than to leave me alone with Narciſſa, pretended to recollect himſelf all of a ſudden, and ſtarting up, begged the lady's pardon for half an hour, having luckily remembered an engagement of ſome conſequence, that he muſt perform at that inſtant. So ſaying, he went away, promiſing to be back time enough

for

for tea; leaving my miſtreſs and me in great confuſion. Now that I enjoyed an opportunity of diſcloſing the pantings of my ſoul, I had not power to uſe it. I ſtudied many pathetic declarations, but when I attempted to give them utterance, my tongue denied its office; and ſhe ſat ſilent, with a downcaſt look, full of anxious alarm, her boſom heaving with expectation of ſome great event. At length I endeavoured to put an end to this ſolemn pauſe, and began with, "It is very ſurpriſing, madam." Here the ſound dying away, I made a full ſtop, while Narciſſa ſtarting, bluſhed, and with a timid accent, anſwered, "Sir?" Confounded at this note of interrogation, I pronounced with the moſt ſheepiſh baſhfulneſs, "Madam!" to which ſhe replied, "I beg pardon—I thought you had "ſpoke to me." Another pauſe enſued—I made another effort, and though my voice faultered very much at the beginning, made ſhift to expreſs myſelf in this manner: "I ſay, Madam, it is very ſurpriſing that love "ſhould act ſo inconſiſtent with itſelf, as to deprive its "votaries of the uſe of their faculties, when they have moſt "need of them. Since the happy occaſion of being a-"lone with you preſented itſelf, I have made many un-"ſucceſsful attempts to declare a paſſion for the loveliеſt "of her ſex,—a paſſion which took poſſeſſion of my "ſoul, when my cruel fate compelled me to wear a ſer-"vile diſguiſe ſo unſuitable to my birth, ſentiments, and "let me add, my deſerts; yet favourable on one reſpect, "as it furniſhed me with an opportunity of ſeeing and "adoring your perfections.—Yes, Madam, it was then "your dear idea entered my boſom, where it has lived "unimpaired in the midſt of numberleſs cares, and ani-"mated me againſt a thouſand cares and calami-"ties!" While I ſpoke thus ſhe concealed her face with her fan; and when I ceaſed, recovering herſelf from the moſt beautiful confuſion, told me that ſhe thought herſelf very much obliged by my favourable opinion of her; and that ſhe was very ſorry to hear I had been unfortunate. Encouraged by this gentle reply, I proceeded to own myſelf ſufficiently rewarded by her kind compaſſion for what I had undergone, and declared that the future happineſs of my life depended [illegible] her

her. "Sir," said she, "I should be very ungrateful if, "after the signal protection you once afforded me, I "could refuse to contribute towards your happiness, in "any reasonable condescension." Transported at this acknowledgment, I threw myself at her feet, and begged she would regard my passion with a favourable eye. She was alarmed at my behaviour, intreated me to rise lest her brother should discover me in that posture, and to spare her, for the present, upon a subject for which she was altogether unprepared. Upon this, I rose, assuring her, I would rather die than disobey her, but in the mean time, begged her to consider how precious the minutes of this opportunity were, and what restraint I put upon my inclination, in sacrificing them to her desire. She smiled with unspeakable sweetness, and said, there would be no want of opportunities, provided I could maintain the good opinion her brother had conceived of me; and I, enchanted with her charms, seized her hand, which I well nigh devoured with kisses. But she checked my boldness, with a severity of countenance; and desired I would not so far forget myself or her, as to endanger the esteem she had for me; she reminded me of our being almost strangers to one another, and of the necessity there was for knowing me better, before she could take any resolution in my favour; and in short, mingled so much good sense and complacency in her reproof, that I became as much enamoured of her understanding as I had been before of her beauty, and asked pardon for my presumption with the utmost reverence of conviction. She forgave my offence with her usual affability; and sealed my pardon with a look so full of bewitching tenderness, that for some minutes my senses were lost in extacy! I afterwards endeavoured to regulate my behaviour according to her desire, and turn the conversation upon a more indifferent subject; but her presence was an insurmountable obstacle to my design; while I beheld so much excellence, I found it impossible to call my attention from the contemplation of it. I gazed with unutterable fondness! I grew mad with admiration! "My "condition is unsupportable," cried I, "I am distracted "with passion! why are you so exquisitely fair?—Why

" are you ſo enchantingly good ?—Why has nature digni-
" fied you with charms ſo much above the ſtandard of
" women ? and, wretch that I am, how dares my un-
" worthineſs aſpire to the enjoyment of ſuch perfec-
" tion !"

She was ſtartled at my ravings, reaſoned down my tranſport, and, by her irreſiſtible eloquence, ſoothed my ſoul into a ſtate of tranquil felicity: but leſt I might ſuffer a relapſe, induſtriouſly propoſed other ſubjects to entertain my imagination. She chid me for having omitted to inquire about her aunt, who (ſhe aſſured me) in the midſt of all her abſence of temper, and detachment from common affairs, often talked of me with uncommon warmth. I profeſſed my veneration for the good lady, excuſed my omiſſion, by imputing it to the violence of my love, which engroſſed my whole ſoul, and deſired to know the preſent ſituation of her health. Upon which the amiable Narciſſa repeated what I had heard before of her marriage, with all the tenderneſs for her reputation that the ſubject would admit of; told me, ſhe lived with her huſband, hard by, and was ſo much afflicted with a dropſy, and waſted by a conſumption, that ſhe had ſmall hopes of her recovery. Having expreſſed my ſorrow for her diſtemper, I queſtioned her about my good friend Mrs Sagely, who I learned (to my great ſatisfaction) was ſtill in good health, and by the encomiums ſhe beſtowed upon me after I was gone, confirmed the favourable impreſſion my behaviour at parting had made on Narciſſa's heart. This circumſtance introduced an inquiry into the conduct of Sir Timothy Thicket, who (ſhe informed me) had found means to incenſe her brother ſo much againſt me, that ſhe found it impoſſible to undeceive him; but, on the contrary, ſuffered very much in her own character, by his ſcandalous inſinuations, that the whole pariſh was alarmed and actually in purſuit of me; ſo that ſhe had been in the utmoſt conſternation upon my account, well knowing how little my own innocence and her teſtimony would have weighed with the ignorance, prejudice, and brutality of thoſe who muſt have judged me, had I been apprehended; that Sir Timothy being ſeized with a fit of the apoplexy, from which with great

great difficulty he was recovered, began to be apprehenſive of death, and to prepare himſelf accordingly for that great event; as a ſtep to which, he ſent for her brother, owned, with great contrition, the brutal deſign he had upon her, and of conſequence acquitted me of the aſſault, robbery, and correſpondence with her, which he had laid to my charge, after which confeſſion he lived about a month in a languiſhing condition, and was carried off by a ſecond aſſault.

Every word that this dear creature ſpoke, riveted the chains with which ſhe held me enſlaved! My miſchievous fancy began to work, and the tempeſt of my paſſion to wake again; when the return of Freeman deſtroyed the tempting opportunity, and enabled me to quell the riſing tumult. A little while after, the ſquire ſtaggered into the room, rubbing his eyes, and calling for his tea, which he drank out of a ſmall bowl qualified with brandy; we ſipped ſome in the ordinary way: Narciſſa left us in order to viſit her aunt, and when Freeman and I propoſed to take our leave, the fox-hunter inſiſted on our ſpending the evening at his houſe with ſuch an obſtinacy of affection that we were obliged to comply. For my own part, I ſhould have been glad of the invitation, by which, in all likelihood, I ſhould have been bleſt with more of his ſiſter's company, had I not been afraid of riſking her eſteem, by entering into a debauch of drinking with him, which, from the knowledge of his character, I foreſaw would happen: but there was no remedy, I was forced to rely upon the ſtrength of my conſtitution, which I hoped would reſiſt intoxication longer than the ſquire's: and truſt to the good nature and diſcretion of my miſtreſs for the reſt.

Our entertainer reſolving to begin betimes, ordered the table to be furniſhed with liquor and glaſſes immediately after tea, but we abſolutely refuſed to ſet in for drinking ſo ſoon; and we prevailed upon him to paſs away an hour or two at whiſt, in which we engaged as ſoon as Narciſſa returned. The ſavage and I happened to be partners at firſt, and as my thoughts were wholly employed on a more intereſting game, I played ſo ill that he loſt all patience, swore bitterly, and threatned to call for wine

if they would not grant him another aſſociate. This deſire was gratified, and Narciſſa and I were of a ſide; he won for the ſame reaſon that made him loſe before; I was ſatisfied, my lovely partner did not repine, and the time ſlipped away very agreeably, until we were told that ſupper was ſerved in another room.

The ſquire was enraged to find the evening ſo unprofitably ſpent, and wrecked his vengeance on the cards, which he tore and committed to the flames with many execrations; threatning to make us redeem our loſs with a large glaſs and a quick circulation! and indeed we had no ſooner ſupped, and my charmer withdrawn, than he began to put his threats in execution. Three bottles of port (for he drank no other ſort of wine) were placed before us, with as many water-glaſſes, which were immediately filled to the brim, after his example, by each out of his reſpective allowance, and emptied in a trice, *to the beſt in Chriſtendom*. Though I ſwallowed this, and the next as faſt as the glaſs could be replenished, without heſitation or ſhew of reluctance, I perceived that my brain would not be able to bear many more bumpers of this ſort; and dreading the perſeverence of a champion who began with ſuch vigour, I determined to make up for the deficiency of my ſtrength by a ſtratagem, which I actually put in practice when the ſecond courſe of bottles was called for. The wine being ſtrong and heady, I was already a good deal diſcompoſed by the diſpatch we had made, Freeman's eyes began to reel, and Bruin himſelf was elevated into a ſong, which he uttered with great vociferation. When I therefore ſaw the ſecond round brought in, I aſſumed a gay air, entertained him with a French catch on the ſubject of drinking, which, though he did not underſtand it, delighted him highly, and telling him that your choice ſpirits at Paris never troubled themſelves with glaſſes, aſked if he had not a bowl or cup in the houſe that would contain a whole quart of wine. "Odds niggers!" cried he, "I have a ſilver caudle-cup that holds juſt the "quantity, for all the world—fetch it hither, Nimps." The veſſel being produced, I bid him decant his bottle into it, which having done, I nodded in a very deliberate manner, and ſaid, "I pledge you." He ſtared at me

for

for ſome time, and crying, " What, all at one pull! " meaſter Randan?"—I anſwered, " All at one pull, Sir, " you are no milk-ſop—we ſhall do you juſtice." " Shall " you?" ſaid he, ſhaking me by the hand, " odd, then, " I'll ſee it out, an't were a mile to the bottom—Here's " to our better acquaintance, Mr Randan." So ſaying, he applied it to his lips, and emptied it in a breath. I knew the effect of it would be almoſt inſtantaneous; therefore, taking the cup, I began to diſcharge my bottle into it, telling him he was now qualified to drink with the Cham of Tartary. I had no ſooner pronounced theſe words, than he took umbrage at them, and after ſeveral attempts to ſpit, made ſhift to ſtutter out, " A f—t f—t " for your Chams of T———Tartary! I am a f—f— " free-born Engliſhman, worth th—three thouſand a- " year, and v—— value no man, damme!" then dropping his jaw, and fixing his eyes, he hickup'd aloud, and fell upon the floor as mute as a flounder. Mr Freeman, heartily rejoiced at his defeat, aſſiſted me in carrying him to bed, where we left him to the care of his ſervants, and went home to our reſpective habitations, congratulating one another on our good fortune.

CHAP. LVII.

Miſs Williams *informs me of* Narciſſa's *approbation of my flame —I appeaſe the* Squire—*write to my miſtreſs, am blaſted with an anſwer—beg leave of her brother to dance with her at a ball; obtain his conſent and her's—enjoy a private converſation with her—am perplexed with reflections—have the honour of appearing her partner at the ball—we are complimented by a certain nobleman—he diſcovers ſome ſymptoms of paſſion for* Narciſſa—*I am ſtung with jealouſy*—Narciſſa *aſtoniſhed, retires—I obſerve* Melinda *in the company—the* Squire *is captivated by her beauty.*

I WAS met next morning, at the uſual place, by Miſs Williams, who gave me joy at the progreſs I had made in the affection of her miſtreſs, and bleſſed me with

an account of that dear creature's converſation with her, after ſhe had retired the night before from our company. I could ſcarce believe her information, when ſhe recounted her expreſſions in my favour, ſo much more warm and paſſionate were they than my moſt ſanguine hopes had preſaged; and was particularly pleaſed to hear that ſhe approved of my behaviour to her brother, after ſhe withdrew. Tranſported with the news of my happineſs, I preſented my ring to the meſſenger, as a teſtimony of my gratitude and ſatisfaction; but ſhe was above ſuch mercenary conſiderations, and refuſed my compliment with ſome reſentment, ſaying, ſhe was not a little mortified to ſee my opinion of her ſo low and contemptible. I did myſelf a piece of juſtice by explaining my behaviour on this head, and to convince her of my eſteem, promiſed to be ruled by her directions in the proſecution of the whole affair, which I had ſo much at heart, that the repoſe of my life depended upon the conſequence.

As I fervently wiſhed for another interview, where I might pour out the effuſions of my love, without danger of being interrupted, and perhaps reap ſome endearing return from the queen of my deſires, I implored her advice and aſſiſtance in promoting this event; but ſhe gave me to underſtand, that Narciſſa would make no precipitate compliances of this kind, and that I would do well to cultivate her brother's acquaintance, in the courſe of which I would not want opportunities of removing that reſerve, which my miſtreſs thought herſelf obliged to maintain during the infancy of our correſpondence. In the mean time, ſhe promiſed to tell her lady, that I had endeavoured, by preſents and perſuaſion, to prevail upon her (Miſs Williams) to deliver a letter from me, which ſhe had refuſed to charge herſelf with, until ſhe ſhould know Narciſſa's ſentiments of the matter; and ſaid by this means ſhe did not doubt of being able to open a literary commerce between us, which could not fail of introducing a more intimate correſpondence.

I approved of her counſel, and our appointment being renewed for next day, left her with an intent of falling upon ſome method of making reconcile to the ſquire, who, I ſuppoſed, would be offended with the trick we had put upon

upon him. With this view I conſulted Freeman, who, from his knowledge of the fox-hunter's diſpoſition, aſſured me there was no other method of pacifying him, than that of ſacrificing ourſelves for one night, to an equal match with him in drinking: this I found myſelf neceſſitated to comply with, for the intereſt of my paſſion, and therefore determined to commit the debauch at my own lodgings, that I might run no riſk of being diſcovered by Narciſſa, in a ſtate of brutal degeneracy. Mr Freeman, who was to be of the party, went at my deſire, to the ſquire in order to engage him, while I took care to furniſh myſelf for his reception. My invitation was accepted, my gueſts honoured me with their company in the evening, when Bruin gave me to underſtand that he had drank many tuns of wine in his life, but was never ſerved ſuch a trick as I had played upon him the night before. I promiſed to atone for my treſpaſs, and having ordered to every man his bottle, began the conteſt with a bumper to the health of Narciſſa. The toaſts circulated with great devotion, the liquor began to operate, our mirth grew noiſy; and as Freeman and I had the advantage of drinking ſmall French claret, the ſavage was effectually tamed, before our ſenſes were in the leaſt affected, and carried home in a kind of apoplexy of drunkenneſs.

I was next morning, as uſual, favoured with a viſit from my kind and punctual confidante, who telling me, ſhe was permitted to receive my letters for her miſtreſs; I took up the pen immediately, and following the firſt dictates of my paſſion, wrote as follows:

"DEAR MADAM,

"WERE it poſſible for the powers of utterance, to "reveal the ſoft emotions of my ſoul; the fond "anxiety, the glowing hopes and chilling fears that rule "my breaſt by turns, I ſhould need no other witneſs "than this paper, to evince the purity and ardor of that "flame your charms have kindled in my heart. But, "alas! expreſſion wrongs my love! I am inſpired with "conceptions that no language can convey! Your beau-"ty fills me with wonder, your mind raviſhes with ra-

"viſhment

" viſhment, and your goodneſs with adoration! I am
" tranſported with deſire, diſtracted with doubts, and
" tortured with impatience! ſuffer me then, lovely ar-
" bitreſs of my fate, to approach your perſon, to breathe
" in ſoft murmurs my paſſion to your ear, to offer the
" ſacrifice of a heart overflowing with the moſt genuine
" and diſintereſted love; to gaze with extaſy on the di-
" vine object of my wiſhes, to hear the muſic of her en-
" chanting tongue! to rejoice in her ſmiles of approba-
" tion, and baniſh the moſt intolerable ſuſpence from
" the boſom of

" Your enraptured

" R—— R——."

Having finiſhed this effuſion, I committed it to the care of my faithful friend, with an injunction to ſecond my intreaty with all her eloquence and influence; and in the mean time went to dreſs, with an intention of viſiting Mrs Snapper and Miſs, whom I had utterly neglected, and indeed almoſt forgot, ſince my dear Narciſſa had reſumed the empire of my ſoul. The old gentlewoman received me very kindly, and Miſs affected a frankneſs and gaiety, which, however, I could eaſily perceive was forced and diſſembled; among other things, ſhe pretended to joke me upon my paſſion for Narciſſa, which ſhe averred was no ſecret, and aſked, if I intended to dance with her at the next aſſembly? I was a good deal concerned to find myſelf become the town-talk on this ſubject, leſt the ſquire having notice of my inclinations, ſhould diſapprove of them, and by breaking off all correſpondence with me, deprive me of the opportunities I now enjoyed. But I reſolved to uſe the intereſt I had with him, while it laſted; and that very night meeting him occaſionally, aſked his permiſſion to ſolicit her company at the ball, which he very readily granted to my inexpreſſible ſatisfaction.

Having been kept awake the greateſt part of the night, by a thouſand delightful reveries that took poſſeſſion of my fancy, I got up betimes, and flying to the place of

rendezvous, had in a little time the pleaſure of ſeeing Miſs Williams approach, with a ſmile on her countenance, which I interpreted into a good omen. Neither was I miſtaken in my preſage: ſhe preſented me with a letter from the idol of my ſoul, which, after having kiſſed it with great devotion, I opened with the utmoſt eagerneſs, and was bleſſed with her approbation in theſe terms:

" SIR,

" TO ſay I look upon you with indifference, would " be a piece of diſſimulation, which, I think, no " decorum requires, and no cuſtom can juſtify. As my " heart never felt an impreſſion that my tongue was aſha- " med to declare, I will not ſcruple to own myſelf plea- " ſed with your paſſion, confident of your integrity, and " ſo well convinced of my own diſcretion, that I ſhould " not heſitate in granting you the interview you deſire, " were I not over-awed by the prying curioſity of a ma- " licious world, the cenſure of which might be fatally " prejudicial to the reputation of

" Your

" NARCISSA."

No anchorite, in the extaſy of devotion, ever adored a relic with more fervour than that with which I kiſſed this inimitable proof of my charmer's candour, generoſity, and affection! I read it over an hundred times; was raviſhed with her confeſſion in the beginning; but the ſubſcription of YOUR NARCISSA, yielded me ſuch delight as I had never felt before! my happineſs was ſtill increaſed by Miſs Williams, who bleſſed me with a repetition of her lady's tender expreſſions in my favour, when ſhe received and read my letter. In ſhort, I had all the reaſon in the world to believe that this gentle creature's boſom was poſſeſſed by a paſſion for me, as warm, though perhaps not ſo impetuous as mine for her.

I informed my friend of the ſquire's conſent, with regard to my dancing with Narciſſa at the ball, and deſired her to tell her miſtreſs, that I would do myſelf the ho-

nour of viſiting her in the afternoon, in conſequence of his permiſſion, when I hoped to find her as indulgent as her brother had been complaiſant in that particular. Miſs Williams expreſſed a good deal of joy, at hearing I was ſo much in favour with the fox-hunter, and ventured to aſſure me, that my viſit would be very agreeable to my miſtreſs, the rather becauſe Bruin was engaged to dine abroad. This was a circumſtance, which I ſcarce need ſay pleaſed me. I went immediately to the Long-room, where I found him, and affecting to know nothing of his engagement, told him, I would do myſelf the pleaſure to wait upon him in the afternoon, and to preſent his ſiſter with a ticket for the ball. He ſhook me by the hand, according to cuſtom, and giving me to underſtand that he was to dine abroad, deſired me to go and drink tea with Narciſſa notwithſtanding, and promiſed to prepare her for my viſit in the mean time.

Every thing ſucceeding thus to my wiſh, I waited with incredible patience for the time, which no ſooner arrived, than I haſtened to the ſcene, which my fancy had preoccupied long before. I was introduced accordingly, to the dear inchantreſs, whom I found accompanied by Miſs Williams, who, on pretence of ordering tea, retired at my approach. This favourable accident, which alarmed my whole ſoul, diſordered her alſo. I found myſelf actuated by an irreſiſtible impulſe, I advanced to her with eagerneſs and awe; and profiting by the confuſion that prevailed over her, claſped the fair angel in my arms, and imprinting a glowing kiſs upon her lips, more ſoft and fragrant than the dewy roſe-bud, juſt burſting from the ſtem! her face was in an inſtant covered with bluſhes, her eyes ſparkled with reſentment; I threw myſelf at her feet and implored her pardon. Her love became advocate in my cauſe; her look ſoftened into forgiveneſs, ſhe raiſed me up, and chid me with ſo much ſweetneſs of diſpleaſure, that I was tempted to repeat the offence, had not the coming of a ſervant with the tea-board prevented my preſumption. While we were ſubject to be interrupted or over-heard, we converſed about the approaching ball, at which ſhe promiſed to grace me as a partner; but when the equipage was removed, and we

were

were left alone, I resumed the more interesting theme, and expressed myself with such transport and agitation that my mistress, fearing I would commit some extravagance, rung the bell for her maid, whom she detained in the room, as a check upon my vivacity. I was not sorry for this precaution, because I could unbosom myself without reserve, before Miss Williams, who was the confidante of us both. I therefore gave a loose to the inspirations of my passion, which operated so successfully on the tender affections of Narcissa, that she laid aside the restraint she had hitherto wore, and blessed me with the most melting declaration of her mutual flame! It was impossible for me to forbear taking the advantage of this endearing condescension. She now gently yielded to my embrace, while I, encircling all that I held dear within my arms, tasted in advance, the joys of that paradise I hoped, in a little time, wholly to possess! We spent the afternoon in all the extasy of hope that the most fervent love, exchanged by mutual vows, could inspire; and Miss Williams was so much affected with our chaste caresses, which recalled the full remembrance of what she was, that her eyes were filled with tears.

The evening being pretty far advanced, I forced myself from the dear object of my flame, who indulged me in a tender embrace at parting; and repairing to my lodgings, communicated to my friend Strap every circumstance of my happiness, which filled him with so much pleasure, that it ran over at his eyes; and he prayed heartily, that no envious devil might, as formerly, dash the cup of blessing from my lip. When I reflected on what had happened, and especially on the unreserved protestations of Narcissa's love, I could not help being amazed at her omitting to enquire into the particular circumstances of the life and fortune of one whom she had favoured with her affection, and I began to be a little anxious about the situation of her finances; well knowing that I should do an irreparable injury to the person my soul held most dear, if I should espouse her, without being able to support her in the rank which was certainly her due. I had heard, indeed, while I served her aunt, that her father had left her a considerable sum; and that every body be-

lieved ſhe would inherit the greateſt part of her kinſwoman's dowry; but I did not know how far ſhe might be reſtricted by the old gentleman's will, in the enjoyment of what he left her; and I was too well informed of the virtuoſi's late conduct, to think my miſtreſs could have any expectations from that quarter. I confided, however, in the good ſenſe and delicacy of my charmer, who, I was ſure, would not conſent to unite her fate with mine, before ſhe had fully conſidered and provided for the conſequence.

The ball-night being arrived, I dreſſed myſelf in a ſuit I had reſerved for ſome grand occaſion; and having drank tea with Narciſſa and her brother, conducted my angel to the ſcene, where ſhe in a moment eclipſed all her female competitors for beauty, and attracted the admiration of the whole aſſembly. My heart dilated with pride on this occaſion, and my triumph rejected all bounds, when, after we had danced together, a certain nobleman, remarkable for his figure and influence in the *beau monde*, came up, and in the hearing of all preſent, honoured us with a very particular compliment, upon our accompliſhments and appearance;—but this tranſport was ſoon checked, when I perceived his Lordſhip attach himſelf with great aſſiduity to my miſtreſs; and ſay ſome warm things, which I thought ſavoured too much of paſſion. It was then I began to feel the pangs of jealouſy—I dreaded the power and addreſs of my rival. I ſickened at his diſcourſe; when ſhe opened her lips to anſwer, my heart died within me—when ſhe ſmiled, I felt the pains of the damned! I was enraged at his preſumption; I curſed her complaiſance! at length he quitted her and went to the other ſide of the room. Narciſſa, ſuſpecting nothing of the rage that inflamed me, put ſome queſtions to me, as ſoon as he was gone, to which I made no other reply than a grim look, which too well denoted the agitation of my breaſt, and ſurpriſed her not a little. She no ſooner obſerved my emotion, than ſhe changed colour, and aſked what ailed me; but before I could make an anſwer, her brother, pulling me by the ſleeve, bid me take notice of a lady who ſat fronting us, whom I immediately, to my moſt aſtoniſhment, diſtinguiſhed to be Melinda,

linda, accompanied by her mother and an elderly gentleman, whom I did not know. "Wounds! Mr Random, (cried the 'ſquire) is ſhe not a delicate piece of "ſtuff! 'Sdeath! I have a good mind—If I thought "ſhe was a ſingle perſon." Notwithſtanding the perplexity I was in, I had reflection enough to foreſee that my paſſion might ſuffer greatly by the preſence of this lady, who, in all probability, would revenge herſelf upon me, for having formerly diſgraced her, by ſpreading reports to my prejudice. I was therefore alarmed at theſe ſymptoms of the ſquire's admiration; and, for ſome time, did not know what reply to make, when he aſked my opinion of her beauty. At length I came to a determination, and told him that her name was Melinda, that ſhe had a fortune of ten thouſand pounds, and was ſaid to be under promiſe of marriage to a certain lord, who deferred his nuptials, until he ſhould be of age, which would happen in a few months. I thought this piece of intelligence, which I had myſelf invented, would have hindered him effectually from entertaining any further thoughts of her; but I was egregiouſly miſtaken; the fox-hunter had too much ſelf-ſufficiency to deſpair of ſucceſs with any competitor on earth. He therefore made light of her engagement, ſaying, with a ſmile of ſelf-approbation, "Mayhap ſhe will change her mind—what ſignifies his "being a lord? I think myſelf as good a man as e'er a "lord in Chriſtendom; and I'll ſee if a commoner "worth three thouſand a-year won't ſerve her turn." This determination ſtartled me not a little; I knew he would ſoon diſcover the contrary of what I advanced, and as I believed he would find her ear open to his addreſſes, did not doubt of meeting with every obſtacle in my amour, that her malice could invent, and her influence with him execute. This reflection increaſed my chagrin—my vexation was evident—Narciſſa inſiſted on going home immediately; and as I led her to the door, her noble admirer, with a look full of languiſhment, directed to her a profound bow, which ſtung me to the ſoul. Before ſhe went into the chair, ſhe aſked with an appearance of concern, what was the matter with me? and I could

could pronounce no more than, " By Heaven ! I'm dif-
" tracted !"

CHAP. LVIII.

Tortured with jealouſy, I go home and abuſe Strap—*receive a meſſage from* Narciſſa, *in conſequence of which I haſten to her apartment, where her indearing aſſurances baniſh all my doubts and apprehenſions—in my retreat diſcover ſomebody in the dark, whom ſuſpecting to be a ſpy, I reſolve to kill; but to my great ſurpriſe am convinced of his being no other than* Strap—Melinda *ſlanders me—I become acquainted with* Lord Quiverwit, *who endeavours to found me with regard to* Narciſſa—*the ſquire is introduced to his Lordſhip, and grows cold towards me—I learn from my confidante, that this nobleman profeſſes honourable love to my miſtreſs, who continues faithful to me, notwithſtanding the ſcandalous reports ſhe has heard to my prejudice—I am mortified with an aſſurance that her whole fortune depends on the pleaſure of her brother*—Mr Freeman *condoles me on the decline of my character, which I vindicate ſo much to his ſatisfaction, that he undertakes to combat fame in my behalf.*

HAVING uttered this exclamation, at which ſhe ſighed, I went home in the condition of a frantic bedlamite; and finding the fire in my apartment almoſt extinguiſhed, vented my fury upon poor Strap, whoſe ear I pinched with ſuch violence, that he roared hideouſly with pain, and when I quitted my hold, looked ſo foolithly aghaſt, that no unconcerned ſpectator could have ſeen him without being ſeized with an immoderate fit of laughter. It is true, I was ſoon ſenſible of the injury I had done, and aſked pardon for the outrage I had committed; upon which my faithful valet, ſhaking his head, ſaid, " I forgive you, and may God forgive you." But he could not help ſhedding ſome tears at my unkindneſs. I felt unſpeakable remorſe for what I had done, curſed my own ingratitude, and conſidered his tears as a reproach

proach that my ſoul, in her preſent diſturbance, could not bear. It ſet all my paſſions into a new ferment, I ſwore horrible oaths without meaning or application, I foamed at the mouth, kicked the chairs about the room, and played abundance of mad pranks that frightened my friend almoſt out of his ſenſes. At length my tranſport ſubſided, I became melancholy, and wept inſenſibly.

During this ſtate of dejection, I was ſurpriſed with the appearance of Miſs Williams, whom Strap, blubbering all the while, had conducted into the chamber, without giving me previous notice of her approach. She was extremely affected with my condition, which ſhe had learned from him, begged me to moderate my paſſion, ſuſpend my conjectures, and follow her to Narciſſa, who deſired to ſee me forthwith. That dear name operated upon me like a charm! I ſtarted up, and without opening my lips, was conducted into her apartment, through the garden, which we entered by a private door. I found the adorable creature in tears! I was melted at the ſight —we continued ſilent for ſome time—my heart was too full to ſpeak—her ſnowy boſom heaved with fond reſentment; at laſt ſhe ſobbing, cried, "What have I done to diſo-"blige you?" My heart was pierced with the tender queſtion. I drew near with the utmoſt reverence and affection! I fell upon my knees before her, and kiſſing her hand, exclaimed, "O! thou art all goodneſs and "perfection! I am undone by my want of merit! I am "unworthy to poſſeſs thy charms, which heaven hath "deſtined for the arms of ſome more favoured being." She gueſſed the cauſe of my diſquiet, upbraided me gently for my ſuſpicion, and gave me ſuch flattering aſſurances of her eternal fidelity, that all my doubts and fears forſook me, and peace and ſatisfaction reigned within my breaſt.

At midnight I left the kind nymph to her repoſe, and being let out by Miſs Williams at the garden gate, by which I entered, began to explore my way homeward in the dark, when I heard at my back a noiſe like that of a baboon when he mows and chatters. I turned inſtantly, and perceiving ſomething black, concluded I was diſcovered by ſome ſpy employed to watch for that pur-

pole

poſe. Aroufed at this conjecture, by which the reputation of the virtuous Narciſſa appeared in jeopardy, I drew my ſword, and would have ſacrificed him to her fame, had not the voice of Strap reſtrained my arm: It was with great difficulty he could pronounce, "D—d—d— "do! mum—um—um—murder me, if you pleaſe!" Such an effect had the cold on his jaws, that his teeth rattled like a pair of caſtanets. Pleaſed to be thus undeceived, I laughed at his conſternation, and aſked what brought him thither? Upon which he gave me to underſtand, that his concern for me had induced him to dodge me to that place, where the ſame reaſon had detained him till now; and he frankly owned, that in ſpite of the eſteem he had for Miſs Williams, he began to be very uneaſy about me, conſidering the diſpoſition in which I went abroad; and if I had ſtaid much longer, would have certainly alarmed the neighbourhood in my behalf. The knowledge of this his intention confounded me! I repreſented to him the miſchievous conſequences that would have attended ſuch a raſh action, and cautioning him ſeverely againſt any ſuch deſign for the future, concluded my admonition with an aſſurance, that in caſe he ſhould ever act ſo madly, I would, without heſitation, put him to death. "Have a little patience (cried he in "a lamentable tone) your diſpleaſure will do the buſi- "neſs without your committing murder." I was touched with this reproach; and as ſoon as we got home, made it my buſineſs to appeaſe him, by explaining the cauſe of that tranſport, during which I had uſed him ſo unworthily.

Next day when I went into the Long room, I obſerved ſeveral whiſpers circulate all of a ſudden; and did not doubt but Melinda had been buſy with my character; but I conſoled myſelf with the love of Narciſſa, upon which I reſted with the moſt perfect confidence, and going up to the rowly-powly table, won a few pieces from my ſuſpected rival, who with an eaſy politeneſs entered into converſation with me, and deſiring my company to the coffee-houſe, treated me with tea and chocolate. I remembered Strutwell, and guarded againſt his inſinuating behaviour; nor was my ſuſpicion wrong placed;

ſed; he artfully turned the diſcourſe upon Narciſſa, and endeavoured, by hinting at an intrigue he pretended to be engaged in elſewhere, to learn what connection there was between her and me. But all his fineſſe was ineffectual; I was convinced of his diſſimulation, and gave ſuch general anſwers to his inquiries, that he was forced to drop the ſubject, and talk of ſomething elſe.

While we converſed in this manner, the ſavage came in, with another gentleman, who introduced him to his Lordſhip; and he was received with ſuch peculiar marks of diſtinction, that I was perſuaded that the courtier intended to uſe him in ſome ſhape or another; and thence I conceived an unlucky omen. But I had more cauſe to be diſmayed the following day, when I ſaw the ſquire in company with Melinda and her mother, who honoured me with ſeveral diſdainful glances: and when I afterwards threw myſelf in his way, inſtead of the cordial ſhake of the hand, returned my ſalute with the cold reception of "Servant, ſervant;" which he pronounced with ſuch indifference, or rather contempt, that if he had not been Narciſſa's brother I ſhould have affronted him in public.

Theſe occurrences diſturbed me not a little; I foreſaw the brooding ſtorm, and armed myſelf with reſolution for the occaſion; but Narciſſa being at ſtake, I was far from being reſigned. I could have renounced every other comfort of life with ſome degree of fortitude; but the proſpect of loſing her, diſabled all my philoſophy, and tortured my ſoul into madneſs.

Miſs Williams found me next morning, full of anxious tumult, which did not abate, when ſhe told me that my Lord Quiverwit, having profeſſed honourable intentions, had been introduced to my lovely miſtreſs by her brother, who had at the ſame time, from the information of Melinda, ſpoke of me as an Iriſh fortune-hunter, without either birth or eſtate to recommend me; who ſupported myſelf in the appearance of a gentleman by ſharping, and other infamous practices; and who was of ſuch an obſcure origin, that I did not even know my own extraction. Though I expected all this, I could not hear it with temper, eſpecially as truth was ſo blended with falſehood in

 the

aſſertion, that it would be almoſt impoſſible to ſeparate the one from the other in my vindication. But I ſaid nothing on this head, being impatient to know how Narciſſa had been affected with the diſcovery. The generous creature, far from believing theſe imputations, was no ſooner withdrawn with her confidante, than ſhe inveighed with great warmth againſt the malevolence of the world, to which only ſhe aſcribed the whole of what had been ſaid to my diſadvantage; and calling every circumſtance of my behaviour to her, into review before her, found every thing ſo polite, honourable, and diſintereſted, that ſhe could not harbour the leaſt doubt of my being the gentleman I appeared to be. "I have indeed," ſaid ſhe, "purpoſely forbore to aſk the particulars of his life, "leſt the recapitulation of ſome misfortunes, which he "has undergone, ſhould give him pain: and as to the "article of his fortune, I own myſelf equally afraid of "enquiring into it, and of diſcovering the ſituation of "my own, leſt we ſhould find ourſelves both unhappy "in the explanation! for, alas! my proviſion is condition-"al, and depends entirely on my marrying with my bro-"ther's conſent." Thunder-ſtruck with this intelligence, the light forſook my eyes, the colour vaniſhed from my cheeks, and I remained in a ſtate of univerſal trepidation! My female friend perceiving my diſorder, encouraged me with aſſurances of Narciſſa's conſtancy, and the hope of ſome accident favourable to our love; and, as a further conſolation, let me know, that ſhe had acquainted my miſtreſs with the out-lines of my life; and that although ſhe was no ſtranger to the preſent low ſtate of my finances, her love and eſteem were rather increaſed than diminiſhed by the knowledge of my circumſtances. I was greatly comforted by this aſſurance; which ſaved me a world of confuſion and anxiety: for I muſt have imparted my ſituation one day to Narciſſa; and this I could not have done without ſhame and diſorder.

As I did not doubt that, by this time, the ſcandalous aſperſions of Melinda were diffuſed all over the town, I reſolved to recollect my whole ſtrength of aſſurance, to brow-beat the efforts of her malice, and to publiſh her adventure with the Frenchified barber, by way of repri-

[illegible]

ſal. In the mean time, having promiſed to be at the garden-gate about midnight, Miſs Williams took her leave, bidding me repoſe myſelf entirely on the affection of my dear Narciſſa, which was as perfect as inviolable. Before I went abroad, I was viſited by Freeman, who came on purpoſe to acquaint me with the infamous ſtories that were raiſed at my expence: I heard them with great temper, and in my turn informed him of every thing that had happened between Melinda and me; and among other things entertained him with the ſtory of the barber, letting him know what ſhare his friend Banter had in that affair. He was convinced of the injury my reputation had ſuffered, and no longer doubting the ſource from whence this deluge of ſlander had flowed upon me, undertook to undeceive the town in my behalf, and roll the ſtream back upon its origin; but in the mean time cautioned me from appearing in public, while the prepoſſeſſion was ſtrong againſt me, leſt I ſhould meet with ſome affront that might have bad conſequences.

CHAP. LIX.

I receive an extraordinary meſſage at the door of the Long-Room, which I however enter, and affront the Squire, who threatens to take the law of me—Rebuke Melinda *for her malice—She weeps with vexation—Lord* Quiverwit *is ſevere upon me—I retort his ſarcaſm—am reſerved with the utmoſt tenderneſs by* Narciſſa, *who deſires to hear the ſtory of my life—we vow eternal conſtancy to one another—I retire—am awaked by a meſſenger, who brings a challenge from* Quiverwit *—whom I meet—engage—and vanquiſh.*

I THANKED him for his advice, which, however, my pride and reſentment would not permit me to follow; for he no ſooner left me, in order to do juſtice to my character among his friends and acquaintance, than I ſallied out, and went directly to the Long-room. I was met at the door by a ſervant, who preſented to me a billet, without

without a ſubſcription, importing that my preſence was diſagreeable to the company, and deſiring I would take the hint without further diſturbance, and beſtow myſelf elſewhere for the future. This peremptory meſſage filled me with indignation. I followed the fellow who delivered it, and ſeizing him by the collar, in preſence of all the company, threatened to put him inſtantly to death, if he did not diſcover the ſcoundrel who had charged him with ſuch an impudent commiſſion, that I might puniſh him as he deſerved. The meſſenger, affrighted at my menaces and furious looks, fell upon his knees, and told me, that the gentleman who ordered him to deliver the letter was no other than Narciſſa's brother, who at that time ſtood at the other end of the room, talking to Melinda. I went up to him immediately, and in the hearing of his inamorata, accoſted him in theſe words,—"Lookee, Squire, was it not for one conſideration that "protects you from my reſentment, I would cane you "where you ſtand, for having had the preſumption to "ſend me this ſcurrilous intimation," which I tore to pieces and threw in his face; at the ſame time darting an angry regard at his miſtreſs, and telling her, I was ſorry ſhe had put it out of my power to compliment her upon her invention, but at the expence of her good nature and veracity. Her admirer, whoſe courage never roſe but in proportion to the wine he had ſwallowed, inſtead of reſenting my addreſs in what is called an honourable way, threatened to proſecute me for an aſſault, and took witneſſes accordingly; while ſhe, piqued at his puſillanimous behaviour, and enraged at the ſarcaſm I had uttered againſt her, endeavoured to make her quarrel a public cauſe, and wept aloud with ſpite and vexation. The tears of a lady could not fail of attracting the notice and concern of the ſpectators, to whom ſhe complained of my rudeneſs, with great bitterneſs, ſaying, if ſhe was a man I durſt not uſe her ſo. The greateſt part of the gentlemen, already prejudiced againſt me, were offended at the liberty I had taken, as appeared from their looks, though none of them ſignified their diſguſt any other way, except my Lord Quiverwit, who ventured to ſay, with a ſneer, that I was in the right to eſtabliſh my own

character;

character, of which he had now no longer any doubt. Nettled at this ſevere *equivoque*, which raiſed a laugh at my expence, I replied with ſome warmth, "I am proud "of having in that particular got the ſtart of your Lord-"ſhip." He made no anſwer to my repartee, but, with a contemptuous ſmile, walked off, leaving me in a very diſagreeable ſituation. In vain did I make up to ſeveral people of my acquaintance, whoſe converſation, I hoped, would baniſh my confuſion; every body ſhunned me like a perſon infected, and I ſhould not have been able to bear my diſgrace, had not the idea of the ever-faithful and fond Narciſſa come to my relief. I quitted the ſcene of my mortification, and ſauntering about the town, happened to wake from my contemplation, when I found myſelf juſt oppoſite to a toy-ſhop, which I entered, and purchaſed a ring, ſet with a ruby, in the form of a heart, ſurrounded by diamond ſparks, for which I paid ten guineas, intending it for a preſent to the charmer of my ſoul.

I was introduced, at the hour appointed, to this divine creature, who, notwithſtanding what ſhe had heard to my diſadvantage, received me with the utmoſt confidence and tenderneſs; and having been informed of the general ſketches of my life, by Miſs Williams, expreſſed a deſire of knowing the particular circumſtances, which I related with great candour, omitting, however, ſome things which I concluded altogether improper for her ear, and which the reader's reflection will eaſily ſuggeſt. As my ſtory was little elſe than a recital of misfortunes, the tear of ſympathy ceaſed not to trickle from her inchanting eyes, during the whole of the narration, which when I had finiſhed, ſhe recompenſed me for my trouble with the moſt endearing proteſtations of eternal love. She bewailed her reſtricted condition, as it was the means of retarding my happineſs; told me, that Lord Quivcrwit, by her brother's permiſſion, had been to drink tea with her that very afternoon, and actually propoſed marriage; and, ſeeing me extremely affected with this piece of information, offered to give me a convincing proof of her affection, by eſpouſing me in private, and leaving the reſt to fate. I was penetrated with this inſtance of her regard; but,

but that I might not be outdone in generosity, resisted the bewitching temptation, in consideration of her honour and interest; at the same time presented my ring as a pledge of my inviolable attachment, and on my knees implored Heaven to shower its curses on my head, if ever my heart should entertain one thought unworthy of the passion I then vowed. She received my token, gave me in return her picture in miniature, exquisitely drawn, and set in gold; and, in the same posture called Heaven to witness and to judge her flame. Our vows thus reciprocally breathed, a confidence of hope ensued, and our mutual fondness becoming as intimate as innocence would allow, I grew insensible of the progress of time, and it was morning before I could tear myself from this darling of my soul! My good angel foresaw what would happen, and prompted me to indulge myself on this occasion, in consideration of the fatal absence I was doomed to suffer.

I went to bed immediately on my return to my lodging, and having slept about two hours, was waked by Strap, who, in great confusion, told me there was a footman below with a letter for me, which he would deliver to nobody but myself. Alarmed at this piece of news, I desired my friend to shew him up to my chamber, and received a letter from him, which, he said, required an immediate answer: upon which I opened it, and read:

"SIR,

"WHEN any man injures my honour, let the difference of rank between us be ever so great, I am "contented to wave the privilege of my quality, and seek "reparation from him on equal terms. The insolence "of your reply to me yesterday, in the Long-Room, I "might have overlooked, had not your presumptive "emulation in a much more interesting affair, and a "discovery, which I made this morning, concurred in "persuading me to chastise your audacity with my sword "—If you, therefore, have spirit enough to support the "character you assume, you will not fail to follow the

"bearer

"bearer immediately to a convenient place, where you "shall be met by

"QUIVERWIT."

Whether I was enervated by the love and favour of Narciſſa, or awed by the ſuperior ſtation of my antagoniſt, I know not, but I never had a leſs inclination to fight than at this time: however, finding there was a neceſſity for vindicating the reputation of my miſtreſs, as well as for aſſerting my own honour, I forthwith roſe, and dreſſing in a hurry, put on my ſword, bid Strap attend me, and ſet out with my conductor, curſing my bad fortune all the way, for having been obſerved in my return from my angel, for ſo I interpreted his Lordſhip's diſcovery. When I came within ſight of my rival, his lacquey told me he had orders to ſtop; upon which, I commanded Strap to halt alſo, while I walked forward; reſolved, if poſſible, to come to an explanation with my challenger, before we ſhould come to battle. Nor was an opportunity wanting; for I no ſooner approached, than he aſked, with a ſtern countenance, what buſineſs I had in Mr Tophall's garden ſo early in the morning? "I "don't know, my Lord," ſaid I, "how to anſwer a "queſtion put to me with ſuch a magiſterial haughtineſs. "If your Lordſhip will pleaſe to expoſtulate calmly, you "will have no cauſe to repent of your condeſcenſion. "Otherwiſe, I am not to be intimidated into any con-"feſſion." "There's no room for denial," anſwered he, "I ſaw you come out with my own eyes."—"Did "any other perſon ſee me?" ſaid I. "I neither know "nor care;" ſaid he, "I want no other evidence than "that of my own ſenſes." Pleaſed to hear that the ſuſpicion was confined to him alone, I endeavoured to appeaſe his jealouſy, by owning an intrigue with the waiting-maid; but he had too much diſcernment to be ſo eaſily impoſed upon; and told me there was only one way to convince him of the truth of what I alledged, which was no other than renouncing all claim to Narciſſa upon oath, and promiſing upon honour, never to ſpeak to her for the future. Exaſperated at this propoſal, I unſheath-

ed my ſword, ſaying, " Heavens! what title have you " or any man on earth, to impoſe ſuch terms on me!" He did the ſame, and making towards me, with a contracted brow, ſaid I was a villain, and had diſhonoured Narciſſa. " He's a ſcandalous villain," I replied in a tranſport of fury, " who brands me with that imputa- " tion! She is a thouſand times more chaſte than the " mother who bore you; and I will aſſert her honour " with my heart's blood!" ſo ſaying, I ruſhed upon him with more eagerneſs than addreſs, and endeavouring to get within his point, received a wound in my neck, which redoubled my rage. He excelled me in temper as well as in ſkill, by which means he parried my thruſts with great calmneſs, until I had almoſt exhauſted my ſpirits; and when he perceived me beginning to flag, attacked me fiercely in his turn. Finding himſelf, however, better oppoſed than he expected, he reſolved to follow his longe, and cloſe with me; accordingly, his ſword entered my waiſtcoat, on the ſide of the breaſt-bone, and running up between my ſhirt and ſkin, appeared above my left ſhoulder; I imagined that his weapon had perforated my lungs, and, of conſequence, that the wound was mortal; therefore determined not to die unrevenged, I ſeized his ſhell which was cloſe to my breaſt, before he could diſentangle his point, and keeping it faſt with my left hand, ſhortened my own ſword with my right, intending to run him through the heart; but he received the thruſt in his left arm, which penetrated up to the ſhoulder blade. Diſappointed in this expectation, and afraid ſtill that death would fruſtrate my revenge, I grappled with him, and being much the ſtronger, threw him upon the ground, where I wreſted the ſword out of his hand; and ſo great was my confuſion, inſtead of turning the point upon him, ſtruck out three of his fore-teeth with the hilt. In the mean time, our ſervants ſeeing us fall, ran up to ſeparate and aſſiſt us; but before their approach, I was upon my feet, and had diſcovered that my ſuppoſed mortal wound was only a ſlight ſcratch. The knowledge of my own ſafety diſarmed me of a good deal of my reſentment, and I began to inquire with ſome concern into the ſituation of my antagoniſt, who remain-

ed on the ground, bleeding plentifully at his mouth and arm. I helped his footman to raiſe him, and having bound up his wound with my handkerchief aſſured him it was not dangerous; I likewiſe reſtored his ſword, and offered to ſupport him to his own houſe. He thanked me with an air of fallen dignity; and whiſpering to me, that I ſhould hear from him ſoon, went away, leaning on his ſervant's ſhoulder.

I was ſurpriſed at this promiſe, which I conſtrued into a threat, and reſolved, if ever he ſhould call me out again, to uſe whatever advantage fortune might give me over him in another manner. In the mean time, I had leiſure to take notice of Strap, who ſeemed quite ſtupified with horror; and (after having recovered him from his extacy, with an aſſurance that I had received no damage) to explain the nature of this affair as we walked homeward. By that time I had got into my apartment, I found the wound in my neck ſtiff and uneaſy, and a good deal of clotted blood run down upon my ſhirt: Upon which I pulled off my coat and waiſtcoat, and unbuttoned my collar, that I might dreſs it with more eaſe. My friend no ſooner perceived my ſhirt quite dyed with blood, than imagining I had got at leaſt twenty dreadful wounds, he cried, "O Jeſus!" and fell flat on the floor. I ſtopt the bleeding with a little dry lint, and applying a plaiſter over it, cleaned myſelf from the gore, ſhifted and dreſſed, while he lay ſenſeleſs at my feet; ſo that when he recovered and ſaw me perfectly well, he could ſcarce believe his own eyes. Now that the danger was paſt, I was very well pleaſed with what had happened, which I did not doubt would ſoon become known, and, conſequently, dignify my character not a little in this place. I was alſo proud of having ſhewn myſelf, in ſome ſhape, worthy of the love of Narciſſa, who, I was perſuaded, would not think the worſe of me for what I had done.

CHAP. LX.

I am viſited by Freeman, *with whom I appear in public, and am careſſed—am ſent for by* Lord Quiverwit, *whoſe preſence I quit in a paſſion—*Narciſſa *is carried off by her brother—I intend to purſue him, and am diſſuaded by my friend—engage in play, and loſe all my money—ſet out for* London—*try my fortune at the gaming-table without ſucceſs—receive a letter from* Narciſſa—*bilk my tailor.*

WHILE I entertained myſelf with theſe reflections, the news of this duel being communicated by ſome unknown channel, ſpread all over the town. I was viſited by Freeman, who expreſſed his ſurpriſe at finding me, having been told, that Lord Quiverwit being dead of his wounds, I had abſconded, in order to avoid the cognizance of the law. I aſked if people gueſſed the occaſion of the quarrel; and underſtanding it was attributed to his lordſhip's reſentment of my reply in the Long-room, confirmed that conjecture, glad to find Narciſſa unſuſpected. My friend, after I had aſſured him that my antagoniſt was in no danger, wiſhed me joy of the event, than which, he ſaid, nothing could happen more opportunely to ſupport the idea he had given of my character to his friends, among whom he had been very aſſiduous in my behalf.

On the ſtrength of this aſſurance, I went with him to the coffee-houſe, where I was ſaluted by a great many of thoſe very perſons who ſhunned me the preceding day; and I found every body making merry with the ſtory of Melinda's French gallant. While I remained in this place, I received a meſſage from Lord Quiverwit, deſiring, if I was not engaged, to ſee him at his houſe.

Thither I immediately repaired, and was conducted to an apartment, where I was received by his Lordſhip in bed. Being left by ourſelves, he thanked me in very polite terms, for having uſed the advantage fortune had given me over him, with ſuch moderation; and aſked pardon

for

for any offence his reſentment might have prompted him to commit. "I would willingly, (ſaid he) make you my "friend; but as it is impoſſible for me to diveſt myſelf "of my paſſion for Narciſſa, I am too well convinced of "your ſentiments, to think we ſhall ever agree on that "ſubject. I took the liberty, therefore, of ſending for "you, in order to own candidly, that I cannot help op-"poſing your ſucceſs with that young lady; though, at "the ſame time, I promiſe to regulate my oppoſition by "the dictates of juſtice and honour: this, however, I "think proper to advertiſe you of, that ſhe has no inde-"pendent fortune, and if you ſhould even ſucceed in your "addreſſes, you would have the mortification to ſee her "reduced to indigence, unleſs you have wherewithal to "ſupport her—and I am credibly informed of your in-"capacity that way.—Nay, I will confeſs, that, urged by "this conſideration, I have actually ſent notice to her "brother, of the progreſs I ſuſpect you have made in "her affection, and deſired him to take his precautions "accordingly." Alarmed and provoked at this information, I told his Lordſhip, that I did not ſee how he could reconcile that piece of conduct with his profeſſion of open dealing, and flung away from him in a paſſion.

As I walked homeward, in hopes of hearing from my miſtreſs as uſual, by means of Miſs Williams, I was ſurpriſed with the waving of a handkerchief, from the window of a coach and ſix that paſſed by me at full ſpeed; and upon further obſervation, I ſaw a ſervant on horſeback riding after it, who, I knew by his livery belonged to the ſquire. Thunderſtruck with this diſcovery, the knowledge of my misfortune ruſhed all at once upon my reflection! I gueſſed immediately that the ſignal was made by the dear hand of Narciſſa, who being hurried away in conſequence of Lord Quiverwit's meſſage to her brother, had no other method of relating her diſtreſs, and imploring my aſſiſtance. Frantic with this conjecture, I ran to my lodgings, ſnatched my piſtols, and ordered Strap to get poſt-horſes, with ſuch incoherence of ſpeech and diſorder, that the poor valet, terrified with the ſuſpicion of another duel, inſtead of providing what I deſired, went forthwith to Freeman, who being inform-

ed of my behaviour, came ſtraight to my apartment, and conjured me ſo pathetically to acquaint him with the cauſe of my uneaſineſs, that I could not refuſe to tell him that my happineſs was fled with Narciſſa, and that I muſt retrieve her or periſh. He repreſented the madneſs of ſuch an undertaking, and endeavonred to divert me from it, with great ſtrength of friendſhip and reaſon: but all his arguments would have been ineffectual, had he not put me in mind of the dependence I ought to have on the love of Narciſſa, and attachment of her maid, which could not fail of finding opportunities enough, to advertiſe me of their ſituation; and at the ſame time, demonſtrated the injury my charmer's reputation muſt ſuffer from my precipitate retreat. I was convinced and compoſed by theſe conſiderations. I appeared in public with an air of tranquillity, was well received by the beſt company in town, and my misfortune taking air, condoled accordingly; while I had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing Melinda ſo univerſally diſcountenanced, that ſhe was fain to return to London, in order to avoid the ſcoffs and cenſure of the ladies at Bath. But though the hope of hearing from the darling of my ſoul ſupported my ſpirits a little while, I began to be very uneaſy, when, at the end of ſeveral weeks, I found that expectation diſappointed. In ſhort, melancholy and deſpondence took poſſeſſion of my ſoul; and repining at that providence, which, by acting the ſtep-mother towards me, kept me from the fruition of my wiſhes, I determined, in a fit of deſpair, to riſk all I had at the gaming-table, with a view of acquiring a fortune ſufficient to render me independent for life: or of plunging myſelf into ſuch a ſtate of miſery, as would effectually crush every ambitious hope that now tortured my imagination.

Actuated by this fatal reſolution, I engaged in play, and, after ſome turns of fortune, found myſelf at the end of three days, worth a thouſand pounds; but it was not my intention to ſtop there, for which cauſe I kept Strap ignorant of my ſucceſs, and continued my career until I was reduced to five guineas, which I would have hazarded alſo, had I not been aſhamed to fall from a bett of two hundred pounds to ſuch a petty ſum.

Having

Having thus executed my ſcheme, I went home, amazed to find myſelf ſo much at eaſe, and informed my friend Strap of my miſchance, with ſuch calmneſs, that he, imagining I joked, affected to receive the tidings of with great equanimity. But both he and I found ourſelves miſtaken very ſoon. I had miſinterpreted my own ſtupidity into deliberate reſignation, and he had reaſon to believe me in earneſt, when he ſaw me next morning agitated with the moſt violent deſpair, which he endeavoured to alleviate with all the conſolation in his power.

In one of my lucid intervals, however, I charged him to take a place in the ſtage-coach for London; and in the mean time paid my debts in Bath, which amounted to thirty ſhillings only. Without taking leave of my friends, I embarked, Strap having the good fortune to find a return horſe, and arrived in town without having met with any thing remarkable on the road, ſave that, while we croſſed Bagſhot heath, I was ſeized with a ſort of an inclination to retrieve my fortune, by laying paſſengers under contribution, in ſome ſuch place. My thoughts were ſo circumſtanced at this time, that I ſhould have digeſted the crime of robbery, ſo righteouſly had I concerted my plan, and ventured my life in the execution, had I not been deterred by reflection upon the infamy that attends detection.

The apartment I formerly lived in being unengaged, I took poſſeſſion of it, and next day went in queſt of Banter, who received me with open arms, in expectation of having his bond diſcharged to his liking; but when he underſtood what had happened, his countenance changed of a ſudden, and he told me, with a dryneſs of diſpleaſure peculiar to himſelf, that if he was in my place he would put it out of fortune's power to play him ſuch another trick, and be avenged of his own indiſcretion at once. When I deſired him to explain his meaning, he pointed to his neck, raiſed himſelf on his tip-toes, and was going away without further ceremony, when I put him in mind of my indigence, and demanded the five guineas I had formerly lent him. "Five guineas! (cried "he) Zounds, had you acted with common prudence, you "might have had twenty thouſand in your pocket by

"this

" this time. I depended upon five hundred from you, " as much as if I had had notes for it in the bank; and " by all the rules of equity you are indebted to me for " that ſum." I was neither pleaſed nor convinced by this computation, and inſiſted on my right with ſuch determined obſtinacy, that he was fain to alter his tone, and appeaſe my clamour, by aſſuring me, that he was not maſter of five ſhillings. Society in diſtreſs generally promotes good underſtanding among people; from being a dun, I deſcended to be a client, and aſked his advice about repairing my loſſes. He counſelled me to have recourſe again to the gaming table, where I had ſucceeded ſo well before, and to put myſelf in a condition by ſelling my watch. I followed his directions, and having accommodated him with a few pieces, went to the place, where I loſt every ſhilling.

I returned to my lodgings full of deſperate reſolutions, and having made Strap acquainted with my fate, ordered him to pawn my ſword immediately, that I might be enabled to make another effort. This affectionate creature no ſooner underſtood my purpoſe, than ſeized with inſuppreſſible ſorrow at the proſpect of my miſery, he burſt into tears, and aſked what I propoſed to do after the ſmall ſum he could raiſe on the ſword ſhould be ſpent? " On my account (ſaid he) I am quite unconcerned; for " while God ſpares me health and theſe ten fingers, I " can earn a comfortable ſubſiſtence any where; but " what muſt become of you, who have leſs humility to " ſtoop, and more appetites to gratify?" Here I interrupted him by ſaying, with a gloomy aſpect, I could never want a reſource while I had a loaded piſtol in my poſſeſſion. Stupified with horror at this dreadful inſinuation, he ſtood mute for ſome time, then broke into " God " of his infinite mercy enable you to withſtand that temp- " tation of the devil! Conſider your immortal ſoul!— " there's no repentance in the grave! O Lord, that ever " it ſhould come to this! Are we not enjoined to reſign " ourſelves to the will of Heaven?—where is your pa- " tience? *Durum patientia frange*—you are but a young " man—there may be many good things in ſtore for you " —*accidit in puncto quod non ſperatur in anno*—Remem-

" ber

" ber your uncle Mr Bowling; perhaps he is now on " his voyage homeward, pleaſing himſelf with the hopes " of finding and relieving you—nay, peradventure he is " already arrived, the ſhip was expected about this time." A ray of hope ſhot athwart the darkneſs of my ſoul at this ſuggeſtion; I thanked my friend for his ſeaſonable recollection, and after having promiſed to take no reſolution till his return, diſmiſſed him to Wapping for intelligence.

In his abſence I was viſited by Banter, who being informed of my bad luck at play, told me, that fortune would probably be one day weary of perſecuting me. " In " the mean time (ſaid he) here's a letter for you, which " I received juſt now, incloſed in one from Freeman." I ſnatched it with eagerneſs, and knowing the ſuperſcription to be of Narciſſa's hand-writing, kiſſed it with tranſport; and having opened it, read,

" IT is with great difficulty, that I have ſtolen from the " obſervation of thoſe ſpies who are ſet over me, this " opportunity of telling you, that I was ſuddenly carried " away from Bath, by my brother, who was informed of " our correſpondence by Lord Quivervit, whom, I ſince " underſtand, you have wounded in a duel on my ac- " count. As I am fully convinced of your honour and " love, I hope I ſhall never hear of ſuch deſperate proofs " of either for the future. I am ſo ſtrictly watched, " that it will be impoſſible for you to ſee me, until my " brother's ſuſpicion ſhall abate, or Heaven contrive " ſome other unforeſeen event in our behalf. In the " mean-time you may depend on the conſtancy and af- " fection of

" Your own

" NARCISSA."

" P. S. Miſs Williams, who is my fellow-priſoner, de- " ſires to be remembered to you. We are both in " good health, and only in pain for you, eſpecially " as it will be impracticable for you to convey any " meſſage or letter to the place of our confine- " ment;

" ment; for which reaſon, pray deſiſt from the at-
" tempt, that by miſcarrying muſt prolong our cap-
" tivity.

" N——".

This kind letter afforded me great conſolation: I communicated it to Banter, and at the ſame time ſhewed him her picture: he approved her beauty and good ſenſe, and could not help owning that my neglect of Miſs Snapper was excuſable, when ſuch a fine creature engroſſed my attention.

I began to be reconciled to my fate, and imagined, that if I could contrive means of ſubſiſting until my uncle ſhould arrive, in caſe he was not already at home, that he would enable me to do ſomething effectual in behalf of my love and fortune. I therefore conſulted Banter about a preſent ſupply, who no ſooner underſtood I had credit with a tailor, than he adviſed me to take off two or three ſuits of rich cloathes and convert them into caſh, by ſelling them at half price to a ſaleſman in Monmouth-ſtreet. I was a little ſtartled at his propoſal, which I thought favoured a little of fraud; but he rendered it palatable by obſerving, that in a few months I might be in a condition to do every body juſtice; and in the meantime I was acquitted by the honeſty of my intention. I ſuffered myſelf to be perſuaded by his ſalvo, by which my neceſſity rather than my judgment was convinced; and when I found there were no accounts of the ſhip in which my uncle embarked, actually put the ſcheme in practice, and raiſed by it five-and-twenty guineas, paying him for his advice with the odd five.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXI.

I am arreſted—carried to the Marſhalſea—*find my old acquaintance beau* Jackſon *in that jail—he informs me of his adventures*—Strap *arrives, and with difficulty is comforted*—Jackſon *introduces me to a poet—I admire his converſation and capacity—am deeply affected with my misfortune*—Strap *hires himſelf as a journeyman barber.*

BUT this expedient was in a few weeks attended with a conſequence I did not foreſee: a player having purchaſed one of the ſuits which were expoſed to ſale, appeared in it on the ſtage one night, while my tailor unfortunately happened to be preſent. He knew it immediately, and enquiring minutely into the affair, diſcovered my whole contrivance: upon which he came to my lodgings, and telling me that he was very much ſtraitened for want of money, preſented his bill, which amounted to 50l. Surpriſed at this unexpected addreſs, I affected to treat him cavalierly, ſwore ſome oaths, aſked if he doubted my honour, and telling him I ſhould take care whom I dealt with for the future, bid him come again in three days. He obeyed me punctually, demanded his money, and finding himſelf amuſed with bare promiſes, arreſted me that very day in the ſtreet. I was not much ſhocked at this adventure, which, indeed, reſcued me from a horrible ſuſpence in which I had lived ſince his firſt viſit. I refuſed to go to a ſpunging-houſe, where I had heard there was nothing but the moſt flagrant impoſition; and a coach being called, I was carried to the Marſhalſea, attended by a bailiff and his follower, who were very much diſappointed and chagrined at my reſolution.

The turnkey gueſſing, from my appearance, that I had got money in my pocket, received me with the repetition of the Latin word *depone*, and gave me to underſtand, that I muſt pay before-hand for the apartment I ſhould chuſe to dwell in. I deſired to ſee his conveniences, and hired a ſmall paultry bed-chamber, for a crown a-week, which, in any other place, would not have let at eigh-

teen pence. Having taken poſſeſſion of this diſmal habitation, I ſent for Strap, and my thoughts were buſied in collecting matter of conſolation to that faithful ſquire, when ſomebody knocked at my door, which I no ſooner opened, than a young fellow entered, in very ſhabby cloathes, and marvellouſly foul linen. After a low bow, he called me by my name, and aſked if I had forgot him? His voice aſſiſted me in recollecting his perſon, which I ſoon recognized to be my old acquaintance beau Jackſon, of whom mention is made in the firſt part of my memoirs. I ſaluted him, expreſſed my ſatisfaction at finding him alive, and condoled with him on his preſent ſituation; which, however, did not ſeem to affect him much, for he laughed very heartily at the occaſion of our meeting ſo unexpectedly in this place.

After our mutual compliments were over, I enquired about his amour with the lady of fortune, which ſeemed to be ſo near an happy concluſion when I had the pleaſure of ſeeing him laſt: and after an immoderate fit of laughter, he gave me to underſtand, that he had been egregiouſly bit in that affair. "You muſt know," ſaid he "that a few days after our adventure with the bawd "and her b—ches, I found means to be married to that "ſame fine lady you ſpeak of, and paſſed the night with "her at her lodgings, ſo much to her ſatisfaction, that early in the morning, after a good deal of ſniveling and "ſobbing, ſhe owned that ſo far from being an heireſs "of a great fortune, ſhe was no other than a common "woman of the town, who had decoyed me into matrimony, in order to enjoy the privilege of a female couverte; and that unleſs I made my eſcape immediately, "I ſhould be arreſted for a debt of her contracting, by "bailiffs employed and inſtructed for that purpoſe. "Startled at this intimation, I got up in a twinkling, "and taking leave of my ſpouſe with ſeveral hearty "damns, got ſafe into the verge of the court; where "I kept ſnug until I was appointed ſurgeon's mate of a "man of war at Portſmouth; for which place I ſet out "on a Sunday, went on board of my ſhip, in which I "ſailed to the Straits, where I had the good fortune to "be made ſurgeon of a ſloop that came home in a few months

" months after, and was put out of commiſſion: where-
" upon I came to London, imagining myſelf forgotten
" and freed from my wife and her creditors; but had
" not been in town a week before I was arreſted for a
" debt of her's amounting to 20 l. and brought to this
" place, where I have been fixed by another action ſince
" that time. However, you know my diſpoſition; I
" defy care and anxiety; and being on the half-pay liſt,
" make ſhift to live here tolerably eaſy." I congratula-
ted him on his philoſophy, and remembering that I was
in his debt, repaid the money he formerly ſent me, which
I believe was far from being unſeaſonable. I then in-
quired about the œconomy of the place, which he ex-
plained to my ſatisfaction; and after we had agreed to
meſs together, he was juſt going to give orders for dinner
when Strap arrived.

I never in my life ſaw ſorrow ſo extravagantly expreſ-
ſed in any countenance, as in that of my honeſt friend,
which was indeed particularly adapted by nature for ſuch
impreſſions. Being left by ourſelves, I communicated
to him my diſaſter, and endeavoured to conſole him with
the ſame arguments he had formerly uſed to me, withall
repreſenting the fair chance I had of being relieved, in a
ſhort time, by Mr Bowling. But his grief was unut-
terable; he ſeemed to give attention without liſtening,
and wrung his hands in ſilence; ſo that I was in a fair
way of being infected with his behaviour, when Jackſon
returned, and perceiving the deference I paid to Strap,
although in a footman's habit, diſtributed his crumbs of
comfort with ſuch mirth, jollity, and unconcern, that the
features of the diſtreſſed ſquire relaxed by degrees, he
recovered the uſe of ſpeech, and began to be a little more
reconciled to this lamentable event. We dined together
on boiled beef and greens, brought from a cook's ſhop
in the neighbourhood; and although this meal was ſer-
ved up in a manner little correſponding with the ſphere
of life in which I had lately lived, I made a virtue of ne-
ceſſity, ate with good appetite, and treated my friends
with a bottle of wine, which had the deſired effect of
increaſing the good humour of my fellow-priſoner, and

exhilarating the ſpirits of Strap, who now talked of my misfortune *en cavalier*.

After dinner, Jackſon left us to our private affairs: when I deſired my friend to pack up all our things, and carry them to ſome cheap lodging he ſhould chuſe for himſelf in the neighbourhood of the Marſhalſea, after he had diſcharged my lodging, for which I gave him money. I likewiſe recommended to him the keeping my misfortune ſecret, and ſaying to my landlord, or any other that ſhould inquire for me, that I was gone into the country for a few weeks: at the ſame time I laid ſtrong injunctions upon him to call every ſecond day upon Banter, in caſe he ſhould receive any letters for me from Narciſſa, by the canal of Freeman; and by all means to leave a direction for himſelf at my uncle's lodgings in Wapping, by which I might be found when my kinſman ſhould arrive.

When he departed to execute theſe orders, (which, by the bye, were punctually performed that very night) I found myſelf ſo little ſeaſoned to my ſituation, that I dreaded reflection, and ſought ſhelter from it in the company of the beau, who promiſing to regale me with a lecture upon taſte, conducted me to the common ſide, where I ſaw a number of naked miſerable wretches aſſembled together. We had not been there many minutes, when a figure appeared, wrapped in a dirty rug, tied about his loins with two pieces of liſt, of different colours, knotted together; having a black buſhy beard, and his head covered with a huge maſs of brown periwig, which ſeemed to have been raviſhed from the crown of ſome ſcarecrow. This apparition ſtalked in with great ſolemnity, made a profound bow to the audience, who ſignified their approbation by a general reſponſe of, "How dy'e do, doc-"tor?" He then turned towards us, and honoured Jackſon with a particular ſalutation, upon which my friend, in a formal manner, introduced him to me by the name of Mr Melopeyn. This ceremony being over, he advanced into the middle of the congregation, which crowded around him, and hemming three times, to my utter aſtoniſhment, pronounced with great ſignificance of voice and geſture, a very elegant and ingenious diſcourſe upon the difference

difference between genius and taste, illustrating his assertions with apt quotations from the best authors, ancient as well as modern. When he had finished his harangue, which lasted a full hour, he bowed again to the spectators; not one of whom, (I was informed) understood so much as a sentence of what he uttered. They manifested, however, their admiration and esteem by voluntary contribution, which, Jackson told me, one week with another, amounted to eighteen-pence. This moderate stipend, together with some small presents which he received for making up differences and deciding causes amongst the prisoners, just enabled him to breathe and walk about in the great lane I have described. I understood also that he was an excellent poet, and had composed a tragedy, which was allowed, by every body who had seen it, to be a performance of great merit; that his learning was infinite, his morals unexceptionable, and his modesty invincible. Such a character could not fail of attracting my regard; I longed impatiently to be better acquainted with him, and desired Jackson would engage him to spend the evening in my apartment. My request was granted, he favoured us with his company, and in the course of our conversation, perceiving that I had a strong passion for the Belles Lettres, acquitted himself so well on that subject, that I expressed a fervent desire of seeing his productions. In this too he gratified my inclination: he promised to bring his tragedy to my room next day, and in the mean time, entertained me with some detached pieces, which gave me a very advantageous idea of his poetical talent. Among other things I was particularly pleased with some elegies, in imitation of Tibullus; one of which I beg leave to submit to the reader, as a specimen of his complexion and capacity.

I.

WHERE now are all my flatt'ring dreams of joy?
Monimia, give my soul her wonted rest!—
Since first thy beauty fix'd my roving eye,
Heart-gnawing cares corrode my pensive breast!

Let

II.

Let happy lovers fly where pleaſures call,
With feſtive ſongs beguile the fleeting hour;
Lead beauty through the mazes of the ball,
Or preſs her wanton in love's roſeate bow'r.

III.

For me, no more I'll range th' empurpled mead,
Where ſhepherds pipe, and virgins dance around;
Nor wander thro' the woodbine's fragrant ſhade,
To hear the muſic of the groves reſound.

IV.

I'll ſeek ſome lonely church, or dreary hall,
Where fancy paints the glimm'ring taper blue,
Where damps hang moulu'ring on the ivy'd wall,
And ſheeted ghoſts drink up the midnight dew:

V.

There leagu'd with hopeleſs anguiſh and deſpair,
A while in ſilence o'er my fate repine;
Then with a long farewell to love and care,
To kindred duſt my weary limbs conſign.

VI.

Wilt thou, Monimia, ſhed a gracious tear,
On the cold grave where all my ſorrows reſt?
Wilt thou ſtrew flow'rs, applaud my love ſincere,
And bid the turf ly light upon my breaſt?

I was wonderfully affected with this pathetic complaint, which ſeemed ſo well calculated for my own diſappointment in love, that I could not help attaching the idea of Narciſſa to the name of Monimia, and of forming ſuch melancholy preſages of my paſſion, that I could not recover my tranquillity; and was fain to have recourſe to the bottle, which prepared me for a profound ſleep, that I could not otherwiſe have enjoyed. Whether theſe impreſſions

preſſions invited and introduced a train of other melancholy reflections, or my fortitude was all exhauſted in the effort I made againſt deſpondence, the firſt day of my impriſonment, I cannot determine; but I awaked in the horrors, and found my imagination haunted with ſuch diſmal apparitions, that I was ready to deſpair. And I believe the reader will own, that I had no great cauſe to congratulate myſelf, when I conſidered my ſituation. I was interrupted in the midſt of theſe gloomy apprehenſions by the arrival of Strap, who contributed not a little to the re-eſtabliſhment of my peace, by letting me know he had hired himſelf as a journeyman barber; by which means he would not only ſave me a conſiderable expence, but even make ſhift to lay up ſomething for my ſubſiſtence after my money ſhould be ſpent, in caſe I ſhould not be relieved before.

CHAP. LXII.

I read Melopoyn's *tragedy, and conceive a vaſt opinion of his genius—he recounts his adventures.*

WHILE we ate our breakfaſt together, I acquainted him with the character and condition of the poet, who came in with his play at that inſtant, and imagining we were engaged about buſineſs, could not be prevailed upon to ſit; but leaving his performance, went away. My friend's tender heart was melted at the ſight of a gentleman and Chriſtian (for he had a great veneration for both theſe epithets) in ſuch miſery; and aſſented with great chearfulneſs to a propoſal I made of cloathing him with our ſuperfluities; a talk with which he charged himſelf, and departed immediately to perform it.

He was no ſooner gone, than I locked my door, and ſat down to the tragedy, which I read to the end with vaſt pleaſure, not a little amazed at the conduct of the managers who had rejected it. The fable, in my opinion, was well choſen, and naturally conducted; the incidents

dents intereſting, the characters beautifully contraſted, ſtrongly marked, and well ſupported; the diction poetical, ſpirited and correct; the unities of the drama maintained with the moſt ſcrupulous exactneſs; the opening gradual and engaging; περιπετειαι, ſurpriſing, and the cataſtrophe affecting: in ſhort, I judged it by the laws of Ariſtotle and Horace, and could find nothing in it exceptionable, but a little too much embelliſhment in ſome few places, which objection he removed to my ſatisfaction, by a quotation from Ariſtotle's poetics, importing that the leaſt intereſting parts of a poem, ought to be raiſed and dignified by the charms and energy of diction.

I revered his genius, and was ſeized with an eager curioſity to know the particular events of a fortune ſo unworthy of his merit. At that inſtant Strap returned with a bundle of clothes, which I ſent with my compliments to Mr Melopoyn, as a ſmall token of my regard, and deſired the favour of his company to dinner. He accepted my preſent and invitation, and in leſs than half an hour made his appearance in a decent dreſs, which altered his figure very much to his advantage. I perceived by his countenance that his heart was big with gratitude, and endeavoured to prevent his acknowledgements, by aſking pardon for the liberty I had taken; he made no reply, but with an aſpect full of admiration and eſteem, bowed to the ground, while the tears guſhed from his eyes. Affected with theſe ſymptoms of an ingenuous mind, I ſhifted the converſation from this ſubject, and complimented him on his performance, which I aſſured him, afforded me infinite pleaſure. My approbation made him happy; dinner being ſerved, and Jackſon arrived. I begged their permiſſion for Strap to ſit at table with us, after having informed them, that he was a perſon to whom I was extremely obliged; they were kind enough to grant that favour, and we ate together with great harmony and ſatisfaction.

Our meal being ended, I expreſſed my wonder at the little regard Mr Melopyn had met with from the world; and ſignified a deſire of hearing how he had been treated by the managers of the play-houſes, to whom, I under-

ſtood from Jackſon, he had offered his tragedy without ſucceſs. "There is ſo little entertaining in the inci- "dents of my life (ſaid he) that I am ſure the recital "will not recompenſe your attention; but ſince you "diſcover an inclination to know them, I underſtand "my duty too well to diſappoint your deſires."

MY father, who was a curate in the country, being, by the narrowneſs of his circumſtances, hindered from maintaining me at the univerſity, took the charge of my education upon himſelf, and laboured with ſuch induſtry and concern in the undertaking, that I had little cauſe to regret the want of public maſters. Being at great pains to conſult my natural bias, he diſcovered in me betimes an inclination for poetry; upon which he recommended to me an intimate acquaintance with the claſſics, in the cultivation of which he aſſiſted me with paternal zeal and uncommon erudition. When he thought me ſufficiently acquainted with the ancients, he directed my ſtudies to the beſt modern authors, French and Italian, as well as Engliſh, and laid a particular injunction upon me, to make myſelf maſter of my mother tongue.

About the age of eighteen, I grew ambitious of undertaking a work of ſome conſequence; and, with my father's approbation, actually planned the tragedy you have read; but before I had finiſhed four acts, that indulgent parent died, and left my mother and me in very indigent circumſtances. A near relation compaſſionating our diſtreſs, took us into his family, where I brought my fable to a concluſion; and ſoon after, my mother quitted this life. When my ſorrow for this melancholy event had ſubſided, I told my kinſman, who was a farmer, that having paid my laſt duty to my parent, I had now no attachment to detain me in the country, and therefore was reſolved to ſet out for London, and offer my play to the ſtage, where I did not doubt of acquiring a large ſhare of fame as well as fortune; in which caſe I ſhould not be unmindful of my friends and benefactors. My couſin was ravithed with the proſpect of my felicity, and willingly contributed towards the expence of fitting me out for my expedition.

Accordingly I took a place in the waggon, and arrived in town, where I hired an apartment in a garret, willing to live as frugally as poſſible, until I ſhould know what I had to expect from the manager, to whom I intended to offer my play. For though I looked upon myſelf as perfectly ſecure of a good reception, imagining that a patentee would be as eager to receive, as I to preſent my production; I did not know whether or not he might be pre-engaged in favour of another author, which would certainly retard my ſucceſs. On this conſideration too, I determined to be ſpeedy in my application, and even to wait upon one of the managers the very next day. For this purpoſe I inquired of my landlord, if he knew where either or both of them lived; and he being curious to know my buſineſs, and, at the ſame time, appearing to be a very honeſt, friendly man (a tallow-chandler) I made him acquainted with my deſign; upon which he told me, that I went the wrong way to work; that I would not find ſuch eaſy acceſs to a manager as I imagined; and that if I delivered my performance without proper recommendation, it would be as one to a thouſand if ever it ſhould be minded. "Take my advice, (ſaid he) and your buſineſs is done. One of the "patentees is a good catholic, as I am, and uſes the "ſame father who confeſſes me. I will make you acquainted with this good prieſt, who is an excellent "ſcholar, and if he ſhall approve of your play, his recommendation will go a great way in determining Mr "Supple to bring it on the ſtage." I applauded his expedient, and was introduced to the friar, who having peruſed the tragedy, was pleaſed to give it his approbation, and commended me in particular, for having avoided all reflections upon religion. He promiſed to uſe all his influence with his ſon Supple, in my behalf, and to inform himſelf that very day, when it would be proper for me to wait upon him with the piece. He was punctual in performing his engagement, and next morning gave me to underſtand, that he had mentioned my affair to the manager, and that I had no more to do than to go to his houſe any time in the forenoon, and make uſe of his name, upon which I would find immediate admittance.

I took

I took his advice, put my performance in my boſom, and having received directions, went immediately to the houſe of Mr Supple, and knocked at the door, that had a wicket in the middle, faced with a net-work of iron, through which a ſervant having viewed me ſome time, demanded to know my buſineſs. I told him my buſineſs was with Mr Supple, and that I came from Mr O'Varniſh. He examined my appearance once more, then went away, returned in a few minutes, and ſaid his maſter was buſy, and could not be ſeen. Although I was a little mortified at my diſappointment, I was perſuaded that my reception was owing to Mr Supple's ignorance of my errand; and that I might meet with no more obſtructions of the ſame kind, I deſired Mr O'Varniſh to be my introductor the next time. He complied with my requeſt, and obtained immediate admittance to the manager, who received me with the utmoſt civility, and promiſed to read my play with the firſt convenience. By his own appointment I called again in a fortnight, but he was gone out; I returned in a week after, and the poor gentleman was extremely ill; I renewed my viſit in a fortnight after that, and he aſſured me he had been ſo much fatigued with buſineſs, that he had not been able as yet to read it to an end; but he would take the firſt opportunity; and in the mean time, obſerved, that what he had yet ſeen of it was very entertaining. I comforted myſelf with this declaration a few weeks longer, at the end of which, I appeared again before the wicket, was let in, and found him laid up with the gout. I no ſooner entered his chamber, than, looking at me with a languiſhing eye, he pronounced, "Mr Melopoyn, I'm "heartily ſorry for an accident that has happened du-"ring my illneſs—you muſt know, that my eldeſt boy, "finding your manuſcript upon the table in the dining-"room where I uſed to read it, carried it into the kit-"chen, and leaving it there, a negligent wench of a "cook-maid, miſtaking it for waſte-paper, has expend-"ed it all but a few leaves in ſingeing fowls upon the "fire—but I hope the misfortune is not irreparable, "for, no doubt, you have ſeveral copies."

I proteſt to you, my good friend, Mr Random, I was extremely ſhocked at this information! but the good-natured gentleman ſeemed to be ſo much affected with my misfortune, that I ſuppreſſed my concern, and told him, that although I had not another copy, I ſhould be able to retrieve the loſs by writing another from my memory, which was very tenacious. You cannot imagine how well pleaſed Mr Supple was at this aſſurance; he begged I would ſet about it immediately, and carefully revolve and recollect every circumſtance, before I pretended to commit it to paper, that it might be the ſame individual play that he had peruſed. Encouraged by this injunction, which plainly demonſtrated how much he intereſted himſelf in the affair, I taſked my remembrance and induſtry, and in three weeks produced the exact image of the former, which was conveyed to him by my good friend father O'Varniſh, who let me know, next day, that Mr Supple would reviſe it ſuperficially in order to judge of its ſameneſs with the other, and then give his final anſwer. For this examination I allotted a week; and in full confidence of ſeeing it acted in a little while, demanded an audience of the manager, when that term was expired. But alas! the ſeaſon had ſlipt away inſenſibly; he convinced me, that if my play had been put into rehearſal at that time, it could not have been ready for performing until the end of March, when the benefit nights come on; conſequently it would have interfered with the intereſt of the players, whom it was my buſineſs not to diſoblige.

I was fain to acquieſce in theſe reaſons, which, to be ſure, was extremely juſt; and to reſerve my performance to the next ſaſon, when he hoped I would not be ſo unlucky. Although it was a grievous diſappointment to me, who by this time began to want both money and neceſſaries; having, on the ſtrength of my expectation from the theatre, launched out into ſome extravagancies; by which the ſum I had brought to town was already almoſt conſumed. Indeed I ought to be aſhamed at the circumſtance of my conduct: for my finances were ſufficient, with good economy, to have maintained me comfortably for a whole year. You will, perhaps,

be

be amazed when I tell you, that in fix months I expended not a farthing leſs than ten guineas: but when one conſiders the temptations to which a young man is expoſed in this great city, eſpecially if he is addicted to pleaſure as I am, the wonder will vaniſh, or at leaſt abate. Nor was the cauſe of my concern limited to my own ſituation entirely: I had wrote an account of my good reception to my kinſman the farmer, and deſired him to depend upon me for the money he had kindly accommodated me with, about the end of February: which promiſe I now found myſelf unable to perform. However, there was no remedy but patience: I applied to my landlord, who was a very good-natured man, candidly owned my diſtreſs, and begged his advice in laying down ſome plan for my ſubſiſtence. He readily promiſed to conſult his confeſſor on this ſubject, and in the mean time, told me, I was welcome to lodge and board with him, until fortune ſhould put it in my power to make reſtitution.

Mr O'Varnith being informed of my neceſſity, offered to introduce me to the author of a weekly paper, who, he did not doubt, would employ me in that way, provided he ſhould find me duly qualified; but upon enquiry, I underſtood that this journal was calculated to foment diviſions in the commonwealth, and therefore I deſired to be excuſed from engaging in it. He then propoſed that I ſhould write ſomething in the poetical way, which I might diſpoſe of to a bookſeller for a pretty ſum of ready money, and perhaps eſtabliſh my own character into the bargain: this event would infallibly procure friends; and my tragedy would appear next ſeaſon to the beſt advantage, by being ſupported both by intereſt and reputation. I was charmed by this proſpect, and having heard what friends Mr Pope acquired by his paſtorals, ſet about a work of that kind, and in leſs than ſix weeks, compoſed as many eclogues, which I forthwith offered to an eminent bookſeller, who deſired I would leave them for his peruſal, and he would give me an anſwer in two days. At the end of that time, I went to him, when he returned the poems, telling me, they would not anſwer his purpoſe, and ſweetened his refuſal, by ſaying there were ſome good clever lines in them.

Not

Not a little dejected at this rebuff, which, I learned from Mr O'Varnish, was owing to the opinion of another author, whom this bookseller always consulted on these occasions. I applied to another person of the same profession, who told me, that the town was cloyed with pastorals, and advised me, if I intended to profit by my talents, to write something satirical, or luscious, such as the *Button Hole*, *Shocky and Towzer*, *the Leaky Vessel*, &c. And yet this was a man in years, who wore a reverend periwig, looked like a senator, and went regularly to church. Be that as it will, I scorned to prostitute my pen in the manner he proposed, and carried my papers to a third, who assured me that poetry was entirely out of his way; and asked, if I had got never a piece of secret history, thrown into a series of letters, or a volume of adventures, such as those of Robinson Crusoe, and Colonel Jack, or a collection of conundrums, wherewith to entertain the plantations. Being quite unfurnished for this dealer, I had recourse to another with as little success, and I verily believe was rejected by the whole trade.

I was afterwards persuaded to offer myself as a translator, and accordingly repaired to a person who was said to entertain numbers of that class in his pay; he assured me, he had already a great deal of that work on his hands, which he did not know what to do with; observed that translation was a mere drug, that branch of literature being overstocked by an inundation from North-Britain; and asked what I would expect *per* sheet, for rendering the Latin classics into English. That I might not make myself too cheap, I determined to set a high price upon my qualification, and demanded half a guinea for every translated sheet. "Half a guinea!" (cried he, staring at me) then paused a little, and said he had no occasion for my service at present. I found my error, and resolving to make amends, fell one half in my demand; upon which he stared at me again, and told me his hands were full. I attempted others, without finding employment, and was actually reduced to a very uncomfortable prospect, when I had thought myself of offering my talents to the printers of half penny ballads, and other such occasional rhymers as are hawked about the streets. With this

view,

view, I applied to one of the moſt noted and vociferous of this tribe, who directed me to a perſon whom I found entertaining a whole crowd of them with gin, bread and cheeſe; he carried me into a little back parlour, very neatly furniſhed, where I ſignified my deſire of being enrolled among his writers; and was aſked what kind of compoſition I profeſſed? Underſtanding that my inclination leaned towards poetry, he expreſſed his ſatisfaction, telling me one of his poets had loſt his ſenſes, and was confined in Bedlam, and the other was become dozed with drinking drams; ſo that he had not done any thing tolerable theſe many weeks. When I propoſed that he ſhould enter into terms of agreement, he gave me to underſtand, that his bargains were always conditional, and his authors paid in proportion to the ſale of their works.

Having therefore ſettled theſe conditions, which (I do aſſure you) were not very advantageous to me, he aſſigned me a ſubject for a ballad which was to be finiſhed in two hours; and I retired to my garret in order to perform his injunction. As the theme happened to ſuit my fancy, I completed a pretty ſort of an ode within the time preſcribed, and brought it to him, big with hope of profit and pleaſure. He read it in a twinkling, and, to my utter aſtoniſhment, told me it would not do; though indeed, he owned I wrote a good hand, and ſpelled very well, but my language was too high flown, and of conſequence not at all adapted to the capacity and taſte of his cuſtomers. I promiſed to rectify that miſtake, and in half an hour humbled my ſtile to the comprehenſion of vulgar readers; he approved of the alteration, and gave me ſome hopes of ſucceeding in time, though he obſerved that my performance was very deficient in that quaintneſs of expreſſion that pleaſes the multitude: however, to encourage me, he ventured the expence of printing and paper, and if I remember aright, my ſhare of the firſt amounted to fourpence halfpenny.

From that day, I ſtudied the Grub-ſtreet manner with great diligence, and at length became ſuch a profeſſor, that my works were in great requeſt among the moſt polite of the chairmen, draymen, hackney-coach men, foot-

men,

men, and ſerving maids: nay, I have enjoyed the pleaſure of ſeeing my productions adorned with cuts, paſted upon the wall as ornaments in beer-cellars and coblers' ſtalls; and have actually heard them ſung in clubs of ſubſtantial tradeſmen. But empty praiſe (you know, my dear friend) will not ſupply the cravings of nature. I found myſelf in danger of ſtarving in the midſt of all my fame; for of ten ſongs I compoſed, it was well if two had the good fortune to pleaſe. For this reaſon I turned my thoughts to proſe, and during a tract of gloomy weather, publiſhed an apparition, on the ſubſtance of which I ſubſiſted very comfortably a whole month: I have made many a good meal upon a monſter; a rape has often afforded me great ſatisfaction: but a murder, well-timed, was my never-failing reſource. What then? I was a moſt miſerable ſlave to my employers, who expected to be furniſhed at a minute's warning with proſe and verſe, juſt as they thought the circumſtances of the times required, whether the *inclination was abſent or preſent*. Upon my ſincerity, Mr Random, I have been ſo much peſtered and beſieged by theſe children of clamour, that my life became a burden to me.

CHAP. LXIII.

The continuation and concluſion of Mr Melopoyn's *ſtory.*

I MADE ſhift, notwithſtanding, to maintain myſelf till the beginning of next winter, when I renewed my addreſſes to my friend Mr Supple, and was moſt graciouſly received. "I have been thinking of your affair, "Mr Melopoyn," ſaid he, "and am determined to ſhew "how far I have your intereſt at heart, by introducing "you to a young nobleman of my acquaintance, who is "remarkable for his fine taſte in dramatic writings, and "is, beſide, a man of ſuch influence, that if once he "ſhould approve your play, his patronage will ſupport "it againſt all the efforts of envy and ignorance: for I

"do aſſure you, that merit alone will not bring ſucceſs. "I have already ſpoken of your performance to Lord "Rattle, and if you will call at my houſe in a day or "two, you ſhall have a letter of introduction to his Lord-"ſhip." I was ſenſibly touched with this mark of Mr Supple's friendſhip, and looking upon my affair as already done, went home and imparted my good fortune to my landlord, who, to render my appearance more acceptable to my patron, procured a ſuit of new cloathes for me on his own credit.

Not to trouble you with idle particulars, I carried my tragedy to his Lordſhip's lodgings, and ſent it up along with Mr Supple's letter, by one of his ſervants, who deſired me, by his Lordſhip's order, to return in a week. I did ſo, and was admitted to his Lordſhip, who received me very courteouſly, told me he had peruſed my play, which he thought on the whole, was the beſt *coup d'eſſai* he had ever ſeen; but that he had marked ſome places in the margin, which he imagined might be altered for the better. I was tranſported with this reception, and promiſed (with many acknowledgments of his Lordſhip's generoſity) to be governed ſolely by his advice and direction. "Well then," ſaid he, write another fair copy "with the alterations I have propoſed, and bring it to "me as ſoon as poſſible, for I am reſolved to have it "brought on the ſtage this winter." You may be ſure I ſet about this taſk with alacrity, and although I found his Lordſhip's remarks much more numerous and of leſs importance than I expected, I thought it was not my intereſt to diſpute upon trifles with my patron; therefore new-modelled it according to his deſire, in leſs than a month.

When I waited upon him with the manuſcript, I found one of the actors at breakfaſt with his Lordſhip, who immediately introduced him to my acquaintance, and deſired him to read a ſcene of my play. This he performed very much to my ſatisfaction with regard to emphaſis and pronunciation; but he ſignified his diſguſt at ſeveral words in every page, which I preſuming to defend, Lord Rattle told me, with a peremptory look, I muſt not pretend to diſpute with him, who had been a player

theſe twenty years, and underſtood the œconomy of the ſtage better than any man living. I was forced to ſubmit, and his Lordſhip propoſed the ſame actor ſhould read the whole play, in the evening, before ſome gentlemen of his acquaintance, whom he would convene at his lodgings for that purpoſe.

I was preſent at the reading; and I proteſt to you, my dear friend, I never underwent ſuch a ſevere trial in the whole courſe of my life as at that juncture! for although the player might be a very honeſt man and a good performer, he was exceſſively illiterate and aſſuming, and made a thouſand frivolous objections, which I was not permitted to anſwer; however, the piece was wery much applauded on the whole; the gentlemen preſent, who I underſtood were men of fortune, promiſed to countenance and ſupport it as much as they could; and Lord Rattle aſſuring me, that he would act the part of a careful nurſe to it, deſired me to carry it home and alter it immediately according to their remarks. I was fain to acquieſce in his determination, and fulfilled his injunctions with all the expedition in my power; but before I could preſent the new copy, my good friend Mr Supple had diſpoſed of his property and patent to one Mr Brayer; ſo that freſh intereſt was to be made with the new manager. This taſk Lord Rattle undertook, having ſome acquaintance with him, and recommended my performance ſo ſtrongly that it was received.

I looked upon myſelf now as upon the eve of reaping the fruits of all my labour: I waited a few days in expectation of its being put into rehearſal, and wondering at the delay, applied to my worthy patron, who excuſed Mr Brayer on account of the multiplicity of buſineſs in which he was involved, and bid me beware of teazing the patentee. I treaſured up this caution, and exerted my patience three weeks longer; at the end of which his Lordſhip gave me to underſtand, that Mr Brayer had read my play, and owned it had indubitable merit; but as he had long been pre-engaged to another author, he could not poſſibly repreſent it that ſeaſon; though if I would reſerve it for the next, and in the interim make

ſuch

ſuch alterations as he had propoſed by obſervations in the margin, I might depend upon his compliance.

Thunderſtruck at this diſappointment, I could not, for ſome minutes, utter one ſyllable: at length, however I complained bitterly of the manager's inſincerity in amuſing me ſo long, when he knew from the beginning, that he could not gratify my deſire. But his Lordſhip reprimanded me for my freedom; ſaid Mr Brayer was a man of honour, and imputed his behaviour with reſpect to me, to nothing elſe but forgetfulneſs. And indeed I have had ſome reaſon, ſince that time, to be convinced of his bad memory; for, in ſpite of appearances, I will not allow myſelf to interpret his conduct any other way. Lord Rattle obſerving me very much affected with my diſappointment, offered his intereſt to bring on my play in the other houſe, which I eagerly accepting, he forthwith wrote a letter of recommendation to Mr Bellower, actor and prime miniſter to Mr Vandal, proprietor of that theatre; and deſired me to deliver it with my tragedy, without loſs of time. Accordingly I haſtened to his houſe, where after having waited a whole hour in a lobby, I was admitted to his preſence, and my performance received with great ſtate. He told me he was extremely buſy at preſent, but he would peruſe it as ſoon as poſſible, and bid me call again in a week. I took my leave, not a little aſtoniſhed at the port and ſupercilious behaviour of this ſtage-player, who had not treated me with good manners; and began to think the dignity of a poet greatly impaired ſince the days of Euripides and Sophocles; but all this was nothing in compariſon of what I have ſince obſerved.

Well, Mr Random, I went back at the appointed time, and was told that Mr Bellower was engaged, and could not ſee me. I repeated my viſit a few days after, and having waited a conſiderable time, was favoured with an audience, during which he ſaid, he had not as yet read my play. Nettled at this uſage, I could contain myſelf no longer, but telling him, I imagined he would have had more deference to Lord Rattle's recommendation, demanded my manuſcript with ſome expreſſions of reſentment. "Ay," ſaid he, in a theatrical tone, "with

" all my heart." Then pulling out a drawer of the bureau at which he ſat, he took out a bundle, and threw it upon a table that was near him, pronouncing the word, " There," with great diſdain. I took it up, and perceiving with ſome ſurpriſe, that it was a comedy, told him, it did not belong to me; upon which he offered me another, which I alſo diſclaimed. A third was produced, and rejected for the ſame reaſon. At length he pulled out a whole handful and ſpread them before me, ſaying, " There are ſeven—take which you pleaſe—or " take them all." I ſingled out my own, and went away, ſtruck dumb with admiration at what I had ſeen—not ſo much on account of his inſolence, as of the number of new plays, which, from this circumſtance, I concluded were yearly offered to the ſtage. You may be ſure I did not fail to carry my complaint to my patron, who did not receive it with all the indignation I expected; but taxed me with precipitation, and told me, I muſt lay my account with bearing the humours of the players, if I intended to write for the ſtage. " There is now no other " remedy," ſaid, he, " but to keep it till the next ſea- " ſon for Mr Brayer, and alter it at your leiſure in the " ſummer time, according to his directions." I was now reduced to a terrible alternative, either to quit all hopes of my tragedy, from which I had all along promiſed myſelf a large ſhare of fortune and reputation, or to encounter eight long months of adverſity, in preparing for, and expecting its appearance. This laſt pennance, painful as it was, ſeemed moſt eligible to my reflection at that time, and therefore I reſolved to undergo it.

Why ſhould I tire you with particulars of no conſequence? I wreſtled with extreme poverty, until the time of my probation was expired, and went to my Lord Rattle, in order to remind him of my affair, when I underſtood, to my great concern, that his Lordſhip was on the point of going abroad, and, which was ſtill more unfortunate for me, Mr Brayer had gone into the country; ſo that my generous patron had it not in his power to introduce me perſonally, as he intended: however, he wrote a very ſtrong letter to the manager in my favour,

and

and put him in mind of the promiſe he had made in behalf of my play.

As ſoon as I was certified of Mr Brayer's return, I went to his houſe with this letter, but was told he was gone out. I called again next day early in the morning, received the ſame anſwer, and was deſired to leave my name and buſineſs. I did ſo, and returned the day after, when the ſervant ſtill affirmed, that his maſter was gone abroad, though I perceived him, as I retired, obſerving me through a window. Incenſed at this diſcovery, I went to a coffee-houſe hard by, and incloſed his Lordſhip's letter in one from myſelf, demanding a categorical anſwer. I ſent it to his houſe, by a porter, who returned in a few minutes, and told me Mr Brayer would be glad to ſee me at that inſtant. I obeyed the ſummons, and was received with ſuch profuſion of compliments and apologies, that my reſentment immediately ſubſided, and I was even in pain for the concern which this honeſt man ſhewed at the miſtake of his ſervant, who, it ſeems, had been ordered to deny him to every body but me. He expreſſed the utmoſt veneration for his good and noble friend Lord Rattle, whom he ſhould always be proud to ſerve; promiſed to peruſe the play with all diſpatch, and give me a meeting upon it; and, as a teſtimony of his eſteem, made me a preſent of a general order for the ſeaſon, by which I ſhould be admitted to any part of the theatre. This was a very agreeable compliment to me, whoſe greateſt pleaſure conſiſted in ſeeing dramatic performances, and you need not doubt that I often availed myſelf of my privilege. As I had an opportunity of being behind the ſcenes when I pleaſed, I frequently converſed with Mr Brayer about my play, and aſked when he intended to put it into rehearſal; but he had always ſo much buſineſs upon his hands, that it remained with him unopened a conſiderable while; and I became very uneaſy about the ſeaſon, that waſted apace, when I ſaw in the papers, another new play advertiſed, which had been written, offered, accepted and rehearſed in the compaſs of three months, without my knowledge or ſuſpicion. You may eaſily gueſs how much I was confounded at this event! I own to you that, in the firſt tranſ-

ports

ports of my anger, I ſuſpected Mr Brayer of having acted towards me in the moſt pitiful, perfidious manner; and was actually glad at his diſappointment in the ſucceſs of his favourite piece, which, by the ſtrength of art, lingered till the third night, and then died in a deplorable manner. But, now that paſſion has no ſhare in my reflection, I am willing to aſcribe his behaviour to his want of memory, or want of judgment, which, you know, are natural defects, that are more worthy of compaſſion than reproach.

About this time I happened to be in company with a gentlewoman, who having heard of my tragedy, told me, ſhe was acquainted with the wife of a gentleman, who was very well known to a lady, who had great intereſt with a perſon who was intimate with Earl Sheerwit, and that if I pleaſed, ſhe would uſe her influence in my behalf. As this nobleman had the character of a Mæcenas in the nation, and could ſtamp a value upon any work by his ſole countenance and approbation, I accepted her offer with eagerneſs, in full confidence of ſeeing my reputation eſtabliſhed, and my wiſhes fulfilled in a very ſhort time, provided that I ſhould have the good fortune to pleaſe his Lordſhip's taſte. I withdrew the manuſcript from the hands of Mr Brayer, and committed it to the care of this gentlewoman, who laboured ſo effectually in my intereſt, that in leſs than a month it was conveyed to the Earl, and in a few weeks after, I had the ſatisfaction to hear he had read and approved it very much. Tranſported with this piece of intelligence, I flattered myſelf with the hopes of his intereſting himſelf in its favour; but hearing no more of the matter in three whole months, I began (God forgive me!) to ſuſpect the veracity of the perſon who brought me the good tidings; for I thought it impoſſible, that a man of his rank and character, who knew the difficulty of writing a good tragedy, and underſtood the dignity of the work, ſhould read and applaud an eſſay of this kind, without feeling an inclination to befriend the author, whom his countenance alone could raiſe above dependance. But it was not long before I found my friends very much wronged by my opinion.

You

You muſt know, that the civilities I had received from Lord Rattle, and the deſire he manifeſted to promote the ſucceſs of my play, encouraged me to write an account of my bad fortune to his Lordſhip, who condeſcended ſo far, as to deſire, by letter, a young Squire of a great eſtate, with whom he was intimate, to eſpouſe my cauſe, and, in particular, make me acquainted with one Mr Marmozet, a celebrated player, who had lately appeared on the ſtage with aſtoniſhing eclat, and bore ſuch ſway in the houſe where he acted, that the managers durſt not refuſe any thing he recommended. The young gentleman, whom Lord Rattle had employed for this purpoſe, being diffident of his own intereſt with Mr Marmozet, had recourſe to a nobleman of his acquaintance, who, at his ſolicitation, was ſo good as to introduce me to him; and the converſation turning upon my performance, I was not a little ſurpriſed, as well as pleaſed to hear, that Earl Sheerwit had ſpoke very much in its praiſe, and even ſent Mr Marmozet the copy, with a meſſage, expreſſing a deſire that he would act it next ſeaſon. Nor was the favourite actor backward in commending the piece, which he mentioned with ſome expreſſions of regard that I do not chooſe to repeat; aſſuring me that he would appear in it, provided he ſhould be engaged to play at all during the enſuing ſeaſon. In the mean time, he deſired I would give him leave to peruſe it in the country, whither he intended to remove next day, that he might have leiſure to conſider and point out ſuch alterations as might, perhaps, be neceſſary for the *jeu de theatre*; and took my direction, that he might communicate, by letter, the obſervations he ſhould make. Truſting to theſe aſſurances, and the intereſt which had been made in my behalf, I hugged myſelf in the expectation of ſeeing it, not only acted, but acted to the greateſt advantage, which I thought could not fail of recompenſing me in an ample manner, for the anxiety and affliction I had undergone: But ſix weeks being elapſed, I did not know how to reconcile Mr Marmozet's ſilence, with his promiſe of writing to me in ten days after he ſet out for the country; however, I was at laſt favoured with a letter, importing, that he had made ſome remarks on my tra-

gedy,

gedy, which he would freely impart at meeting, and adviſing me to put it, without loſs of time, into the hands of that manager, who had the beſt company; for he himſelf was quite uncertain whether or not he ſhould be engaged that winter. I was a good deal alarmed at this laſt part of his letter, and adviſed about it with a friend, who told me it was a plain indication of Mr Marmazet's deſire to be rid of his promiſe; that his pretended uncertainty about acting next winter, was no other than a ſcandalous evaſion; for, to his certain knowledge, he was already engaged, or, at leaſt, in terms, with Mr Vandal; and that his deſign was to diſappoint me, in favour of a new comedy, which he had purchaſed of the author, and was intending to bring upon the ſtage for his own advantage. In ſhort, my dear Sir, this perſon, who, I muſt own, is of a very ſanguine complexion, handled the moral character of Mr Marmozet with ſuch ſeverity, that I began to ſuſpect him of ſome particular prejudice, and put myſelf upon my guard againſt his inſinuations. I ought to crave pardon for this tedious narration of trivial circumſtances, which, however intereſting they may be to me, muſt certainly be very dry and inſipid to the ear of one unconcerned in the affair. But I underſtand the meaning of your looks, and will proceed—Well, Sir, Mr Marmozet, upon his return to town, treated me with uncommon complaiſance, and invited me to his lodgings, where he propoſed to communicate his remarks, which, I confeſs, were more unfavourable than I expected; but I anſwered his objections, and, as I thought, brought him over to my opinion; for on the whole, he ſignified the higheſt approbation of the performance. In the courſe of our diſpute, I was not a little ſurpriſed to find this poor gentleman's memory ſo treacherous as to let him forget what he had ſaid to me, before he went out of town, in regard to Earl Sheerwit's opinion of my play, which he now profeſſed himſelf ignorant of: and I was extremely mortified at hearing from his own mouth, that his intereſt with Mr Vandal was ſo very low, as to be inſufficient of itſelf to bring a new piece upon the ſtage. I then begged his advice, and he counſelled me to apply to Earl Sheerwit for a meſſage in my favour to the manager,

who would not presume to refuse any thing recommended by so great a man; and he was so kind as to promise to second this message with all his power. I had immediate recourse to the worthy gentlewoman my friend already mentioned, who opened the channels of her conveyance with such expedition, that in a few days I had the promise of the message, provided I could ensure myself of Mr Vandal's being unengaged to any other; for his Lordship did not chuse to condescend so far, until he should understand that there was a probability, at least, of succeeding. At the same time in which I was blessed with this piece of news, I was startled at another, by the same canal of communication; which was, that Mr Marmozet, before he advised me to this application, had informed the Earl, that he had read my play, and found it altogether unfit for the stage. Though I could not doubt the certainty of this intelligence, I believed there was some misapprehension in the case; and without taking any notice of it, told Mr Marmozet the answer I had been favoured with; upon which he testified much joy, and promised to ask Mr Vandal the question proposed. I waited upon him in a day or two, when he gave me to understand, that Mr Vandal having professed himself free of all engagements, he had put my play into his hands, and represented it as a piece strongly recommended by Earl Sheerwit, who, he assured him, would honour him with a message in its favour; and he desired me to call for an answer at Mr Vandal's house in three days. I followed his directions, and found the manager, who being made acquainted with my business, owned, that Mr Marmozet had given him a manuscript play, but denied that he had mentioned Earl Sheerwit's name. When I informed him of the circumstances of the affair, he said he had no engagement with any author: that he would read my tragedy forthwith; and did not believe he should venture to reject it in contradiction to his Lordship's opinion, for which he had the utmost veneration, but put it into rehearsal without loss of time. I was so much intoxicated with this encouragement, that I overlooked the mysterious conduct of Mr Marmozet, and attended the manager at the time appointed, when, to my infinite con-

fusion, he pronounced my play improper for the stage, and rejected it accordingly. As soon as I could recollect myself from the disorder into which this unexpected refusal had thrown me, I expressed a desire of hearing his objections, which were so groundless, indistinct, and unintelligible, that I persuaded myself he had not at all perused the piece, but had been prompted by somebody whose lessons he had not rightly retained. However, I have been since informed, that the poor man's head, which was not naturally very clear, had been disordered with superstition, and that he laboured under the tyranny of a wife, and the terrors of hell-fire at the same time. Precipitated in this manner from the highest pinnacle of hope, to the abyss of despondence, I was ready to sink under the burthen of my affliction; and in the bitterness of my anguish, could not help entertaining some doubts of Mr Marmozet's integrity, when I recollected and compared the circumstances of his conduct towards me. I was encouraged in this suspicion by being told, that my Lord Sheerwit had spoke of his character with great contempt; and in particular, resented his insolence in opposing his own taste to that of his Lordship, concerning my tragedy. While I hesitated between different opinions of the matter, that friend, who, as I told you before, was a little hot-headed, favoured me with a visit, and having heard a circumstantial account of the whole affair, could not contain his indignation, but affirmed without ceremony, that Marmozet was the sole occasion of my disappointment; that he had acted from first to last with the most perfidious dissimulation, cajoling with insinuating civilities, while he underhand employed all his art and influence to prejudice the ignorant manager against my performance; that nothing could equal his hypocrisy but his avarice, which engrossed the faculties of his soul so much, that he scrupled not to be guilty of the meanest practices to gratify that sordid appetite; that, in consequence of this disposition, he had prostituted his honour in betraying my inexperience, and in undermining the interest of another author of established reputation, who had also offered a tragedy to the stage, which he thought would interfere

interfere with the ſucceſs of the comedy he had bought, and determined to bring on at all events.

I was ſhocked at the deſcription of ſuch a monſter, which I could not believe exiſted in the world, bad as it is, and argued againſt the aſſeverations of my friend, by demonſtrating the bad policy of ſuch behaviour, which could not fail of entailing infamy upon the author; and the ſmall temptation that a man of Mr Marmozet's figure and ſucceſs could have to conſult his intereſt in ſuch a grovelling manner, which muſt create contempt and abhorrence of him in his patrons, and effectually deprive him of the countenance and protection he now enjoys in ſuch an eminent degree. He pretended to laugh at my ſimplicity, and aſked if I knew for which of his virtues he was ſo much careſſed by the people of faſhion. "It is "not (ſaid he) for the qualities of his heart, that this lit-"tle paraſite is invited to the tables of Dukes and Lords, "who hire extraordinary cooks for his entertainment; "his avarice they ſee not, his ingratitude they feel not, "his hypocriſy accommodates itſelf to their humours, "and is of conſequence pleaſing; but he is chiefly "courted for his buffoonery, and will be admitted into "the choiceſt parties of the quality for his talent of mi-"micking Punch and his wife Joan, when a poet of the "moſt exquiſite genius, is not able to attract the leaſt re-"gard." God forbid, Mr Random, that I ſhould credit aſſertions that degrade the dignity of our ſuperiors ſo much, and repreſent that poor man as the moſt abject of all beings! No! I looked upon them as the hyperboles of paſſion; and though that comedy of which he ſpoke did actually appear, I dare not doubt the innocence of Mr Marmozet, who, I am told, is as much as ever in favour with the Earl; a circumſtance that ſurely could not happen, unleſs he had vindicated his character to the ſatisfaction of his Lordſhip. Pray forgive this long digreſſion, and give me the hearing a little longer; for, thank Heaven, I am now near the goal.

Baffled in all my attempts, I deſpaired of ſeeing my play acted, and bethought myſelf of chuſing ſome employment, that might afford a ſure, though mean ſubſiſtence; but my landlord, to whom I was by this time conſiderably

indebted, and who had laid his account with having his money paid all in a heap, from the profits of my third night, could not brook his diſappointment, therefore made another effort in my behalf, and by dint of intereſt procured a meſſage from a lady of faſhion to Mr Brayer, who had always profeſſed a great veneration for her, deſiring that he would ſet up my play forthwith, and aſſuring him that ſhe and all her friends would ſupport it in the performance; to ſtrengthen my intereſt, ſhe engaged his beſt actors in my cauſe; and in ſhort, exerted herſelf ſo much, that it was again received, and my hopes began to revive. But Mr Brayer, honeſt man, was ſo much engroſſed by buſineſs of vaſt conſequence, though to appearance he had nothing at all to do, that he could not find time to read it till the ſeaſon was pretty far advanced; and read it he muſt, for, notwithſtanding his having peruſed it before, his memory did not retain one circumſtance of the matter.

At length he favoured it with his attention, and having propoſed certain alterations, ſent his duty to the lady who patronized it, and promiſed on his honour to bring it on next winter, provided theſe alterations ſhould be made, and the copy delivered to him before the end of April. With an aching heart, I ſubmitted to theſe conditions, and performed them accordingly; but fortune owed me another unforeſeen mortification; Mr Marmozet, during the ſummer, became joint patentee with Mr Brayer, ſo, when I claimed performance of articles, I was told he could do nothing without the conſent of his partner, who was pre-engaged to another author.

My condition was rendered deſperate by the death of my good friend and landlord, whoſe executors obtained judgment againſt my effects, which they ſeized, turned me out into the ſtreets naked, friendleſs, and forlorn; there I was arreſted at the ſuit of my tailor, and thrown into this priſon, where I have made ſhift to live theſe five weeks on the bounty of my fellow-priſoners, who, I hope, are not the worſe for the inſtruction and good offices by which I manifeſt my gratitude; but in ſpite of all their charitable endeavours, my life was ſcarce tolera-

ble

ble until your uncommon benevolence enabled me to enjoy it with comfort.

CHAP. LXIV.

I am ſeized with a deep melancholy, and become a ſloven—am relieved by my uncle—he prevails upon me to engage with his owners, as a ſurgeon of the ſhip which he commands—he makes me a conſiderable preſent—entertains Strap as his ſteward—I take leave of my friends, and go on board—the ſhip arrives at the Downs.

I SHALL not make any reflections on this ſtory, in the courſe of which, the reader muſt perceive how egregiouſly the ſimplicity and milky diſpoſition of this worthy man, had been duped and abuſed by a ſet of ſcoundrels, who were ſo habituated to falſehood and equivocation, that I verily believe, they could not utter one ſyllable of truth, though their lives depended upon their ſincerity. Notwithſtanding all I had ſuffered from the knavery and ſelfiſhneſs of mankind, I was amazed and incenſed at the baſe indifference which ſuffered ſuch uncommon merit as he poſſeſſed to languiſh in obſcurity, and ſtruggle with all the miſeries of a loathſome goal; and ſhould have bleſſed the occaſion that ſecluded me from ſuch a perfidious world, had not the remembrance of the amiable Narciſſa preſerved my attachment to that ſociety of which ſhe conſtituted a part. The picture of that lovely creature was the conſtant companion of my ſolitude; how often did I contemplate the reſemblance of thoſe enchanting features that firſt captivated my heart! how often did I weep over thoſe endearing ſcenes which her image recalled! and how often did I curſe my perfidious fate for having deprived me of the fair original! In vain did my imagination flatter me with ſchemes of future happineſs; ſurely reaſon always interpoſed, and in a moment overthrew the unſubſtantial fabric, by chaſtiſing the extravagance of my hope, and repreſenting my unhappy ſituation in the right point of view: in vain did

did I fly for refuge to the amuſements of the place, and engage in the parties of Jackſon, at cards, billiards, nine pins, and fives; a train of melancholy thoughts took poſſeſſion of my ſoul, which even the converſation of Melopoyn could not divert. I ordered Strap every day to enquire at Banter's lodgings, in expectation of hearing again from my charmer; and my diſappointment conſiderably augmented my chagrin. My affectionate valet was infected with my ſorrow, and often ſat with me whole hours without ſpeaking, uttering ſigh for ſigh, and ſhedding tear for tear. This fellowſhip increaſed our diſtemper; he became incapable of buſineſs, and was diſcarded by his maſter; while I, ſeeing my money melt away, without any certainty of deliverance, and in ſhort, all my hopes fruſtrated, grew negligent of life, loſt all appetite, and degenerated into ſuch a ſloven, that during the ſpace of two months, I was neither waſhed, ſhifted, nor ſhaved; ſo that my face, rendered meagre with abſtinence, was obſcured with dirt, and overſhadowed with hair, and my whole appearance ſqualid, and even frightful; when one day Strap brought me notice, that there was a man below who wanted to ſpeak with me. Rouſed at this intelligence, and in full hopes of receiving a letter from the dear object of my love, I ran down ſtairs with the utmoſt precipitation, and found, to my infinite ſurpriſe, my generous uncle Mr Bowling! Tranſported at the ſight, I ſprang forward to embrace him; upon which he ſtarted aſide with great agility, drew his hanger, and put himſelf upon his guard, crying, "Avaſt, brother, a-"vaſt! ſheer off—Yo ho, you turnkey, why don't you "keep a better look out? here's one of your crazy pri-"ſoners broke from his laſhings, I do ſuppoſe." I could not help laughing heartily at his miſtake, which I ſoon rectified by my voice, that he inſtantly recollected, and ſhook me by the hand with great affection, teſtifying his concern at ſeeing me in ſuch a miſerable condition.

I conducted him to my apartment, where, in preſence of Strap, whom I introduced to him as one of my beſt friends, he let me know, that he was juſt arrived from the coaſt of Guinea, after he had made a pretty ſucceſsful voyage, in which he acted as mate, until the ſhip was attacked

attacked by a French privateer; that the captain being killed during the engagement, he had taken the command, and was ſo fortunate as to ſink the enemy; after which he fell in with a merchant ſhip from Martinico, laden with ſugar, indigo, and ſome ſilver; and by virtue of his letter of marque, attacked, took, and brought her ſafe into Kinſale in Ireland, where ſhe was condemned as a lawful prize; by which means, he had not only got a pretty ſum of money, but alſo acquired the favour of his owners, who had already conferred upon him the command of a large ſhip, mounted with twenty nine pounders, ready to ſail upon a very advantageous voyage, which he was not at liberty to diſcover. And he aſſured me, it was with the greateſt difficulty he had found me, in conſequence of a direction left for him at his lodgings in Wapping.

I was rejoiced beyond meaſure at this account of his good fortune; and at his deſire recounted all the adventures that had happened to me ſince we parted. When he underſtood the particulars of Strap's attachment to me, he ſqueezed his hand very cordially, and promiſed to make a man of him: and giving me ten guineas for my preſent occaſion, took a direction for the tailor who arreſted me, and went away in order to diſcharge the debt, telling me at parting, that he would ſoon fetch up all my lee way with a wet ſail.

I was utterly confounded at this ſudden tranſition, which affected me more than any reverſe I had formerly felt; and a crowd of incoherent ideas ruſhed ſo impetuouſly upon my imagination, that my reaſon could neither ſeparate nor connect them; when Strap, whoſe joy had manifeſted itſelf in a thouſand fooleries, came into my room with his ſhaving utenſils, and without any previous intimation, began to lather my beard, whiſtling with great emotion all the while. I ſtarted from my reverie, and being too well acquainted with Strap, to truſt myſelf in his hands while he was under ſuch agitation, deſired to be excuſed, ſent for another barber, and ſuffered myſelf to be trimmed. Having performed the ceremony of ablution, I dreſſed and dreſſing in my gayeſt apparel, waited for

him

the return of my uncle, who was agreeably ſurpriſed at my ſudden transformation.

This beneficent kinſman had ſatisfied my creditor, and obtained an order for my diſcharge, ſo that I was no longer a priſoner; but as I had ſome reluctance to part with my friends, and fellows in diſtreſs, I prevailed upon Mr Bowling to favour us with his company, and invited Mr Melopoyn and Jackſon to ſpend the evening at my apartment, where I regaled them with a ſupper, good wine, and the news of my releaſe, on which they heartily congratulated me, notwithſtanding the loſs of my company, which, they were pleaſed to ſay, they would ſeverely feel. As for Jackſon, his misfortune made ſo little impreſſion on himſelf, and he was altogether ſo looſe, indifferent, and indiſcreet, that I could ſcarce pity his ſituation; but I had conceived a veneration and friendſhip for the poet, who was, in all reſpects, an object much more worthy of compaſſion and regard. When our gueſts withdrew, and my uncle retired, with an intention to viſit me next morning, I made up a bundle of ſome linen, and other neceſſaries, and bidding Strap carry them to Mr Melopoyn's lodging, went thither myſelf, and preſſed it upon his acceptance with five guineas, which, with much difficulty he received, aſſuring me at the ſame time, that he ſhould never have it in his power to make ſatisfaction. I then aſked if I could ſerve him any other way, to which he anſwered, "You have already done too much;" and unable to contain the emotions of his ſoul any longer, burſt into tears and wept aloud. Moved at the ſpectacle, I left him to his repoſe, and when my uncle returned in the morning, repreſented his character in ſuch a favourable light, that the honeſt ſeaman was affected with his diſtreſs, and determined to follow my example, in preſenting him with five pieces more: upon which, that I might ſave him ſome confuſion, I adviſed Mr Bowling to incloſe it in a letter, to be delivered by Strap, after we ſhould be gone.

This was accordingly done. I took a formal leave of all my acquaintance in the jail, and juſt as I was about to ſtep into an hackney-coach at the gate, Jackſon calling me, I returned, and he aſked me in a whiſper, if I could

lend him a ſhilling! His demand being ſo moderate, and in all likelihood the laſt he would make upon me, I ſlipt a guinea into his hands, which he no ſooner perceived, than he cried, "O Jeſus! a guinea!" then laying hold of a button of my coat, he broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter; and when his convulſion was ended, told me, I was an honeſt fellow, and let me go. The coachman was ordered to drive to Mr Bowling's lodging, where, when we arrived, he entered into a ſerious diſcourſe with me, on the ſubject of my ſituation, and propoſed that I ſhould ſail with him in quality of his ſurgeon; in which caſe he would put me on a method of getting a fortune in a few years, by my own induſtry; and aſſured me, that I might expect to inherit all that he ſhould die poſſeſſed of, provided I ſhould ſurvive him. Though I was penetrated with a ſenſe of his generoſity, I was ſtartled at a propoſal that offered violence to my love, and ſignified my ſentiments on that head, which he did not ſeem to relish; but obſerved that love was the fruit of idleneſs, that when once I ſhould be employed in buſineſs, and my mind engaged in making money, I would be no more troubled with theſe ſilly notions, which none but your fair-weather Jacks, who have nothing but their pleaſure to mind, ought to entertain. I was piqued at this inſinuation, which I looked upon as a reproach, and without giving myſelf time to deliberate, accepted his offer. He was overjoyed at my compliance, carried me immediately to his chief owner, with whom a bargain was ſtruck, ſo that I could not retract with honour, ſhould I be ever ſo much diſpoſed thereto. That I might not have time to cool, he bid me draw out a liſt of medicines for a complement of five hundred men, adapted to the diſtempers of hot climates, and ſufficient for a voyage of eighteen months; and carry it to a certain wholeſale apothecary, who would alſo provide me in two well qualified mates. While I was thus employed, Strap came in, and looked very blank, when he underſtood my reſolution: however, after a pauſe of ſome minutes, he inſiſted on going along with me: and, at my deſire, was made ſhip's ſteward by captain Bowling, who promiſed to be at the expence of fitting

him out, and to lend him two hundred pounds to purchaſe an adventure.

When I had delivered my liſt of medicines, choſen a couple of my own countrymen for mates, beſpoke a ſet of chirurgical inſtruments, my uncle told me, that by his laſt voyage he had cleared almoſt three thouſand pounds, one thouſand of which he would immediately make over, and put it into my hands; that he would procure me credit to the value of as much more, in ſuch goods as would turn to beſt account in the country to which we were bound; and that although he looked upon my intereſt as his own, he would keep the remaining part of his fortune in his own diſpoſal, with a view of preſerving his independance, and the power of puniſhing me, in caſe I ſhould not make a good uſe of what he had already beſtowed upon me.

Without troubling the reader with an account of the effect which this ſurpriſing generoſity had upon my mind, I ſhall only ſay, that his promiſes were inſtantly performed, and an invoice of merchandize, proper for the voyage, preſented to me, that I might purchaſe the goods, and ſhip them with all expedition. In the midſt of this hurry, the remembrance of my charming Narciſſa often interpoſed, and made me the moſt miſerable of all mortals. I was diſtracted with the thought of being torn from her, perhaps for ever; and though the hope of ſeeing her again might have ſupported me under the torments of ſeparation, I could not reflect upon the anguiſh ſhe muſt feel at parting with me, and the inceſſant ſorrows to which her tender boſom would be expoſed during my abſence, without being pierced with the deepeſt affliction! As my imagination was daily and nightly upon the rack, to invent ſome method of mitigating this cruel ſtroke, or, at leaſt, of acquitting my love and honour, in the opinion of that gentle creature, I at length ſtumbled upon an expedient, with which the reader will be made acquainted in due time; and, in conſequence of my determination, became leſs uneaſy and diſturbed.

My buſineſs being finiſhed, and the ſhip ready to ſail, I reſolved to make my laſt appearance among my acquaintance at the other end of the town, where I had not been

since

ſince my impriſonment; and as I had, by the advice of my uncle, taken off ſome very rich cloathes for ſale, I put on the gayeſt ſuit in my poſſeſſion, and went in a chair to the coffee-houſe I uſed to frequent, where I found my friend Banter ſo confounded at the magnificence of my dreſs, that when I made up to him he gazed at me with a look of aſtoniſhment, without being able for ſome minutes to open his lips; then pulling me aſide by the ſleeve, and fixing his eyes on mine, accoſted me in this manner: "Random, where the devil have you been! eh?—What "is the meaning of all this finery?—Oho! I underſtand "you—You are juſt arrived from the country! what! the "roads are good, eh?—well, Random, you are a bold fel- "low! and a lucky fellow—but take care, the pitcher goes "often to the well, but is broke at laſt." So ſaying, he pointed to his collar; by which geſture, and the broken hints he had ejaculated, I found he ſuſpected me of having robbed on the highway; and I laughed very heartily at his ſuppoſition. Without explaining myſelf any farther, I told him he was miſtaken in his conjecture; that I had been for ſome time paſt with the relation of whom he had frequently heard me ſpeak; and that being to ſet out next day upon my travels, I had come thither to take my leave of my friends, and to receive of him the money he had borrowed from me, which, now that I was going abroad, I ſhould have occaſion for. He was a little diſconcerted at this demand; but recollecting himſelf in a moment, ſwore in an affected paſſion, that I had uſed him extremely ill, and he would never forgive me, for having by this ſhort warning, put it out of his power to free himſelf of an obligation he could no longer bear. I could not help ſmiling at this pretended delicacy, which I commended highly, telling him, he needed not be uneaſy on that ſcore, for I would give him a direction to a merchant in the city, with whom I would leave a diſcharge for the ſum, to be delivered upon payment. He profeſſed much joy at this expedient, and with great eagerneſs aſked the perſon's name and place of abode, which he forthwith wrote in his pocket-book, aſſuring me that he would not be long in my debt. This affair, which I knew he would never after think of, being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, I

ſent cards to all my friends, deſiring the favour of their company at a tavern in the evening, when they honoured my invitation, and I had the pleaſure of treating them in a very elegant manner, at which they expreſſed as much admiration as applauſe. Having enjoyed ourſelves till midnight, I took my leave of them all, being well nigh ſtifled with careſſes; and next day I ſet out with Strap in a poſt-chaiſe for Graveſend, where we went on board, and the wind ſerving, weighed anchor in leſs than twelve hours. Without meeting with any accident, we got as far as the Downs, where we were obliged to come to an anchor, and wait for an eaſterly wind to carry us out of the Channel.

CHAP. LXV.

I ſet out for Suſſex— *conſult Mrs* Sagely—*atchieve an interview with* Narciſſa—*return to the ſhip—we get clear of the channel—I learn our deſtination—we are chaſed by a large ſhip—the company are diſmayed, and encouraged by the captain's ſpeech—our purſuer happens to be an* Engliſh *man of war—we arrive on the coaſt of* Guinea, *purchaſe four hundred negroes, ſail for* Paraguay, *get ſafe into the river of Plate, and ſell our cargo to great advantage.*

IT was now I put in execution the ſcheme I had projected at London; and aſking leave of the captain for Strap and me to ſtay on ſhore till the wind ſhould become favourable, my requeſt was granted, becauſe he had orders to remain in the Downs until he ſhould receive ſome diſpatches from London, which he did not expect in leſs than a week. Having imparted my reſolution to my truſty valet, who (though he endeavoured to diſſuade me from ſuch a raſh undertaking) would not quit me in the enterprize, I hired horſes, and ſet out immediately for that part of Suſſex where my charmer was confined, which was not above thirty miles diſtant from Deal, where we mounted. As I was perfectly well acquainted with the extent of the ſquire's eſtate and influence,

I halted

I halted within five miles of his houſe, where we remained till the twilight, at which time we ſet forward, and, by the favour of a dark night, gained a copſe about half a mile from the village where Mrs Sagely lived. Here we left our horſes tied to a tree, and went directly to the houſe of my old benefactreſs. Strap trembling all the way, and venting ejaculatory petitions to heaven for our ſafety. Her habitation being quite ſolitary, we arrived at the door without being obſerved, when I ordered my companion to enter by himſelf, and, in caſe there ſhould be company with her, deliver a letter which I had wrote for the purpoſe, and ſay that a friend of her's in London, underſtanding that he intended to travel this road, had committed it to his care. He rapped at the door, to which the good old matron coming, told him, that ſhe being a lone woman, he muſt excuſe her if ſhe did not open it until he had declared his name and buſineſs. He anſwered, that his name was unknown to her, and that his buſineſs was to deliver a letter, which (to free her from all manner of apprehenſion) he would convey to her through the ſpace between the door and the threſhold. This he inſtantly performed; and ſhe no ſooner read the contents, which ſpecified my being preſent, than ſhe cried, "If the perſon who wrote this letter be at hand, "let him ſpeak, that I may be aſſured by his voice whe-"ther or not I may ſafely admit him." I forthwith applied my mouth to the key-hole, and pronounced, "Dear mother, you need not be afraid, it is I, ſo much "indebted to your goodneſs, who now crave admit-"tance." She knew my voice, and opening the door immediately, received me with a truly maternal affection, manifeſting, by the tears ſhe let fall, her concern leſt I ſhould be diſcovered, for ſhe had been informed of every thing that had happened between Narciſſa and me, from the dear captive's own mouth. When I explained the motive of my journey, which was no other than a deſire of ſeeing the object of my love before I ſhould quit the kingdom, that I might in perſon convince her of the neceſſity I was under to leave her, reconcile her to that event, by deſcribing the advantages that in all probability would attend it, repeat my vows of eternal conſtancy,

ſtancy, and enjoy the melancholy pleaſure of a tender embrace at parting. I ſay, when I had thus ſignified my intention, Mrs Sagely told me, that Narciſſa, upon her return from Bath, had been ſo ſtrictly watched, that nobody, but one or two of the ſervants, devoted to her brother, were admitted to her preſence; that afterwards ſhe had been a little enlarged, and was permitted to ſee company; during which indulgence, ſhe had been ſeveral times at her cottage: but of late ſhe had been betrayed by one of the ſervants, who diſcovered to the ſquire, that he had once carried a letter from her to the poſt-houſe, directed to me; upon which information, ſhe was now more confined than ever, and that I could have no chance of ſeeing her, unleſs I would run the riſque of getting into the garden, where ſhe and her maid were allowed every day to take the air, and lie hid until I ſhould have an opportunity of ſpeaking to them—an adventure which would be attended with ſuch danger, that no man in his right wits would attempt it. This enterprize, hazardous as it was, I reſolved to perform, in ſpite of all the arguments of Mrs Sagely, who reaſoned, chid, and intreated by turns, and the tears and prayers of Strap, who conjured me on his knees to have more regard to myſelf as well as to him, than to tempt my own deſtruction in ſuch a precipitate manner. I was deaf to every thing, but the ſuggeſtions of my love; and ordered him to return immediately to the inn with the horſes from whence we ſet out, and wait for my coming in that place: he at firſt peremptorily refuſed to leave me, until I perſuaded him, that if our horſes ſhould remain where they were till day-light, they would certainly be diſcovered, and the whole country alarmed. On this conſideration, he took leave of me in a ſorrowful plight, kiſſed my hand, and weeping, cried, "God knows if ever I ſhall "ſee you again." My kind landlady finding me obſtinate, gave me her beſt advice how to behave in the execution of my project; and after having perſuaded me to take a little refreſhment accommodated me with a bed, and left me to my repoſe. Early in the morning, I got up, and armed with a couple of loaded piſtols and a hanger, went to the back of the ſquire's garden, climbed over the

the wall, and, according to Mrs Sagely's direction, concealed myself in a thicket, hard by an alcove which terminated a walk at a good distance from the house, which (I was told) my mistress chiefly frequented. Here I absconded from five o'clock in the morning to six in the evening, without seeing a human creature; at last I perceived two women approaching, whom, by my throbbing heart I soon recognized to be the adorable Narcissa and Miss Williams. I felt the strongest agitation of soul at the sight; and guessing that they would repose themselves in the alcove, I crept into it unperceived, and laid upon the stone-table a picture of myself in miniature, for which I had sat in London, purposing to leave it with Narcissa before I should go abroad. I exposed it in this manner as an introduction to my own appearance, which, without some previous intimation, I was afraid might have an unlucky effect upon the delicate nerves of my fair enslaver; and then withdrew into the thicket, where I could hear their discourse, and suit myself to the circumstances of the occasion. As they advanced, I observed an air of melancholy in the countenance of Narcissa blended with such unspeakable sweetness, that I could scarce refrain from flying into her arms and kissing away the pearly drop that stood collected in each bewitching eye. According to my expectation, she entered the alcove, and perceiving something on the table, took it up. No sooner did she cast her eye upon the features, than startled at the resemblance, she cried, "Gracious "God!" and the roses instantly vanished from her cheeks. Her confidante, alarmed at this exclamation, looked at the picture, and struck with the likeness, exclaimed, "O Jesus! the very features of Mr Random!" Narcissa having recollected herself a little, said, "What-"ever angel brought it hither as a comfort to me in my "affliction, I am thankful for the benefit, and will pre-"serve it as the dearest object of my care." So saying, she kissed it with inspiring ardour, shed a flood of tears, and then deposited the lifeless image in her lovely bosom. Transported at these testimonies of her unfeigned affection, I was about to throw myself at her feet, when Miss Williams, with a loud scream, cried, "Ah! what's that

that

that of her miſtreſs, obſerved that the picture could not tranſport itſelf hither, and that ſhe could not help thinking I was not far off. The gentle Narciſſa, ſtarting at this conjecture, anſwered, "Heaven forbid! for although "nothing in the univerſe could yield me ſatisfaction equal "to that of his preſence for one poor moment, in a pro-"per place, I would rather forfeit his company—almoſt "for ever, than ſee him here, where his life would be "expoſed to ſo much danger." I could no longer reſtrain the impulſe of my paſſion, but breaking from my concealment, ſtood before her, when ſhe uttered a fearful ſhriek, and fainted away in the arms of her companion. I flew towards the treaſure of my ſoul, claſped her in my embrace, and with the warmth of my kiſſes, brought her again to life. O! that I were endowed with the expreſſion of a Raphael, the graces of Guido, the magic touches of a Titian, that I might repreſent the fond concern, the chaſtened rapture, and ingenuous bluſh that mingled on her beauteous face, when ſhe opened her eyes upon me, and pronounced, "O Heavens! is it you."

I am afraid I have already encroached upon the reader's patience, with the particulars of this amour, on which (I own) I cannot help being impertinently circumſtantial. I ſhall therefore omit the leſs material paſſages of this interview, during which I convinced her reaſon, though I could not appeaſe the ſad preſages of her love, with regard to the long voyage, and dangers I muſt undergo. When we had ſpent an hour (which was all ſhe could ſpare from the barbarity of her brother's vigilance) in lamenting over our hard fate, and in repeating our reciprocal vows, Miſs Williams reminded us of the neceſſity there was for our immediate parting; and ſure, lovers never parted with ſuch ſorrow and reluctance as we. But becauſe my words are incapable of doing juſtice to that affecting circumſtance, I am obliged to draw a veil over it, and obſerve, that I returned in the dark to the houſe of Mrs Segely, who was overjoyed to hear of my ſucceſs, and oppoſed the tumults of my grief with ſuch ſtrength of reaſon, that my mind regained in ſome meaſure its tranquillity; and that very night, after having forced upon this good gentlewoman a purſe of twenty guineas, as a to-

ken of my gratitude and eſteem, I took leave of her, ſet out on foot for the inn, where my arrival freed honeſt Strap from the horrors of unutterable dread.

We took horſe immediately, and alighted early next morning at Deal, where I found my uncle in great concern on account of my abſence, becauſe he had received his diſpatches, and muſt have weighed with the firſt fair wind, whether I had been on board or not. Next day a briſk eaſterly gale ſpringing up, we ſet ſail, and in eight and forty hours got clear of the channel.

When we were about 200 leagues from the land's end, the captain taking me apart into his cabin, told me, that now he was permitted by his inſtructions, he would diſcloſe the intent and deſtination of our voyage: "The "ſhip, (ſaid he) which has been fitted out at a great ex- "pence, is bound for the coaſt of Guinea, where we "ſhall exchange part of our cargo for ſlaves and gold "duſt; from thence we will tranſport our negroes to "Buenos-Ayres in New Spain, where (by virtue of paſ- "ports obtained from our own court, and that of Mad- "rid) we will diſpoſe of them and the goods that remain "on board for ſilver, by means of our ſupercargo, who "is perfectly well acquainted with the coaſt, the lingo, "and inhabitants." Being thus let into the ſecret of our expedition, I borrowed of the ſupercargo a Spaniſh grammar, dictionary, and ſome other books of the ſame language, which I ſtudied with ſuch application, that before we arrived in New-Spain, I could maintain a converſation with him in that tongue. Being arrived in the warm latitudes, I ordered (with the captain's conſent) the whole ſhip's company to be blooded and purged, myſelf undergoing the ſame evacuation, in order to prevent thoſe dangerous fevers, to which northern conſtitutions are ſubject in hot climates; and I have reaſon to believe that this precaution was not unſerviceable, for we loſt but one ſailor during our whole paſſage to the coaſt.

One day, when we had been about five weeks at ſea we deſcried to windward a large ſhip bearing down upon us with all the ſail ſhe could carry. Upon which my uncle ordered the ſtudding-ſails to be hoiſted, and the ſhip to be cleared for engaging; but finding, that (to uſe the ſea-

men's phraſe) we were very much wronged by the ſhip that had us in chace, and which by this time had hoiſted French colours, he commanded the ſtudding-ſails to be taken in, the courſes to be clewed up, the main-top-ſail to be backed, the tompions to be taken out of the guns, and every man to repair to his quarters. While every body was buſied in the performance of theſe orders, Strap came upon the quarter deck, trembling and looking aghaſt, and with a voice half ſuppreſſed by fear, aſked if I thought we were a match for the veſſel in purſuit of us. Obſerving his conſternation, I ſaid, "What! are you afraid, "Strap?" "Afraid!" he replied, "n-n-no, what ſhould "I be afraid of? I thank God I have a clear conſcience; "—but I believe it will be a bloody battle, and I with "you may not have occaſion for another hand to aſſiſt "you in the cock-pit." I immediately perceived his drift, and making the captain acquainted with his ſituation, deſired he might be ſtationed below with me and my mates. My uncle, incenſed at his puſillanimity, bid me ſend him down inſtantly, that his fear might not infect the ſhip's company; whereupon I told the poor ſteward, that I had begged him for an aſſiſtant, and deſired him to go down and help my mates to get ready the inſtruments and dreſſings. Notwithſtanding the ſatisfaction he muſt have felt at theſe tidings, he affected a ſhyneſs of quitting the upper-deck; and ſaid, he hoped I did not imagine he was afraid to do his duty above board, for he believed himſelf as well prepared for death as any man in the ſhip, no diſparagement to me or to the captain. I was diſguſted at this affectation, and in order to puniſh his hypocriſy, aſſured him he might take his choice either of going down to the cock-pit with me, or of ſtaying upon deck during the engagement. Alarmed at this indifference, he replied, "Well, to oblige you, I'll go "down, but remember it is more for your ſake than my "own." So ſaying he diſappeared in a twinkling, without waiting for an anſwer. By this time we could obſerve two tier of guns in the ſhip that purſued us, and which was now but two ſhort miles aſtern. This diſcovery had an evident effect upon the ſailors, who did not ſcruple to ſay, that we ſhould be torn in pieces, and blown out of the

the water, and that if in caſe any of them ſhould loſe their precious limbs, they muſt go a begging for life, for there was no proviſion made by the merchants for thoſe poor ſouls who are maimed in their ſervice. The captain underſtanding this backwardneſs, ordered the crew abaft, and ſpoke to them thus: "My lads, I am told you "hang an a—e. I have gone to ſea thirty years, man "and boy, and never ſaw Engliſh ſailors afraid before. "Mayhap you think I want to expoſe you for the lucre "of gain;—whoſoever thinks ſo, thinks a damned lie, "for my whole cargo is inſured; ſo that in caſe I ſhould "be taken my loſs will not be great. The enemy is "ſtronger than we to be ſure—What then? have we "not a chance of carrying away one of her maſts, and "ſo get clear of her?—If we find her too hard for us, "'tis but ſtriking at laſt. If any man is hurt in the engagement, I promiſe on the word of an honeſt ſeaman, "to make him a recompence according to his loſs. So "now, you that are lazy, lubberly, cowardly dogs, get "away and ſculk in the hold and bread-room; and you "that are jolly boys ſtand by me, and let us give one "broad-ſide for the honour of old England." This eloquent harangue was ſo well adapted to the diſpoſition of his hearers, that one and all of them, pulling off their hats, waved them over their heads, and ſaluted him with three cheers: upon which he ſent his boy for two large caſe-bottles of brandy, and having treated every man with a dram, they repaired to their quarters, and waited impatiently for the word of command. I muſt do my uncle the juſtice to ſay, that in the whole of his diſpoſition, he behaved with the utmoſt intrepidity, conduct, and deliberation. The enemy being very near, he ordered me to my ſtation, and was juſt going to give the word for hoiſting the colours, and firing, when the ſuppoſed French-man hauling down his white pennant, Jack and enſign, hoiſted two flags, of his own, and fired a gun a-head of us: this was a joyful event to captain Bowling; who immediately ſhewed his colours, and fired a gun to leeward: upon which the other ſhip ran along ſide of him, hailed him, and giving him to know, that ſhe was an Engliſh man of war of forty guns, ordered him to hoiſt out his boat, and come

on board. This he performed with the more alacrity, becauſe, upon inquiry, he found that ſhe was commanded by an old meſs-mate of his, who was overjoyed to ſee him, detained him to dinner, and ſent his barge for the ſupercargo and me, who were very much careſſed on his account. As this commander was deſtined to cruize upon the French, in the latitude of Martinico, his ſtem and quarters were adorned with white flower des lis, and the whole ſhell of the ſhip ſo much diſguiſed, for a decoy to the enemy, that it was no wonder my uncle did not know her, although he had ſailed on board of her many years. We kept company with her four days, during which time the captains were never aſunder, and then parted, our courſe lying different from her's.

In leſs than a fortnight after, we made the land of Guinea, near the mouth of the River Gambia, and trading along the coaſt as far to the ſouthward of the Line as Angola and Bengola, in leſs than ſix months diſpoſed of the greateſt part of our cargo, and purchaſed four hundred negroes, my adventure having been laid out chiefly in gold duſt.

Our complement being made up, we took our departure from Cape Negro, and arrived in the Rio de la Plata in ſix weeks, having met with nothing remarkable in our voyage, except an epidemic fever, not unlike the jail diſtemper, which broke out among our ſlaves, and carried off a good many of the ſhip's company; among whom I loſt one of my mates, and poor Strap had well nigh given up the ghoſt. Having produced our paſſport to the Spaniſh governor, we were received with great courteſy, ſold our ſlaves in a very few days, and could have put off five times the number at our own price; being obliged to ſmuggle the reſt of our merchandize, conſiſting of European bale goods, which, however, we made ſhift to diſpoſe of at a great advantage.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXVI.

I am invited to the villa of a Spaniſh *Don, where we meet with an* Engliſh *gentleman, and make a very intereſting diſcovery—we leave* Buenos-Ayres, *and arrive at* Jamaica.

OUR ſhip being freed from the diſagreeable lading of Negroes, to whom, indeed, I had been a miſerable ſlave, ſince our leaving the coaſt of Guinea, I began to enjoy myſelf, and breathe with pleaſure the air of Paraguay; this part of which is reckoned the Montpelier of South America, and has obtained, on account of its climate, the name of Buenos-Ayres. It was in this delicious place that I gave myſelf entirely up to the thoughts of my dear Narciſſa, whoſe image ſtill kept full poſſeſſion of my breaſt, and whoſe charms enhanced by abſence, appeared to my imagination, if poſſible, more engaging than ever! I calculated the profits of my voyage, which even exceeded my expectation; reſolved to purchaſe a handſome ſinecure upon my arrival in England, and if I ſhould find the Squire as averſe to me as ever, marry his ſiſter by ſtealth; and in caſe our family ſhould increaſe, rely upon the generoſity of my uncle, who was by this time worth a conſiderable ſum.

While I amuſed myſelf with theſe agreeable projects, and the tranſporting hopes of enjoying Narciſſa, we were very much careſſed by the Spaniſh gentleman, who frequently formed parties of pleaſure for our entertainment, in which we made excurſions a good way into the country. Among thoſe who ſignalized themſelves by their civility to us, there was one Don Antonio de Ribera, a very polite young gentleman, with whom I had contracted an intimate friendſhip, who invited us one day to his country-houſe, and as a further inducement to our compliance, promiſed to procure for us the company of an Engliſh ſignor, who had been ſettled in thoſe parts many years, and acquired the love and eſteem of the whole province, by his affability, good ſenſe, and honourable behaviour.

We

We accepted his invitation, and set out for his Villa; where we had not been longer than an hour, when the perſon arrived, in whoſe favour I had been ſo much prepoſſeſſed. He was a tall man, remarkably well ſhaped, of a fine mien and appearance, commanding reſpect, and ſeemed to be turned of forty; the features of his face were ſaddened with a reſerve and gravity, which in other countries would have been thought the effect of melancholy; but here, appeared to have been contracted by his commerce with the Spaniards, who are remarkable for that ſeverity of countenance. Underſtanding from Don Antonio that we were his countrymen, he ſaluted us all round very complaiſantly, and fixing his eyes attentively on me, uttered a deep ſigh. I had been ſtruck with a profound veneration for him at his firſt coming into the room; and no ſooner obſerved this expreſſion of his ſorrow, directed, as it were, in a particular manner to me, than my heart took part of his grief, I ſympathized involuntarily, and ſighed in my turn. Having aſked leave of our entertainer he accoſted us in Engliſh, profeſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing ſo many of his countrymen in ſuch a remote place, and aſked the captain who went by the name of Signor Thomo, from what part of Britain he ſailed, and whither he was bound. My uncle told him that we had ſailed from the river Thames, and was bound for the ſame place, by the way of Jamaica, where he intended to take in a lading of ſugar.

Having ſatisfied himſelf in theſe and other particulars about the ſtate of the war, he gave us to underſtand, that he had a longing deſire to reviſit his native country, in conſequence of which he had already tranſmitted to Europe the greateſt part of his fortune in neutral bottoms, and would willingly embark the reſt of it with himſelf in our ſhip, provided the captain had no objection to ſuch a paſſenger. My uncle very prudently replied, that for his part, he ſhould be very glad of his company, if he could procure the conſent of the governor, without which he durſt not admit him on board, whatever inclination he had to oblige him. The gentleman approved of his diſcretion, and telling him, that there would be no difficulty in obtaining the connivance of the governor, who

was

was his good friend, ſhifted the converſation to another ſubject.

I was overjoyed to hear his intention, and already intereſted myſelf ſo much in his favour, that had he been diſappointed, I ſhould have been very unhappy: in the courſe of our entertainment, he eyed me with an uncommon attachment; I felt a ſurpriſing attraction towards him; when he ſpoke, I liſtened with attention and reverence; the dignity of his deportment filled me with affection and awe; and, in ſhort, the emotions of my ſoul, in preſence of this ſtranger, were ſtrong and unaccountable.

Having ſpent the beſt part of the day with us, he took his leave, telling Captain Thomo, that he ſhould hear from him in a ſhort time: he was no ſooner gone, than I aſked a thouſand queſtions about him of Don Antonio, who could give me no other ſatisfaction, than that his name was Don Rodriguez, that he lived fifteen or ſixteen years in theſe parts, was reputed rich, and ſuppoſed to have been unfortunate in his younger years, becauſe he was obſerved to nouriſh a penſive melancholy, even from the time of his firſt ſettlement among them; but that nobody had ventured to inquire into the cauſe of his ſorrow, in conſideration of his peace, which might ſuffer in the recapitulation of his misfortunes.

I was ſeized with an irreſiſtible deſire of knowing the particulars of his fate, and enjoyed not an hour of repoſe during the whole night, by reaſon of the eager conceptions that inſpired me, with regard to his ſtory, which I reſolved (if poſſible) to learn. Next morning, while we were at breakfaſt, three mules richly capariſoned, arrived, with a meſſage from Don Rodriguez, deſiring our company and that of Don Antonio, at his houſe, which was ſituated about ten miles farther up in the country. I was pleaſed with this invitation, in conſequence of which we mounted the mules which he had provided for us, and alighted at his houſe before noon. Here we were ſplendidly entertained by the generous ſtranger, who ſtill ſeemed to ſhew a particular regard for me, and after dinner made me a preſent of a ring, with a beautiful [illegible], the produce of that country, ſay-

ing,

ing, at the ſame time, that he was once bleſſed with a ſon, who, had he lived, would have been nearly of my age. This obſervation, delivered with a profound ſigh, made my heart throb with violence; a crowd of confuſed ideas ruſhed upon my imagination; which, while I endeavoured to unravel, my uncle perceiving my abſence of thought, and tapping me on the ſhoulder ſaid, "Oons! "are you aſleep, Rory!" Before I had time to reply, Don Rodriguez, with an uncommon eagerneſs of voice and look, pronounced, "Pray, captain, what is the "young gentleman's name?" "His name," ſaid my uncle, "is Roderick Random." "Gracious powers! (cried "the ſtranger ſtarting up) and his mother's?" "His "mother (anſwered the captain amazed) was called Char-"lotte Bowling." "O bounteous Heaven! (exclaimed "Don Rodriguez, ſpringing acroſs the table, and claſp-"ing me in his arms) my ſon! my ſon! have I found "thee again? do I hold thee in my embrace, after ha-"ving loſt and deſpaired of ſeeing thee ſo long?" So ſaying, he fell upon my neck, and wept aloud for joy; while the power of nature operating ſtrongly in my breaſt, I was loſt in rapture, and while he preſſed me to his heart, let fall a ſhower of tears in his boſom. His utterance was choaked up a good while, by the agitation of his ſoul; at length he broke out into, "Myſterious Provi-"dence!—O my dear Charlotte! there yet remains a "pledge of our love! and ſuch a pledge—ſo found!— "O, infinite goodneſs! let me adore thy all-wiſe de-"crees!" Having thus expreſſed himſelf, he kneeled upon the floor, lifted up his eyes and hands to Heaven, and remained ſome minutes in a ſilent extacy of devotion: I put myſelf in the ſame poſture, adored the all-good Diſpoſer in a prayer of mental thankſgiving; and when his ejaculation was ended, did homage to my father, and craved his paternal bleſſing. He hugged me again with unutterable fondneſs, and having implored the protection of Heaven upon my head, raiſed me from the ground, and preſented me as his ſon to the company, who wept in concert over this affecting ſcene. Among the reſt my uncle did not fail of diſcovering the goodneſs and joy of his heart, *albeit unuſed to the melting mood*; he

blubbered with great tenderneſs, and wringing my father's hand, cried, "Brother Random, I am rejoiced to "ſee you—God be praiſed for this happy meeting." Don Rodriguez, underſtanding that he was his brother-in-law, embraced him affectionately, ſaying, "Are you "my Charlotte's brother?—alas! unhappy Charlotte!—"but why ſhould I repine? we ſhall meet again, never "more to part!—Brother, you are truly welcome—dear "ſon, I am tranſported with unſpeakable joy!—This "day is a jubilee—my friends and ſervants ſhall ſhare my "ſatisfaction."

While he diſpatched meſſengers to the gentlemen in the neighbourhood, to announce this event, and gave orders for a grand entertainment, I was ſo much affected with the tumults of paſſion which aſſailed me on this great, ſudden, and unexpected occaſion, that I fell ſick, fevered, and in leſs than three hours became quite delirious; ſo that the preparations were countermanded, and the joy of the family converted into grief and deſpair. Phyſicians were inſtantly called, I was plentifully blooded in the foot, my lower extremities were bathed in a decoction of ſudoriferous herbs; in ten hours after I was taken ill, I enjoyed a critical ſweat, and next day felt no remains of the diſtemper, but an agreeable laſſitude which did not hinder me from getting up. During the progreſs of this fever, which, from the term of its duration, is called *Febris Septenaria*, my father never once quitted my bed ſide, but adminiſtered the preſcriptions of the phyſicians, with the moſt pious care; while captain Bowling manifeſted his concern by the like attendance. I no ſooner found myſelf delivered from the diſeaſe, than I bethought myſelf of my honeſt friend Strap; and reſolving to make him happy forthwith in the knowledge of my good fortune, told my father, in general, that I had been indebted obliged to this faithful adherent; and begged he would indulge me ſo far as to ſend for him, without letting him know my happineſs, until he could receive an account of it from my own mouth.

My requeſt was accordingly complied with, and a meſſenger, with a purſe of gold, detached to my friend, carrying orders from the captain that he ſhould not [illegible]

the bearer. My health being in the mean time re-eſtabliſhed, and my mind compoſed, I began to reliſh this important turn of my fortune, in reflecting upon the advantages with which it muſt be attended; and as the idea of my lovely Narciſſa always joined itſelf to every ſcene of happineſs I could imagine, I entertained myſelf now, with the proſpect of poſſeſſing her in that diſtinguiſhed ſphere to which ſhe was entitled by her birth and qualifications. Having often mentioned her name while I was deprived of my ſenſes, my father gueſſed that there was an intimate connection between us, and diſcovering the picture which hung in my boſom by a ribband, did not doubt that it was the reſemblance of my amiable miſtreſs: In this belief he was confirmed by my uncle, who told him it was the picture of a young woman to whom I was under promiſe of marriage. Alarmed at this piece of information, Don Rodriguez took the firſt opportunity of queſtioning me about the circumſtances of this affair, which, when I had candidly recounted, he approved of my paſſion, and promiſed to contribute all in his power towards its ſucceſs: though I never doubted his generoſity, I was tranſported on this occaſion, and throwing myſelf at his feet, told him, he had now completed my happineſs; for without the poſſeſſion of Narciſſa, I ſhould be miſerable among all the pleaſures of life. He raiſed me with a ſmile of paternal fondneſs; ſaid, he knew what it was to be in love; and obſerved, that if he had been as tenderly beloved by his father as I was by mine, he would not now perhaps have cauſe—Here he was interrupted by a ſigh, the tears ſtood collected in his eyes, he ſuppreſſed the dictates of his grief, and the time being opportune, deſired me to relate the paſſages of my life, which my uncle had told him were manifold and ſurpriſing. I recounted the moſt material circumſtances of my fortune, to which he liſtened with wonder and attention, manifeſting from time to time, thoſe different emotions which my different ſituations may be ſuppoſed to have raiſed in a parent's breaſt; and when my detail was ended, bleſſed God for the adverſity I had undergone, which, he ſaid, enlarged the underſtanding, improved the heart, ſteeled the conſtitution, and qualified a young

man,

man for all the duties and enjoyments of life, much better than any education affluence could beſtow.

When I had thus ſatisfied his curioſity, I diſcovered an inclination to hear the particulars of his ſtory, which he gratified by beginning with his marriage, and proceeded to the day of his diſappearing, as I have related in the firſt part of my memoirs. "Careleſs of life (continued "he) and unable to live in a place where every object "recalled the memory of my dear Charlotte, whom I "had loſt through the barbarity of an unnatural parent, "I took my leave of you, my child, then an infant, with "an heart full of unutterable woe, but little ſuſpecting "that my father's unkindneſs would have deſcended to "my innocent orphan; and ſetting out alone, at mid-"night, for the neareſt ſea-port, early next morning "got on board a ſhip, bound, as I heard, for France, "and bargaining with the maſter for my paſſage, bid a "long adieu to my native country, and put to ſea with "the firſt fair wind. The place of our deſtination was "Granville, but we had the misfortnne to run upon a "ridge of rocks near the iſland of Alderney called the "Caſkets, where the ſea running high, the ſhip went to "pieces, the boat ſunk along-ſide, and every ſoul on "board periſhed except myſelf, who, by the aſſiſtance "of a grating got aſhore on the coaſt of Normandy: "I went directly to Caen, where I was ſo lucky as to "meet with a Count whom I had formerly known in my "travels; with this gentleman I ſet out for Paris, where "I was recommended by him and other friends, as tu-"tor to a young nobleman, whom I accompanied to the "court of Spain. There we remained a whole year, "at the end of which, my pupil being recalled by his "father, I quitted my office, and ſtaid behind, by the "advice of a certain Spaniſh grandee, who took me in-"to his protection, and introduced me to another noble-"man, who was afterwards created Viceroy of Peru. He "inſiſted on my attending him to his government in the "Indies, where, however, by reaſon of my religion, it "was not in his power to make my fortune any other "way than by encouraging me to trade, which I had not "long proſecuted when my patron died, and I found

" myſelf in the midſt of ſtrangers, without one friend to " ſupport or protect me. Urged by this conſideration, I ſold " my effects and removed to this country, the governor " of which having been appointed by the Viceroy, was " my intimate acquaintance. Here has Heaven proſper- " ed my endeavours, during a reſidence of ſixteen years, " in which my tranquillity was never invaded but by the " remembrance of your mother, whoſe death I have in " ſecret mourned without ceaſing; and the reflection " of you, whoſe fate I could never learn, notwithſtand- " ing all my inquiries, by means of my friends in France, " who, after the moſt ſtrict examination, could give me " no other account, than that you went abroad ſix years " ago, and was never after heard of. I could not reſt ſa- " tisfied with this imperfect information, and though the " hope of finding you was but languid, reſolved to go " in queſt of you in perſon; for which purpoſe, I have " remitted to Holland the value of twenty thouſand " pounds, and am in poſſeſſion of fifteen thouſand more, " with which I intended to embark myſelf on board of " Captain Bowling, before I diſcovered this amazing " ſtroke of Providence, which you may be ſure has not " altered my intention."

My father having entertained us with this agreeable ſketch of his life, withdrew in order to relieve Don Antonio, who, in his abſence, had done the honours of his houſe: and I was juſt dreſſed for my appearance among the guests, when Strap arrived from the ſhip.

He no ſooner entered the grand apartment in which I was, and ſaw the magnificence of my apparel, than his ſpeech was loſt in amazement, and he gaped in ſilence at the objects that ſurrounded him. I took him by the hand, obſerved that I had ſent for him to be a witneſs and ſharer of my happineſs, and told him I had found a father. At theſe words he ſtarted, and after having continued ſome minutes with his mouth and eyes wide open, cried, " Aha!—odſ, I know what!—go thy ways, poor " Narciſſa, and go thy ways ſomebody elſe—well—Lord, " what a thing is love?—God help us, are all our mad " pranks and proteſtations come to this? what! and you " have fixed your habitation in this diſtant land! Good

" proſper you—I find we muſt part at laſt—for I would " not leave my poor carcaſe ſo far from my native home " for all the wealth of the univerſe!" With theſe ejaculations he began to ſob and make wry faces; upon which I aſſured him of his miſtake, both in regard of Narciſſa and my ſtaying at Paraguay, and informed him, as briefly as I could, of the great event which had happened. Never was rapture more ludicrouſly expreſſed, than in the behaviour of this worthy creature, who cried, laughed, whiſtled, ſung, and danced, all in a breath; his tranſport was ſcarce over, when my father entered, who no ſooner underſtood that this was Strap, than he took him by the hand, ſaying, " Is this the honeſt man who " befriended you ſo much in your diſtreſs? you are wel- " come to my houſe, and I ſhall ſoon put it in the power " of my ſon to reward you for your good offices in his be- " half! in the mean time, go with us and partake of the " repaſt that is provided." Strap, wild as he was with joy, would by no means accept of the proffered honour, crying, " God forbid! I know my diſtance—your wor- " ſhip ſhall excuſe me." And Don Rodriguez finding his modeſty invincible, recommended him to his Major Domo to be treated with the utmoſt reſpect, while he carried me into a large ſaloon, where I was preſented to a numerous company, who loaded me with compliments and careſſes, and congratulated my father in terms not proper for me to repeat.

Without ſpecifying the particulars of our entertainment, let it ſuffice to ſay that it was at the ſame time elegant and ſumptuous, and the rejoicings laſted two days. After which, Don Rodriguez ſettled his affairs, converted his effects into ſilver and gold, viſited and took leave of all his friends, who were grieved at his departure, and honoured me with conſiderable preſents; and coming on board of my uncle's ſhip, with the firſt favourable wind, we ſailed from the Rio de Plata, and in two months came ſafe to an anchor in the harbour of Kingſton in the iſland of Jamaica.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXVII.

I viſit my old friend Thomſon, *we ſet ſail for* Europe, *meet with an odd adventure—arrive in* England—*I ride acroſs the country from* Portſmouth *to* Suſſex—*converſe with Mrs* Sagely, *who informs me of* Narciſſa's *being in* London—*in conſequence of this intelligence, I proceed to* Canterbury—*meet with my old friend* Morgan—*arrive at* London—*viſit* Narciſſa—*introduce my father to her—he is charmed with her good ſenſe and beauty—we come to a determination of demanding her brother's conſent to our marriage.*

I ENQUIRED, as ſoon as I got aſhore, about my generous companion Mr Thomſon; and hearing that he lived in a flouriſhing condition, upon the eſtate left to him by his wife's father, who had been dead ſome years, I took horſe immediately with the conſent of Don Rodriguez, who had heard me mention him with great regard, and in a few hours reached the place of his habitation.

I ſhould much wrong the delicacy of Mr Thomſon's ſentiments, to ſay barely he was glad to ſee me: he felt all that the moſt ſenſible and diſintereſted friendſhip could feel on this occaſion, introduced me to his wife, a very amiable young lady, who had already bleſſed him with two fine children; and being as yet ignorant of my circumſtances, frankly offered me the aſſiſtance of his purſe and intereſt. I thanked him for his generous intention, and made him acquainted with my ſituation, on which he congratulated me with great joy, and after I had ſtaid with him a whole day and night, accompanied me back to Kingſton, to wait upon my father, whom he invited to his houſe: Don Rodriguez complied with his requeſt, and having been handſomely entertained during the ſpace of a week, returned extremely well ſatisfied with the behaviour of my friend and his lady, to whom, at parting, he preſented a valuable diamond ring, as a token of his eſteem. During the courſe of my converſation with

Mr

Mr Thomſon, he let me know, that his and my old commander Captain Oakhum was dead ſome months, and that immediately after his death, a diſcovery had been made of ſome valuable effects that he had feloniouſly ſecreted out of a prize, by the aſſiſtance of Dr Mackſhane, who was now actually in priſon on that account, and being deſtitute of friends, ſubſiſted ſolely on the charity of my friend, whoſe bounty he had implored in the moſt abject manner, after having been the barbarous occaſion of driving him to that terrible extremity on board the Thunder, which I have formerly related. Whatſoever this wretch might have been guilty of, I applauded Mr Thomſon's generoſity towards him in his diſtreſs, which wrought ſo much upon me alſo, that I ſent him ten piſtoles in ſuch a private manner, that he could never know his benefactor.

While my father and I were careſſed among the gentlemen on ſhore, Captain Bowling had wrote to his owners, by the packet, which ſailed a few days after our arrival, ſignifying his proſperous voyage hitherto, and deſiring them to enſure his ſhip and cargo homeward bound; after which he applied himſelf ſo heartily to the loading his ſhip, that, with the aſſiſtance of Mr Thomſon, ſhe was full in leſs than ſix weeks. This kind gentleman likewiſe procured for Don Rodriguez, bills upon London for the greateſt part of his gold and ſilver, by which means it was ſecured againſt the riſk of the ſeas and the enemy; and, before we ſailed, ſupplied us with ſuch large quantities of all kinds of ſtock, that not only we, but the whole ſhip's company, fared ſumptuouſly during the voyage.

Every thing being ready, we took our leave of our kind entertainers, and going on board at Port Royal, ſet ſail for England on the firſt of June. We beat up to windward, with fine eaſy weather; and one night believing ourſelves near Cape Tiberoon, lay to, with an intention to wood and water next morning in the bay: while we remained in this ſituation, a ſailor having drank more new rum than he could carry, ſtaggered overboard, and notwithſtanding all the means that could be uſed to preſerve him, went to the bottom and diſappeared. About two hours after this

this melancholy accident happened, as I enjoyed the cool air on the quarter deck, I heard a voice riſing, as it were, out of the ſea, and calling: "Ho, the ſhip, a hoy!" Upon which, one of the men upon the forecaſtle cried, "I'll "be d—n'd, if that an't Jack Marlinſpike, who went o-"ver-board!" Not a little ſurpriſed at this event, I jumped into the boat that lay along-ſide, with the ſecond mate and four men, and rowing towards the place from whence the voice (which repeated the hail) ſeemed to proceed, we perceived ſomething floating upon the water; when we had rowed a little farther, we diſcerned it to be a man riding upon a hen-coop, who ſeeing us approach, pronounced with a hoarſe voice, "D—n your "bloods! why did you not anſwer when I hailed?" Our mate, who was a veritable ſeaman, hearing this ſalute, ſaid, "By G—d, my lads, this is none of our man. "—This is the devil—pull away for the ſhip." The fellows obeyed his command without queſtion, and were already ſome fathoms on our return, when I inſiſted on their taking up the poor creature, and prevailed on them to go back to the wreck, which, when we came near the ſecond time, and ſignified our intention, we received an anſwer of, "Avaſt, avaſt—what ſhip, brother?" Being ſatisfied in this particular, he cried, "D—n the ſhip, I "was in hopes it had been my own—where are you "bound?" We gratified his curioſity in this too: upon which he ſuffered himſelf to be taken on board, and after being comforted with a dram, told us he belonged to the Veſuvio man of war, upon a cruize off the iſland of Hiſpaniola; that he had fallen over-board about four and twenty hours ago, and the ſhip being under ſail, they did not chuſe to bring to, but toſſed a hen-coop over board for his convenience, upon which he was in good hopes of reaching the Cape next morning; howſomever, he was as well content to be aboard us, becauſe he did not doubt but that we ſhould meet his ſhip; and if he had gone aſhore on the bay, he might have been taken priſoner by the French. My uncle and father were very much diverted with the account of this fellow's unconcerned behaviour; and in two days meeting with the Veſuvio,

as he expected, ſent him on board of her according to his deſire.

Having beat up ſucceſsfully the windward paſſage, we ſtretched to the northward, and falling in with a weſterly wind, in eight weeks arrived in ſoundings, and in two days after made the Lizard. It is impoſſible to expreſs the joy I felt at ſight of Engliſh ground. Don Rodriguez was not unmoved, and Strap ſhed tears of gladneſs. The ſailors profited by our ſatisfaction; the ſhoe that was nailed to the maſt, being quite filled with our liberality. My uncle reſolved to run into the Downs at once; but the wind ſhifting when we were abreaſt of the iſle of Wight, he was obliged to turn into St Helens, and come to an anchor at Spithead, to the great mortification of the crew, thirty of whom were immediately preſſed on board of a man of war.

My father and I went aſhore immediately at Portſmouth, leaving Strap with the captain to go round with the ſhip and take care of our effects; and I diſcovered ſo much impatience to ſee my charming Narciſſa, that my father permitted me to ride acroſs the country to her brother's houſe; while he ſhould hire a poſt-chaiſe for London, where he ſhould wait for me at a place to which I directed him.

Fired with all the eagerneſs of paſſion, I took poſt that very night, and in the morning reached an inn, about three miles from the ſquire's habitation. Here I remained till next evening, allaying the torture of my impatience, with the rapturous hope of ſeeing that divine creature, after an abſence of eighteen months, which, ſo far from impairing, had raiſed my love to the moſt exalted pitch! Neither were my reflections free from apprehenſion, that ſometimes intervened, in ſpite of all my hope, and repreſented her as having yielded to the importunity of her brother, and bleſſed the arms of an happy rival. My thoughts were even maddened with the fear of her death; and when I arrived in the dark at the houſe of Mrs Sagely, I had not for ſome time the courage to deſire admittance, leſt my ſoul ſhould be ſhocked with diſmal tidings. At length, however, I knocked, and no ſooner certified the good gentlewoman of my voice,

than ſhe opened the door and received me with a moſt affectionate embrace, that brought tears into her aged eyes: "For Heaven's ſake! dear mother," cried I, tell me, "how is Narciſſa? is ſhe the ſame that I left her?" She bleſſed my ears with ſaying, "She is as beautiful, in as "good health, and as much yours as ever." Tranſported at this aſſurance, I begged to know if I could ſee her that very night; when this ſage matron gave me to underſtand, that my miſtreſs was in London, and that things were ſtrangely altered in the ſquire's houſe ſince my departure; that he had been married a whole year to Melinda, who at firſt found means to wean his attention ſo much from Narciſſa, that he became quite careleſs of that lovely ſiſter, comforting himſelf with the clauſe of his father's will, by which ſhe would forfeit her fortune if ſhe ſhould marry without his conſent;—that my miſtreſs being but indifferently treated by her ſiſter-in-law, had made uſe of her freedom ſome months ago, and gone to town, where ſhe was lodged with Miſs Williams, in expectation of my arrival; and had been peſtered with the addreſſes of Lord Quiverwit, who finding her heart engaged, had fallen upon a great many ſhifts, to perſuade her that I was dead; but finding all his artifices unſucceſsful, and deſpairing of gaining her affection, he had conſoled himſelf for her indifference, by marrying another lady ſome weeks ago, who had already left him on account of ſome family uneaſineſs. Beſides this intereſting information, ſhe told me that there was not a great deal of harmony between Melinda and the Squire, who was ſo much diſguſted at the number of gallants who continued to hover about her even after marriage, that he hurried her down into the country much againſt her inclination, where their mutual animoſities had riſen to ſuch a height, that they preſerved no decency before company or ſervants, but abuſed one another in the groſſeſt terms.

This good old gentlewoman, to give me a convincing proof of my dear Narciſſa's unalterable love, gratified me with a ſight of the laſt letter ſhe had favoured her with, in which I was mentioned with ſo much honour, tenderneſs, and concern, that my ſoul was fired with impatience,

at

and I determined to ride all night, that I might have it the ſooner in my power to make her happy. Mrs Sagely perceiving my eagerneſs, and her maternal affection being equally divided between Narciſſa and me, begged leave to remind me of the ſentiments with which I went abroad, that would not permit me for any ſelfiſh gratification to prejudice the fortune of that amiable young lady, who muſt entirely depend upon me, after having beſtowed herſelf in marriage. I thanked her for her kind concern, and as briefly as poſſible deſcribed my flouriſhing ſituation, which afforded this humane perſon infinite wonder and ſatisfaction. I told her that now I had an opportunity to manifeſt my gratitude for the obligation I owed, I would endeavour to make her old age comfortable and eaſy; as a ſtep to which I propoſed ſhe ſhould come and live with Narciſſa and me. This venerable gentlewoman was ſo much affected with my words, that the tears ran down her ancient cheeks; ſhe thanked Heaven that I had not belied the preſages ſhe had made on her firſt acquaintance with me; acknowledging my generoſity, as ſhe called it, in the moſt elegant and pathetic expreſſions; but declined my propoſal, on account of her attachment to the dear melancholy cottage, where ſhe had ſo peacefully conſumed her ſolitary widowhood. Finding her immoveable on this ſubject, I inſiſted on her accepting a preſent of thirty guineas, and took my leave, reſolving to accommodate her with that ſum annually, for the more comfortable ſupport of the infirmities of age.

Having rode all night, I found myſelf at Canterbury in the morning, where I alighted to procure freſh horſes; and as I walked into the inn, perceived an apothecary's ſhop on the other ſide of the ſtreet, with the name of Morgan over the door: alarmed at this diſcovery, I could not help thinking that my old meſs-mate had ſettled in this place; and upon inquiry, found my conjecture true, and that he was married lately to a widow of that city, by whom he had got three thouſand pounds. Rejoiced at this intelligence, I went to his ſhop as ſoon as it was open, and found my friend behind the counter buſy in preparing a glyſter. I ſaluted him at entrance, with "Your ſervant, Mr "Morgan." Upon which he looked at me, and replying,

" Your moſt humble ſervant, goot Sir ;" rubbed his ingredients in the mortar, without any emotion. " What !" ſaid I, " Morgan, have you forgot your old meſs-mate ?" At theſe words, he looked up again, and ſtarting, cried, " As Cot is my—ſure it cannot—yes, by my ſalfation, I " pelieve it is my tear friend Mr Rantom." He was no ſooner convinced of my identity, than he threw down the peſtle, overſet the mortar, and jumping over the board, ſwept up the contents with his cloaths, flew about my neck, hugged me affectionately, and daubed me all over with turpentine and the yolks of eggs, which he had been mixing when I came in. Our mutual congratulations being over, he told me that he found himſelf a widower upon his return from the Weſt-Indies ; that he had got intereſt to be appointed ſurgeon of a man of war, in which capacity he had ſerved ſome years, until he married an apothecary's widow, with whom he now enjoyed a pretty good ſum of money, peace and quiet, and an indifferent good trade. He was very deſirous of hearing my adventures, which I aſſured him I had not time to relate, but told him in general my circumſtances were very good, and that I hoped to ſee him when I ſhould not be in ſuch a hurry as at preſent. He inſiſted, however, on my ſtaying breakfaſt, and introduced me to his wife, who ſeemed to be a decent ſenſible woman, pretty well ſtricken in years. In the courſe of our converſation, he ſhewed the ſleeve-buttons I had exchanged with him at our parting in the Weſt-Indies, and was not a little proud to ſee that I had preſerved his with the ſame care. When I informed him of Mackſhane's condition, he ſeemed at firſt to exult over his diſtreſs ; but after a little recollection, he ſaid, " Well, he has paid me for his " malice, I forgive him, and may Cot forgive him like- " wiſe." He expreſſed great concern for the foul of captain Oakhum, which he believed was now gnaſhing its teeth : but it was ſome time before I could convince him of Thomſon's being alive, at whoſe good fortune, nevertheleſs, he was extremely glad.

Having renewed our proteſtations of friendſhip, I bid the honeſt Welſhman and his ſpouſe farewell, and taking poſt horſes, arrived at London that ſame night, where I found

found my father in good health, to whom I imparte what I had learned of Narciſſa. This indulgent parent approved of my intention of marrying her, even without a fortune, provided her brother's conſent could not be obtained: promiſed to make over to me, in a few days, a ſufficiency to maintain her in a faſhionable manner, and expreſſed a deſire of ſeeing this amiable creature who had captivated me ſo much. As I had not ſlept the night before, and was beſides fatigued with my journey, I found myſelf under a neceſſity of taking ſome repoſe, and went to bed accordingly: next morning about ten o'clock, I took a chair, and, according to Mrs Sagely's directions, went to my charmer's lodgings, and inquired for Miſs Williams. I had not waited in the parlour longer than a minute, when this young woman entered, and no ſooner perceived me, than ſhe ſhrieked and ran backward; I got between her and the door, and claſping her in my arms, brought her to herſelf by an embrace. "Good "Heaven," cried ſhe, "Mr Random, is it you, indeed? "my miſtreſs will run diſtracted with joy." I told her, it was from an apprehenſion that my ſudden appearance would have ſome bad effect on my dear Narciſſa, that I had deſired to ſee her firſt, in order to concert ſome method of acquainting her miſtreſs gradually with my arrival. She approved of my conduct, and after having yielded to the ſuggeſtions of her own friendſhip, in aſking if my voyage had been ſucceſsful, charged herſelf with that office, and left me glowing with deſire of ſeeing and embracing the object of my love. In a very little time I heard ſomething coming down ſtairs in haſte, and the voice of an angel pronounce with an eager tone, "O Heaven! is it poſſible! where is he?" How were my faculties arouſed at this well-known ſound! and how was my ſoul tranſported, when ſhe broke in upon my view, in all the bloom of ripened beauty! *Grace ſeem'd in all her ſteps, heaven in her eye, in every geſture dignity and love!* You whoſe ſouls are inceptible of the moſt delicate impreſſions, whoſe tender boſoms have felt the affecting vicitudes of love, who have ſuffered an abſence of eighteen long months from the dear object of your hope, and found at your return the trembling fair, as kind and

conſtant as your heart could wiſh; do me juſtice on this occaſion, and conceive what unutterable rapture poſſeſſed us both, while we flew into one another's arms! This was no time for ſpeech,—locked in a mutual embrace, we continued ſome minutes in a ſilent trance of joy!—When I thus encircled all that my ſoul held dear, while I hung over her beauties—beheld her eyes ſparkle, and every feature fluſh with virtuous fondneſs; when I ſaw her enchanting boſom heave with undiſſembled rapture, and knew myſelf the happy cauſe—Heaven! what was my ſituation!—I am tempted to commit my paper to the flames, and to renounce my pen for ever, becauſe its moſt ardent and lucky expreſſion ſo poorly deſcribes the emotions of my ſoul. O adorable Narciſſa! (cried I) O miracle of beauty, love and truth! I at laſt fold thee in my arms! I at laſt can call thee mine! no jealous brother ſhall thwart our happineſs again; fortune hath at length recompenſed me for all my ſufferings, and enabled me to do juſtice to my love. The dear creature ſmiled ineffably charming, and with a look of bewitching tenderneſs, ſaid, "And ſhall we never part again!"—"Never! (I replied) thou wondrous pattern of all earthly perfection! never, until death ſhall divide us! by this ambroſial kiſs, a thouſand times more fragrant than the breeze that ſweeps the orange grove, I never more will leave thee."

As my firſt tranſport abated, my paſſion grew turbulent and unruly. I was giddy with ſtanding on the brink of bliſs, and all my virtue and philoſophy were ſcarce ſufficient to reſtrain the inordinate ſallies of deſire. Narciſſa perceived the conflict within me, and with her uſual dignity of prudence called off my imagination from the object in view, and with eager expreſſions of intereſted curioſity, deſired to know the particulars of my voyage. In this I gratified her inclination, bringing my ſtory down to the preſent hour. She was infinitely ſurpriſed at the circumſtances of my finding my father, which brought tears into her lovely eyes. She was tranſported at hearing that he approved my flame, diſcovered a longing deſire of being introduced to him, congratulated herſelf and me upon my good fortune, and obſerved that this great

and

and unexpected ſtroke of fate ſeemed to have been brought about by the immediate direction of Providence. Having entertained ourſelves ſome hours with the genuine effuſions of our ſouls, I obtained her conſent to compleat my happineſs as ſoon as my father ſhould judge it proper, and applying with my own hands a valuable necklace, compoſed of diamonds and amethyſts ſet alternately, which an old Spaniſh lady at Paraguay preſented me with, I took my leave, promiſing to return in the afternoon with Don Rodriguez. When I went home, this generous parent enquired very affectionately about the health of my dear Narciſſa, to whom that I might be the more agreeable, he put into my hands a deed, by which I found myſelf in poſſeſſion of fifteen hundred pounds, excluſive of the profits of my own merchandize, which amounted to three thouſand more. After dinner I accompanied him to the lodging of my miſtreſs, who being dreſſed for the occaſion, made a moſt dazzling appearance. I could perceive him ſtruck with her figure, which I really think was the moſt beautiful under the ſun. He embraced her tenderly, and told her, he was proud of having a ſon who had ſpirit to attempt, and qualifications to engage the affections of ſuch a fine lady. She bluſhed at this compliment, and with eyes full of the ſofteſt languiſhment turned upon me, and ſaid, ſhe would have been unworthy of Mr Random's attention, had ſhe been blind to his extraordinary merit. I made no other anſwer than a low bow. My father, ſighing, pronounced, "Such once "was my Charlotte!" while the tear ruſhed into his eye, and the tender heart of Narciſſa manifeſted itſelf in two precious drops of ſympathy, which, but for his preſence, I would have kiſſed away. Without repeating the particulars of our converſation, I ſhall only obſerve, that Don Rodriguez was as much charmed with her good ſenſe, as with her appearance; and ſhe was no leſs pleaſed with his underſtanding and polite addreſs. It was determined, that he ſhould write to the ſquire, ſignifying his approbation of my paſſion for his ſiſter, and offering a ſettlement which he ſhould have no reaſon to reject: and that, if he ſhould refuſe the propoſal, he ſhould crown our mutual wiſhes without any farther regard.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXVIII.

My father makes a present to Narcissa—*the letter is dispatched to her brother*—*I appear among my acquaintance*—Banter's *behaviour*—*the* Squire *refuses his consent*—*my uncle comes to town*—*approves of my choice*—*I am married*—*we meet the* Squire *and his lady at the play*—*our acquaintance is courted.*

AFTER having spent the evening to the satisfaction of all present, my father addressed himself thus to Narcissa: "Madam, give me leave to consider you "hereafter as my daughter, in which capacity I insist "upon your accepting this first instance of my paternal "duty and affection." With these words, he put into her hand a bank note for 500l. which she no sooner examined, than with a low curtesy she replied, "Dear Sir, "though I have not the least occasion for this supply, I "have too great a veneration for you, to refuse this "proof of your generosity and esteem, which I the more "freely receive, because I already look upon Mr Ran-"dom's interest as inseparably connected with mine."—He was extremely well pleased at her frank and ingenuous reply, upon which we saluted, and wished her good night. The letter at my request, was dispatched to Sussex by an express, and in the mean time, Don Rodriguez, to grace my nuptials, hired a ready furnished house, and set up a very handsome equipage.

Though I passed the greatest part of the day with the darling of my soul, I found leisure sometimes to be among my former acquaintance, who were astonished at the magnificence of my appearance: Banter in particular was confounded at the strange vicissitudes of my fortune, the causes of which he endeavoured in vain to discover, until I thought fit to disclose the whole secret of my last voyage, partly on consideration of our former intimacy, and partly to prevent unfavourable conjectures, which he and others, in all probability, would have made in regard to my circumstances. He professed great satisfaction at this piece of news, and I had no cause to believe him insincere, when I considered that he would now look upon himself

himſelf as acquitted of the debt he owed me, and at the ſame time flatter himſelf with hopes of borrowing more. I carried him home to dinner with me, and my father liked his converſation ſo much, that upon hearing his difficulties, he deſired me to accommodate him for the preſent, and inquire if he would accept of a commiſſion in the army, towards the purchaſe of which he would willingly lend him money. Accordingly he gave my friend an opportunity of being alone with me, when, as I expected, he told me, that he was juſt on the point of being reconciled to an old rich uncle, whoſe heir he was, but wanted a few pieces for immediate expence, which he deſired I would lend him, and take his bond for the whole. His demand was limited to ten guineas; and when I put twenty into his hands, he ſtared at me for ſome moments, then putting it into his purſe, ſaid, "Ay, "'tis all one,—you'll have the whole in a very ſhort "time." When I had taken his note, to ſave the expence of a bond, I expreſſed ſome ſurpriſe that a fellow of his ſpirit ſhould loiter away his time in idleneſs, and aſked why he did not chuſe to make his fortune in the army?—"What! (ſaid he) throw away money upon a "ſubaltern's commiſſion, to be under the command of a "parcel of ſcoundrels, who have raiſed themſelves above "me by the moſt infamous practices? No, I love indepen-"dency too well to ſacrifice my life, health, and pleaſure, "for ſuch a pitiful conſideration."—Finding him averſe to this way of life, I changed the ſubject, and returned to Don Rodriguez, who had juſt received the following epiſtle from the ſquire:

"SIR,

"CONCERNING a letter which I received, ſubſcrib'd "R. RANDOM, this is the anſwer.—As for you, I "know nothing of you.—Your ſon, or pretended ſon, "I have ſeen;—if he marries my ſiſter, at his peril be it; "I do declare, that he ſhall not have one farthing of "her fortune, which becomes my property if ſhe takes a "huſband without my conſent.—Your ſettlement I do "believe is all a ſham, and yourſelf no better than you

" ſhould be ; but if you had all the wealth of the Indies, " your ſon ſhall never match in our family, with the " conſent of

" ORSON TOPEHALL."

My father was not much ſurpriſed at this polite letter, after having heard the character of the author : and as for me, I was even pleaſed at his refuſal, becauſe I now had an opportunity of ſhewing my diſintereſted love. By his permiſſion I waited on my charmer ; and having imparted to her the contents of her brother's letter, at which ſhe wept bitterly, in ſpite of all my conſolation and careſſes, the time of our marriage was fixed at the diſtance of two days. During this interval, in which my ſoul was wound up to the laſt ſtretch of rapturous expectation, Narciſſa endeavoured to reconcile ſome of her relations in town to her marriage with me ; but finding them all deaf to her remonſtrances, either out of envy or prejudice, ſhe told me with the moſt enchanting ſweetneſs, while the tears bedewed her lovely cheeks, " Sure the world will " no longer queſtion your generoſity, when you take a " poor forlorn beggar to your arms." Affected with her ſorrow, I preſſed the fair mourner to my breaſt, and ſwore that ſhe was more dear and welcome on that account, becauſe ſhe had ſacrificed her friends and fortune to her love for me. My uncle, for whoſe character ſhe had a great veneration, being by this time come to town, I introduced him to my bride : and although he was not very much ſubject to refined ſenſations, he was ſtruck dumb with admiration at her beauty. After having kiſſed and gazed at her for ſome time, he turned to me, ſaying, " Odds bobs, Rory ! here's a notable prize indeed, " finely built and glorioufly rigged, i' faith ! if ſhe an't " well manned when you have the command of her, " ſirrah, you deſerve to go to ſea in a cockle-ſhell.— " No offence, I hope, niece ; you muſt not mind what I " ſay, being (as the ſaying is) a plain ſeafaring man, thof, " mayhap, I have as much regard for you as another."— She received him with great civility ; told him, ſhe had longed a great while to ſee a perſon to whom ſhe was ſo much indebted for his generoſity to Mr Random ; that

ſhe

ſhe looked upon him as her uncle, by which name ſhe begged leave to call him for the future, and that ſhe was very ſure he could ſay nothing that would give her the leaſt offence. The honeſt captain was tranſported at her courteous behaviour, and inſiſted upon *giving her away* at the ceremony, ſwearing that he loved her as well as if ſhe was his own child, and that he would give two thouſand guineas to the firſt fruit of our love, as ſoon as it could ſqueak. Every thing being prepared for the ſolemnization of our nuptials, which were to be performed privately at my father's houſe, the auſpicious hour arrived, when Don Rodriguez and my uncle went in the coach to fetch the bride and Miſs Williams; leaving me with a parſon, Banter, and Strap, neither of whom had as yet ſeen my charming miſtreſs. My faithful valet, who was on the rack of impatience to behold a lady of whom he had heard ſo much, no ſooner underſtood that the coach was returned, than he placed himſelf at a window to have a peep at her as ſhe alighted; and when he ſaw her, he clapped his hands together, turned up the white of his eyes, and with his mouth wide open, remained in a ſort of ecſtacy, which broke out into, "*O "Dea certè!—qualis in Eurotæ ripis, aut per juga Cynthi "exercet Diana chorus!*"—The doctor and Banter were ſurpriſed to hear my man ſpeak Latin; but when my father led Narciſſa into the room, the object of their admiration was ſoon changed, as appeared in the countenance of both. Indeed they muſt have been the moſt inſenſible of all beings, could they have beheld without emotion the divine creature that approached! She was dreſſed in a ſuck of white ſattin, embroidered on the breaſt with gold; the crown of her head was covered with a ſmall French cap, from whence deſcended her beautiful hair in ringlets, that waved upon her ſnowy neck, which dignified the necklace I had given her; her looks glowed with modeſty and love; and her boſom, through the veil of gauze that ſhaded it, afforded a proſpect of Elyſium!—I received this ineſtimable gift of Providence as became me; and in a little time the clergyman did his office, my uncle, at his own earneſt requeſt, acting the part of a father to my dear Narciſſa, who trembled very much, and

had ſcarce ſpirits ſufficient to ſupport her under this great change of ſituation. Soon as ſhe was mine by the laws of heaven and earth, I printed a burning kiſs upon her lips, my father embraced her tenderly, my uncle hugged her with great affection, and I preſented her to my friend Banter, who ſaluted her in a very polite manner: Miſs Williams hung round her neck, and wept plentifully; while Strap fell upon his knees, and begged to kiſs his lady's hand, which ſhe preſented with great affability. I ſhall not pretend to deſcribe my own feelings at this juncture; let it ſuffice to ſay, that after having ſupped and entertained ourſelves till ten o'clock, I cautioned my Narciſſa againſt expoſing her health by ſitting up too late, and ſhe was prevailed upon to withdraw with her maid to an apartment deſtined for us. When ſhe left the room, her face was overſpread with a bluſh that ſet all my blood in a ſtate of fermentation, and made every pulſe beat with tenfold vigour! She was ſo cruel as to let me remain in this condition a full half hour; when, no longer able to reſtrain my impatience, I broke from the company, burſt into her chamber, puſhed out her confidante, locked the door, and found her—O heaven and earth! a feaſt, a thouſand times more delicious than my moſt ſanguine hope preſaged!—But let me not profane the chaſte myſteries of Hymen—I was the happieſt of men.

In the morning I was awaked by three or four drums, which Banter had placed under the window; upon which I withdrew the curtain, and enjoyed the unſpeakable ſatisfaction of contemplating thoſe angelic charms, which were now in my poſſeſſion! *Beauty! which, whether ſleeping or awake, ſhot forth peculiar graces!* The light darting upon my Narciſſa's eyes, ſhe awoke alſo, and recollecting her ſituation, hid her bluſhes in my boſom. I was diſtracted with joy! I could not believe the evidence of my ſenſes; and looked upon all that had happened as the fictions of a dream! In the mean time, my uncle knocked at the door, and bid me turn out, for I had had a long ſpell. I got up accordingly, and ſent Miſs Williams to her miſtreſs, myſelf receiving the congratulations of Captain Bowling, who rallied me in his ſea phraſe, with great ſucceſs. In leſs than an hour, Don Rodriguez led my wife

wife into breakfaſt, where ſhe received the compliments of the company on her looks, which, they ſaid, if poſſible, were improved by matrimony. As her delicate ears were offended with none of thoſe indecent ambiguities, which are too often ſpoke on ſuch occaſions, ſhe behaved with dignity, unaffected modeſty, and eaſe; and as a teſtimony of my affection and eſteem, I preſented her, in preſence of them all, with a deed, by which I ſettled the whole fortune I was poſſeſſed of, on her and her heirs for ever. She accepted it with a glance of moſt tender acknowledgment, obſerved that ſhe could not be ſurpriſed at any thing of this kind I ſhould do, and deſired my father to take the trouble of keeping it, ſaying, "Next "to my own Mr Random, you are the perſon in whom "I ought to have the greateſt confidence." Charmed with her prudent and ingenuous manner of proceeding, he took the paper, and aſſured her, that it ſhould not loſe its value while in his cuſtody.

As we had not many viſits to give and receive, the little time we ſtayed in town was ſpent in going to public diverſions, where, I have the vanity to think, Narciſſa ſeldom was eclipſed. One night, in particular, we had ſent our footman to keep one of the ſtage boxes, which we no ſooner entered, than we perceived in the oppoſite box the ſquire and his lady, who ſeemed not a little ſurpriſed at ſeeing us. I was pleaſed at this opportunity of confronting them; the more, becauſe Melinda was robbed of all her admirers by my wife, who happened that night to outſhine her ſiſter both in beauty and dreſs. She was piqued at Narciſſa's victory, toſſed her head a thouſand different ways, flirted her fan, looked at us with diſdain, then whiſpered to her huſband, and broke out into an affected giggle; but all her arts proved ineffectual, either to diſcompoſe Mrs Random, or to conceal her own mortification, which at length forced her away long before the play was done. The news of our marriage being ſpread, with many circumſtances to our diſadvantage, by the induſtry of this malignant creature, a certain ſet of perſons fond of ſcandal, began to inquire into the particulars of my fortune, which they no ſooner underſtood to be independent, than the tables were turned, and our acquaint-

acquaintance was courted as much as it had been deſpiſed before: but Narciſſa had too much dignity of pride, to encourage this change of conduct, eſpecially in her relations, whom ſhe could never be prevailed upon to ſee, after the malicious reports they had raiſed to her prejudice.

CHAP. LXIX.

My father intends to viſit the place of his nativity—we propoſe to accompany him—my uncle renews his will in my favour, determining to go to ſea again—we ſet out for Scotland—*arrive at* Edinburgh—*purchaſe our paternal eſtate—proceed to it—halt at the town where I was educated—take up my bond to* Crab—*the behaviour of* Potion *and his wife, and one of my female couſins—our reception at the eſtate—* Strap *marries Miſs* Williams, *and is ſettled by my father to his own ſatisfaction—I am more and more happy.*

MY father intending to reviſit his native country, and pay the tribute of a few tears at my mother's grave, Narciſſa and I reſolved to accompany him in the execution of this pious office, and accordingly prepared for the journey: in which, however, my uncle would not engage, being reſolved to try his fortune once more at ſea. In the mean time, he renewed his will in favour of my wife and me, and depoſited it in the hands of his brother-in-law: while I (that I might not be wanting to my own intereſt) ſummoned the ſquire to produce his father's will at Doctor's Commons, and employed a proctor to manage the affair in my abſence.

Every thing being thus ſettled, we took leave of all our friends in London, and ſet out for Scotland, Don Rodriguez, Narciſſa, Miſs Williams, and I in the coach, and Strap with two men in livery on horſeback: as we made eaſy ſtages, my charmer held it out very well till we arrived at Edinburgh, where we propoſed to reſt ourſelves ſome weeks. People of our figure could not fail of attracting

tracting the notice of ſuch a ſmall place, where, as ſoon as our family was known, we were loaded with careſſes, and Narciſſa was ſo much pleaſed with the civilities ſhe received, that ſhe proteſted ſhe would never deſire to live in any other part of the world.

Here Don Rodriguez having intelligence that his nephew the fox-hunter had ſpent his eſtate, which was to be expoſed to ſale by public auction, he determined to make a purchaſe of the ſpot where he was born, and actually bought the whole of his father's lands.

In a few days after the bargain was made, we left Edinburgh, in order to go and take poſſeſſion; and by the way, halted one night in the town where I was educated. Upon inquiry, I found that Mr Crab was dead; whereupon I ſent for his executor, paid the ſum I owed with intereſt, and took up my bond. Mr Potion and his wife, hearing of our arrival, had the aſſurance to come to the inn where we lodged, and ſend up their names, with a deſire of being permitted to pay their reſpects to my father and me: but their ſordid behaviour towards me, when I was an orphan, had made too deep an impreſſion on my mind, to be effaced by this mean mercenary piece of condeſcenſion; I therefore rejected their meſſage with diſdain, and bid Strap tell them, that my father and I deſired to have no communication with ſuch low-minded wretches as they were.

They had not been gone half an hour, when a woman, without any ceremony, opened the door where we ſat, and making towards my father, accoſted him with, "Uncle, your ſervant—I am glad to ſee you." This was no other than one of my female couſins mentioned in the firſt part of my memoirs, to whom Don Rodriguez replied, "Pray, who are you, Madam?" "Oh!" cried ſhe, "my couſin Rory, there, knows me very well—"Don't you remember me, Rory?" "Yes, Madam," ſaid I, "for my own part, I ſhall never forget you.—"Sir, this is one of the young ladies, who (as I have formerly told you) treated me ſo humanely in my childhood!" When I pronounced theſe words, my father's reſentment glowed in his viſage, and he ordered her to begone, with ſuch a commanding aſpect, that ſhe retired

red in a fright, muttering curſes as ſhe went down ſtairs: we afterwards learned that ſhe was married to an enſign, who had already ſpent all her fortune; and that her ſiſter had bore a child to her mother's footman, who is now her huſband, and keeps a petty ale-houſe in that country.

The fame of our flouriſhing condition having arrived at this place before us, we got notice that the magiſtrates intended next day to compliment us with the freedom of their town, upon which my father, conſidering their complaiſance in the right point of view, ordered the horſes to the coach early in the morning, when we proceeded to our eſtate, which lay about a dozen miles from this place.

When we came within half a league of the houſe, we were met by a prodigious number of poor tenants, men, women, and children, who teſtified their joy by loud acclamations, and accompanied our coach to the gate. As there is no part in the world in which the peaſants are more attached to their lords than in Scotland, we were almoſt devoured by their affection, in getting out of the coach: my father had always been their favourite, and now that he appeared their maſter, after being thought dead ſo long, their joy broke out into a thouſand extravagancies: when we got into the court-yard we were ſurrounded by a vaſt number, who crowded together ſo cloſely to ſee us, that ſeveral were in danger of being ſqueezed to death; thoſe who were near Don Rodriguez fell upon their knees, and kiſſed his hand, or the hem of his garment, praying aloud for long life and proſperity to him; others approached Narciſſa and me in the ſame manner; while the reſt clapped their hands at a diſtance, and invoked Heaven to ſhower its choiceſt bleſſings on our heads! In ſhort, the whole ſcene, though rude, was ſo affecting, that the gentle partner of my heart wept over it, and my father himſelf could not refrain from dropping a tear.

Having welcomed his daughter and me to his houſe, he ordered ſome bullocks to be killed, and ſome hogſheads of ale to be brought from the neighbouring village, to regale thoſe honeſt people, who had not enjoyed ſuch a holiday for many years before.

Next day we were viſited by the gentlemen in the neighbourhood, moſt of them our relations, one of whom brought along with him my couſin the fox-hunter, who had ſtaid at his houſe ſince he was obliged to leave his own. My father was generous enough to receive him kindly, and even promiſed to purchaſe for him a commiſſion in the army, at which he expreſſed great thankfulneſs and joy.

My charming Narciſſa was univerſally admired and loved for her beauty, affability, and good ſenſe; and ſo well pleaſed with the ſituation of the place, and the company around, that ſhe has not diſcovered the leaſt deſire of changing her habitation.

We had not been many days ſettled, when I prevailed upon my father to pay a viſit to the village where I had been at ſchool. Here we were received by the principal inhabitants, who entertained us in the church, where Mr Syntax the ſchoolmaſter (my tyrant being dead) pronounced a Latin ſpeech in honour of our family: and none exerted themſelves more than Strap's father and relations, who looked upon the honeſt valet as the firſt gentleman of their race, and honoured his benefactors accordingly. Having received the homage of this place we retired, leaving forty pounds for the benefit of the poor of the pariſh; and that very night, Strap, being a little elevated with the regard that had been ſhewn to him, and to me on his account, ventured to tell me, that he had a ſneaking kindneſs for Miſs Williams, and that if his lady and I would uſe our intereſt in his behalf, he did not doubt that ſhe would liſten to his addreſſes. Surpriſed at this propoſal, I aſked if he knew the ſtory of that unfortunate young gentlewoman: upon which he replied, "Yes, yes, I know what you mean—ſhe has been unhappy I grant you—but what of that? I am convinced of her reformation; or elſe you and my good lady would not treat her with ſuch reſpect.—As for the cenſure of the world, I value it not a fig's end; beſides, the world knows nothing of the matter." I commended his philoſophy, and intereſted Narciſſa in his cauſe; who interceded ſo effectually, that in a little time Miſs Williams yielded her conſent, and they were married,

with the approbation of Don Rodriguez, who gave him five hundred pounds to ſtock a farm, and made him overſeer of his eſtate. My generous bed-fellow gave her maid the ſame ſum; ſo that they live in great peace and plenty, within half a mile of us, and daily put up prayers for our preſervation.

If there be ſuch a thing as true happineſs on earth, I enjoy it. The impetuous tranſports of my paſſion are now ſettled and mellowed into endearing fondneſs and tranquillity of love, rooted by that intimate connection and interchange of hearts, which nought but virtuous wedlock can produce. Fortune ſeems determined to make ample amends for her former cruelty; for my proctor writes, that notwithſtanding the clauſe in my father-in-law's will, on which the ſquire founds his claim, I ſhall certainly recover my wife's fortune, in conſequence of a codicil annexed, which explains that clauſe, and limits her reſtriction to the age of nineteen, after which ſhe was at her own diſpoſal. I would have ſet out for London immediately after receiving this piece of intelligence; but my dear angel has been qualmiſh of late, and begins to grow remarkably round about the waiſt; ſo that I cannot leave her in ſuch an intereſting ſituation, which I hope will produce ſomething to crown my felicity.

THE END.

21091

L 006 127 170 6

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
AA 000 072 986 3